NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08179245 3

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/unitedstatesofam03harr

IAE
United States

V.3
IAE

COPYRIGHT BY GEO. T. FINN.

FIGHT BETWEEN THE "KEARSARGE" AND "ALABAMA."

Fight Between the Kearsarge and Alabama

THE

UNITED STATES

OF

AMERICA

A PICTORIAL HISTORY OF THE AMERICAN NATION FROM THE EARLIEST DISCOVERIES AND SETTLEMENTS TO THE PRESENT TIME

+656

SPECIAL CONTRIBUTORS

WILLIAM T. HARRIS, PH.D., LL.D.
U. S. Commissioner of Education

EDWARD EVERETT HALE, S.T.D., LL.D.

O. P. AUSTIN
Chief of the Bureau of Statistics, Department of Commerce and Labor, Washington, D. C.

NELSON A. MILES
Lieutenant-General U. S. Army

GEORGE CARY EGGLESTON
Author, Historian and Lecturer

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED BY PHOTOGRAVURES, CHROMATIC PLATES, HALF TONE AND WOOD CUT ENGRAVINGS

ILLUSTRATORS

EDWARD MORAN, N.A., GILBERT STUART, THOS. HOVENDEN, N.A., A. R. WAUD, F. B. CARPENTER, N.A., F. D. MILLET, N.A., AND OTHERS

COMPLETE IN FIVE VOLUMES

VOL. III.

NEW YORK
IMPERIAL PUBLISHING COMPANY

1906
EN

LIBRARY
2551918
1943

COPYRIGHT,
1906,
By GEORGE T. FINN,
New York.

All rights reserved.

THE MERSHON COMPANY PRESS
RAHWAY, N. J.

THE REVOLUTION

BY

EDWARD EVERETT HALE, S.T.D., LL.D.

DR. HARRIS has in a few sentences brought together the more important points in Revolutionary History which it is desirable for every student to bear in mind. And Dr. Harris has shown admirably well how desirable it is that a young American should be acquainted, even in some detail, with the great passages of the history of his country.

The history of what we wisely call "The Revolution" differs from any other passage of written history, not simply in the greatness of the future depending upon that struggle, but in the character of the struggle itself. The points which became important at one time or another were as far apart as Quebec on the North and Florida on the South, while the range of military operations westward went as far as the distance from the ocean to the Mississippi River and the Great Lakes of the Northwest. In this immense region for seven years of actual warfare, and for ten years preceding that warfare, there were operations going forward, all more or less important, which come particularly into the larger history of the time. It is, therefore, very seldom that any passage of history, however important, is to be studied from so many different points of view.

In conducting this study, the young American reader has some points of great advantage, and there are some lines of distinct disadvantage, when one compares his study with that of any other period of fifteen or twenty years. It seems desirable to consider this peculiarity of the study before one goes into a careful narrative of events between 1762 and 1783.

The first of the difficulties which attend the study of this twenty years is well stated by President John Adams in one of his journals, written before he dreamed of the great future which was before him. He says substantially, that when we examine some written diary of the past it almost always appears that men write careful diaries when they have nothing else to do, but that when they are eagerly occupied in every hour of every day, they have no time to keep up their diaries. This has proved pathetically true in the history of the Thirteen States and of the War with England as the great events of the Revolution went forward. Literally, there were almost no professional soldiers engaged on the American side of the great struggle. General Washington, in one of his early despatches, says that in the whole of his army at the place where he wrote there were not two men who had ever seen more than two regiments of troops on parade or in line of battle. Washington himself had had the very scanty

experience of Braddock's campaign and other subsequent campaigns of the French War. The great soldiers, therefore, of the Revolution were, generally speaking, men who were learning their business as they went on. From day to day each of them learned something new. From day to day each of them was trying to learn more, and they really had not the time, even if they had had the wish, to put on paper from day to day much of the detail of that which occupied them so constantly.

Again, the young American reader should observe that from a certain reticency, which is said to belong to the English-speaking races, we have not the same passion for making a record of the detail which is observable, for instance, in many well-known collections of memoirs written by authors of what are called the Latin races. There exist in the literature of France hundreds of volumes which are well called "Memoirs for the service of historians." And in the generation of Americans, distinguished or undistinguished, whose manhood passed between the years 1760 and 1790, scarcely one volume of such memoirs could be found. It is fair to say that the more distinguished of these men wished to see the thing done much more eagerly than they wished to see its history preserved.

Failing such materials, the historian has to rely very largely on the familiar letters written from time to time, from one part of the country to another, which describe more or less at length the events which were passing. We have the great good fortune that we are able to consult some such collections of letters which are of the very first value as original authorities. There is no better authority than is given in an off-hand letter which a man writes immediately after an event, but such an authority is necessarily limited to the expression of the opinion or observation of one man, and it may happen, as we all know in daily life, that the impression which a man receives on a certain day from his own point of view is very largely a mistaken impression and one which has to be corrected from future information.

In the case of the American colonists and of their struggle with England, there was the very greatest difficulty in securing the transmission of letters from point to point. For instance, it would require, at the best, many weeks to carry a letter from Georgia to the home of some New Hampshire soldier who might be in General Greene's command. It is interesting to see that the original despatch which carried the first news of what they all called Lexington Battle to the South, though it was carried by express from town to town and from colony to colony, did not arrive at Charleston till the eleventh of May, although it had left Watertown in Massachusetts on the afternoon of the nineteenth of April. All along through the despatch are shot the entreaties of one committee of patriots to another that they will hurry the rider as far as possible by mounting him as well as possible. And the despatch did its work in awaking the whole country. But the young reader of to-day must observe that, even with such speed, the little letter, which still exists, was twenty-one days in its passage from Watertown to Charleston in South Carolina.

For the military history of the War we have the correspondence of General Washington and of many of his subordinates. We have in small part the proceedings of the Continental Congress. But, as the young reader will see as he reads, this Congress had

but limited power. There was constant reference to the several states, which was in fact only a humble supplication of the Congress to the authorities of one and another state to furnish the men and the equipment which were needed. When the Continental Congress gave place to the present government of the United States, it was said with truth that they had not money enough to pay for the quills from which they made the pens with which they wrote their resolutions.

The original authorities, therefore, for the proceedings of greater or less importance, either in the army or on the seas, are to be found very largely in the records of the several thirteen states. These states were in most instances reorganized as the War went on. Their records have been very carefully examined by Jared Sparks, the author of the Life of Washington, by George Bancroft, the historian of the United States, whose work extends to twelve volumes, and by other authorities.

The students of our history, however, have a very interesting resource in quite a different direction. From the very first the struggle in America awakened the attention of wide-awake people on the Continent of Europe. The kingdom of France, as the reader will see, was chafing under the submission which its rulers had had to make to the English in the Treaty of 1762; and the rulers of France, and even its people, were eager for revenge. The announcement that so large a body of colonists as those in the United States was in rebellion against King George and his government had great interest for France. From the very first moment young Frenchmen were coming from Europe to America to serve in the American armies. The American Congress very soon commissioned proper envoys to solicit assistance as far as it could be given by the French King, and their solicitations were not in vain. The American envoys in France received almost every day applications from persons who sought commissions in the American Army. Whether such persons were successful or not in such applications, they were apt to come over here, and some of them wrote back letters or had kept diaries from which they were able to give accounts to eager Europe as to what was passing here. Some of these accounts are very funny to readers to-day; they show the curious ignorance in which the authors traveled. But in many instances, especially in the memoirs of the French officers who accompanied the French troops who came to the assistance of the Americans, we find interesting and curious accounts, not simply of the American armies, but of family life and of other home affairs, such as we should have lost had not these French officers given their impressions.

Meanwhile, for some years after 1776, the English Government, unable for many reasons to secure rapid recruiting for armies under the King's command, had persuaded their allies in the various German states to assist them in the repression of the rebellion, by sending to America regiments of their own troops who should be paid by the British, and for whom the British Government paid to Brunswick and Hesse considerable sums of money. These convenient allies are generally called in America Hessians because a large contingent came from the Electorate of Hesse. In fact, however, a considerable contingent came from Brunswick. In these contingents there were a few intelligent persons acting as officers who have left curious memoirs of their observations as they passed through the country. The result was most unfortunate for

the British Crown and for the cause in which the British Government was engaged. To name only a few illustrations, the foreign allies were singularly unsuccessful. At Trenton, as the reader will see, one thousand Hessians surrendered. At the assault on Red Bank, on the Delaware River below Philadelphia, the Hessian troops sustained a terrible loss. At Bennington, the whole force under General Baum surrendered to Stark and Warner. And two months later the forces of Brunswick and Hesse, who were still under the command of Burgoyne, surrendered to General Gates.

It is now more than a century since the war ended. In recent years the English Government has thrown open for study the collections of papers in many of its public archives. In many cases family collections of papers have been made available to students. It is now quite certain, therefore, that any careful and intelligent man, who really studies the subject, may know much more of the history of the American Revolution than any one of the great actors in it knew in the year 1783. I like to advise the young readers who will, I know, enjoy these volumes, to continue their studies, especially in the regions in which they live.

Edward E. Hale

CONTENTS

CHAPTER		PAGE
I.	Events of 1861. Opening of Hostilities,	1
II.	The Opposing Armies,	22
III.	The First Shock of Arms,	31
IV.	The War in the West and South,	42
V.	The War on the Coast,	48
VI.	Events of 1862. Union Successes,	57
VII.	Progress of the War in the South-west,	64
VIII.	The Monitor and the Merrimac,	75
IX.	The Fall of New Orleans,	86
X.	The Peninsular Campaign against Richmond,	95
XI.	Peninsular Campaign against Richmond—continued,	104
XII.	The War in the South-west,	116
XIII.	The Peninsular Campaign against Richmond—concluded	126
XIV.	The War on the Ocean,	139
XV.	The First Confederate Invasion,	143
XVI.	The Fredericksburg Campaign,	154
XVII.	Events of 1863. The War in the South-west,	161
XVIII.	Chancellorsville,	167
XIX.	Early Operations in the West,	175
XX.	The Second Confederate Invasion of the North,	183
XXI.	Opening of the Mississippi,	196
XXII.	The Campaign in the South-west,	204
XXIII.	Lesser Operations,	214
XXIV.	Operations on the Coast,	221
XXV.	Minor Incidents,	228
XXVI.	Events of 1864. The War in the West and South-west,	234
XXVII.	The War on the Coast and on the Sea,	242
XXVIII.	Sherman's March to Atlanta,	253
XXIX.	Sherman's March to the Sea,	264
XXX.	The Campaign against Richmond,	272
XXXI.	Minor Incidents,	292
XXXII.	Events of 1865. Movements to the South of Richmond,	300
XXXIII.	Surrender of Lee,	306
XXXIV.	Death of President Lincoln,	322
XXXV.	Surrender of the Last Confederate Army,	331
XXXVI.	Peace fully Restored,	353
XXXVII.	The United States Sanitary and the United States Christian Commission,	362

ILLUSTRATIONS IN THE TEXT.

	PAGE
The South Carolina Flag,	4
Removal of the Troops from Fort Moultrie to Fort Sumter,	5
Fort Moultrie, Charleston, with Fort Sumter in the Distance,	8
Plan of Forts and Harbor at Charleston,	9
Jefferson Davis,	12
The Confederate Flag,	13
Inauguration of Jefferson Davis (pen drawing by Howard Palmer),	17
Major Anderson,	20
At Fort Sumter (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	21
Captain Winthrop at Big Bethel (drawn by Francis Christy),	25
General Robert Edmund Lee,	28
Night March on Harper's Ferry (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	29
March Past of the Garibaldi Guard before President Lincoln (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	32
Union Commanders,	33
The Union Advance at Bull Run,	37
Guarding a Bridge over the Potomac,	41
Fort Pensacola,	44
Destruction of Fort Ocracoke,	45
Mr. Mason, Mr. Slidell,	48
The *San Jacinto* stopping the *Trent* (drawing by Edward Gault),	49
Fort Warren,	52
British Troops conveyed through Canada (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	53
View on the Potomac below Washington,	57
A River Boat,	61
Mr. Seward,	64
Captain Ericsson,	65
Burnside's Expedition Crossing Hatteras Bar,	69
Loading a Cotton Steamer,	72
View of a Cotton-Shoot,	73
Battle of Pittsburg Landing,	76
The *Merrimac* Sinking the *Cumberland*,	77
Fight between the *Monitor* and *Merrimac* (drawn by G. Walter Gibson),	81
A Monitor, and Blockade-Runner,	84
The *Destroyer* Torpedo-Vessel of Captain Ericsson,	85
A Slave Auction (pen drawing by Charles Harris)	89
Commodore Farragut,	92
The Banks of the Mississippi,	93
Benj. F. Butler,	97
Moist Weather at the Front,	101
Lieutenant Caldwell slipping the Chain (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	105
Fairfax Court House,	108
On the Potomac,	109
Arrival of McClellan at Williamsburg,	113
Stuart's Cavalry Cutting Telegraph Wires (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	117
General Longstreet,	120
Commodore A. H. Foote,	121
On the Baltimore and Ohio Railway,	125
United States Military Telegraph Wagon,	128
Cumberland Gap,	129
Charge of the Federals at Corinth (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	133
General W. T. Sherman,	136
"Stonewall" Jackson,	137
A Railroad Battery,	141
Stonewall Jackson in Camp	145
The *George Griswold* Entering the Mersey,	149
Harper's Ferry,	152
The *Nashville* Destroying the Merchantman,	157
Federal Iron-Clad River Gunboat,	160
Antietam Bridge,	161
McClellan at the Battle of Antietam (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	165
Admiral Porter,	168
General Burnside,	169
General Grant,	172
The *Hartford* (Admiral Farragut's Flag-Ship),	177
Negro Village in Georgia,	181
General Jackson Mortally Wounded (pen drawing by C. Raymond),	184
Gunboats Passing before Vicksburg, (drawn by G. Walter Gibson),	189

	PAGE
Various Forms of Projectiles Used in the American War,	193
General Meade,	196
General Stuart,	197
Plan of the Siege of Vicksburg,	201
Death of General Reynolds,	205
Retreat of Lee's Army,	209
A Skirmisher,	212
Incident at the Siege of Vicksburg (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	213
The Dwellers in Vicksburg,	216
The Meeting of Grant and Pemberton,	217
Federal Lines at Chattanooga,	221
Longstreet's Arrival at Bragg's Headquarters,	224
View from Lookout Mountains,	225
Captain Northop Leading the Attack at Knoxville (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	229
View in Charleston from the Belfry,	232
The Emperor Maximilian,	236
A "Plaza" in Mexico,	237
The City of Vera Cruz, Mexico,	241
Fort Pillow,	244
Flight of Negroes from Fort Pillow,	245
Bailey's Dam on the Red River,	248
Capture of General Morgan,	249
Destruction of the *Nashville*,	253
The Swamp Angel,	256
The Confederate Ram *Tennessee*,	257
"After you, Sir!" (death of Captain Craven),	261
Loss of the U. S. Sloop of War *Housatonic*,	265
Sinking of the *Alabama*,	268
Boat of the *Deerhound* Rescuing Captain Semmes,	269
Lieutenant Cushing's Attack on the *Albemarle*,	272
Troops Tearing up a Railway (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	273
Death of General Polk,	277
General McPherson,	280
Savannah,	281
Embarking Cotton at Savannah,	284
General Sherman's Scouts,	285
Wounding of Gen. Longstreet by His Own Men,	289
Troops Crossing to the Shenandoah Valley (pen drawing by W. L. Jumel),	293
The James River and Country near Richmond.	296
Plan of Petersburg and Vicinity, showing the Confederate and Federal Forts,	297
Explosion of Mine before Petersburg,	301
Capture of Railway Train by Col. Harry Gilmor,	304
General Sheridan at Cedar Creek,	305
The Peace Commissioners,	309
Raid on Saint Albans, Vermont,	313
Plan of the Confederate Retreat from Richmond and Petersburg,	317
Defense of Fort Gregg,	320
Plan of Richmond and the Surrounding Country,	321
Ruins of Richmond after the War,	324
The Flag of Truce,	325
The House where General Lee Surrendered,	328
General Lee's Farewell to his Soldiers (drawn by Francis Christy),	329
Assassination of President Lincoln,	333
The Capture of Booth,	337
Early Home of Abraham Lincoln, Gentryville, Indiana,	340
Lincoln's Grave,	341
Abraham Lincoln,	345
Andrew Jackson,	349
Meeting of Sherman and Johnston,	352
Raising the Flag over Fort Sumter,	353
The Last Meeting of the Confederate Cabinet,	357
Yosemite Valley,	361
Horace Greeley,	365
Edward Everett, American Statesman, born April 11, 1794; died January 15, 1865,	372
The *Shenandoah* among the Whalers,	373
Fortress Monroe,	376
End of the Oyster War,	377
Beating the Sword into the Plowshare,	380

LIST OF FULL-PAGE ILLUSTRATIONS.

COLOR PLATES.

Fight between the *Kearsarge* and *Alabama* . . . . . *Frontispiece*

Last Moments of John Brown . . . . . *Facing Page* 54

From Original Painting by Hovenden in Metropolitan Museum of Art.

Battle of Malvern Hill . . . . . " " 131

Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg . . . . . " " 192

PHOTOGRAVURES.

Defense of Fort Sumter . . . . . *Facing Page* 11

Portrait of Abraham Lincoln . . . . . " " 98

Portrait of Robert E. Lee . . . . . " " 150

Attack on Charleston . . . . . " " 302

DUOTONES, WOOD-ENGRAVINGS, ETC.

Battle of Bull Run . . . . . *Facing Page* 34

United States Treasury Building . . . . . " " 62

Capture of New Orleans . . . . . " " 86

Reading the Emancipation Proclamation . . . . . " " 139

Guilty . . . . . " " 174

Patent Office . . . . . " " 174

On Picket . . . . . " " 214

Sheridan's Ride . . . . . " " 288

Surrender of General Lee . . . . . " " 318

Harvard College . . . . . " " 350

A PICTORIAL HISTORY
OF
THE UNITED STATES.

—o—

PART V.—THE WAR FOR THE UNION.

—o—

CHAPTER I.

EVENTS OF 1861. OPENING OF HOSTILITIES.

SECESSION, like a tornado, swept everything before it. It seems strange in these later years, when the love for the Union stirs all hearts, between the Atlantic and Pacific, and from the British Possessions to the Rio Grande—when the veterans of the South are among the foremost to rally to the defense of the country, at the first speck of war, that these thousands could be led to turn against the Stars and Stripes, and do their utmost to bring it to the dust. But so it was.

South Carolina was the first state to withdraw from the Union—a resolution to that effect having passed the convention in Charleston, December 20, 1860. The provisional government of the Confederacy was established soon after.

The situation of President Buchanan was very trying. He saw his country drifting into a war that he was unable to prevent. Howell Cobb, his secretary of the treasury, having done all he could to help secession, resigned his office on the 8th of December. On the 12th, General Cass, secretary of state, resigned also, but for a different reason. He was an ardent Union man, and finding himself unable to check the disunion plotting around him, would not consent to be party to the ruin of his country. J. S. Black, the attorney-general, succeeded Mr. Cass, and the place of Cobb was filled first by Philip F. Thomas of Maryland, and afterward by General John A. Dix of New York.

The president issued a proclamation on the 14th of December, recommending the observance of the 4th of January following as a day of fasting, humiliation and prayer. The observance through the North was quite general.

Meanwhile, South Carolina proved her terrible earnestness. Leading the way for the other southern states, she did not wait for them. For a time she was virtually

an independent power. She organized as a new nation, and arranged to send ambassadors, ministers and consuls abroad. The people of South Carolina were declared by the ordinance of secession to be citizens of the new nation. Most of those opposed to this madness had found it advisable to leave sometime before. Governor Pickens formed a cabinet with the usual departments of government represented in it. Provision was made for military operations; the state banks were authorized by the legislature to suspend specie payments, and a loan of $400,000 was contracted and promptly taken up. A call for volunteers followed, and it was decided, that, if necessary, a draft should be ordered. It was this decisive course on the part of South Carolina that led the other southern states to join the movement.

As the eventful days passed, Abraham Lincoln, president-elect, became an object of increasing interest. He was at his home in Springfield, Illinois, awaiting the hour to assume the reins of government. Lincoln was a remarkable man, and ranks among the greatest of our presidents. He was born in Hardin (now Larue) County, Kentucky, in 1809, and when the boy was only seven years old the family moved to the backwoods of Indiana. Abraham grew to manhood, with little chance of acquiring an education. In 1828 he was hired by the owner of a flat-boat to make a trip to New Orleans. When he came back, his father moved to Illinois, where the son was employed for a time in splitting rails, and this fact led many persons to refer to Mr. Lincoln, as "the rail-splitter from Illinois." During the succeeding years, he was variously engaged as flat-boatman, clerk, surveyor, postmaster and river-pilot. He served as a captain in the Black Hawk war, and on his return became interested in politics. He was elected to the legislature of Illinois in 1834. He studied law as opportunity presented, was admitted to the bar in 1837, and practiced at Springfield, Illinois, where he met with great success. He bore a prominent part in the presidential elections of 1840 and 1844, and was elected to the house of representatives in 1846. He attracted no special notice until the bill for the repeal of the Missouri Compromise, of which you have learned the particulars, came up for discussion. He was selected to answer Stephen A. Douglas, the author of the bill. This reply of Mr. Lincoln is considered the most effective speech he ever made. It surprised and delighted every one, and resulted in the nomination of Mr. Lincoln to oppose Mr. Douglas for the United States senatorship. Douglas was elected, but the ability shown by Mr. Lincoln led, in 1860, to his nomination for the presidency.

Lincoln was tall and muscular, careless of his dress, rough in manner, but with much native wit and kindness of heart. He was inflexibly honest, and a thorough patriot. His utterances, while at home awaiting the time when he should leave for Washington, showed his countrymen that while he would concede to the South every thing that honor would permit, he would never trifle with rebellion or agree to any settlement of the troubles that should involve disunion.

Since South Carolina had taken the initiative, she could not but feel that the first blow struck at the South would be through her. She lost no time, therefore, in strengthening the defenses of Charleston harbor. This was defended by Castle Pinckney, and forts Moultrie, Sumter and Johnson. Fort Sumter was the strongest and most important. The others in comparison were of little account as means of defense.

In October, 1860, Colonel Gardner, the commandant, sought to increase his supply of ammunition. For the attempt he was removed by Floyd, the secretary of war, who left no stone unturned to help those that were plotting against the Union. He was succeeded by Major Robert Anderson of Kentucky, also a strong Union man.

Major Anderson was quick to see the weakness of the federal position at Charleston, and there could be no doubt of the meaning of the preparations of the South Carolinians. He wrote to Adjutant-general Cooper in Washington, urging that immediate steps be taken to put the defenses in better condition. His arguments were unheeded, for Adjutant-general Cooper was a secessionist, and afterward took service in the Confederacy. You can understand, too, the painful situation of Major Anderson, whose superior officers to whom he was directed to report (Secretary Floyd and Adjutant-general Cooper) were secessionists, who naturally wished to keep the defenses of Charleston harbor as weak as possible.

Left to himself, Major Anderson sent a number of engineers to repair Castle Pinckney. He also strengthened Fort Moultrie. Two days after South Carolina passed the ordinance of secession, he wrote to the war department that a steamer had been stationed near Sumter with the apparent purpose of preventing any troops being placed in that fort, and that the South Carolinians unquestionably meant to seize Sumter as soon as it was clear that the national government did not intend to hand it over to them.

To this earnest letter Major Anderson received no reply. Feeling that he was left to himself, and knowing, too, that he had no means of defending the four forts, he decided to concentrate his command in Sumter. He first sent the women and children to Fort Johnson, taking this roundabout method, so as to deceive those in Charleston who were watching him closely. On the night of December 26th, under the light of a bright moon, the garrison removed from Moultrie to Sumter. A few men were left behind to spike the guns, destroy the carriages and cut down the flagstaff. Anderson wrote to Adjutant-general Cooper telling him what he had done, but before his letter could arrive, the Charleston secessionists had telegraphed the news to the war office. Secretary Floyd was angered, and demanded an explanation from Anderson for making such a movement without orders. Anderson replied that self-defense demanded it. At a cabinet meeting Floyd called attention to the fact that both he and the president had pledged their honor to the representatives of the South that the existing military situation should not be changed during the expiring term of the democratic administration. He insisted upon permission from the president to withdraw the garrison from the harbor of Charleston. Weak as was the president, he could not consent to such dictation. Upon his refusal, Secretary Floyd resigned and hastened southward.

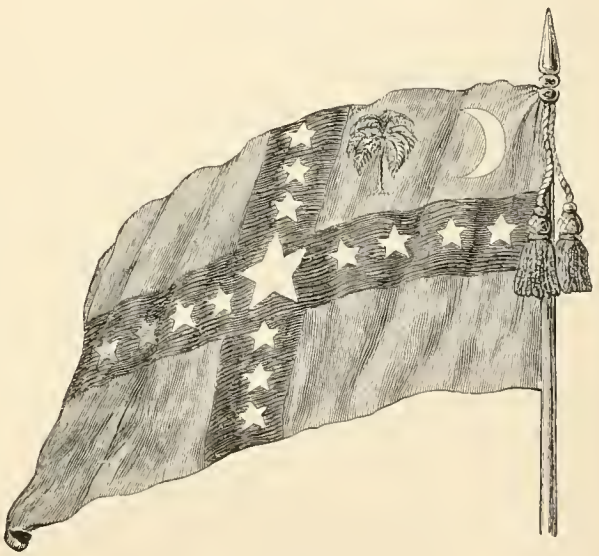
Floyd's successor was Joseph Holt, of Kentucky, a man of integrity and strong Union sentiments. On the last day of the year, Secretary Holt conveyed to Major Anderson the government approval of his action, and the following week congress adopted a resolution commending the patriotic course of Major Anderson. President Buchanan found himself steadied and held up despite his weakness.

The people in Charleston were enraged by the action of Major Anderson. They pronounced it a hostile act—the beginning, indeed, of civil war. Many demanded to be

led against the fort in which he had taken refuge. Instead of doing so, however, they occupied Fort Moultrie and Castle Pinckney on the day succeeding the evacuation of Sumter. The following day, the custom-house and post-office were seized, and two days later the government arsenal was taken possession of by the militia. During the excitement, the revenue-cutter *William Aiken*, lying in Charleston harbor, was surrendered by the officer in command. While the secessionists were strengthening the works, Major Anderson sent a post-adjutant to Moultrie to ask of the commander there by what authority he and armed men were in that fortification of the United States. The answer was, "By the authority of the sovereign state of South Carolina, and by command of her government."

The president grew stronger as he saw the awakening of the North. Under the apparent indifference of the people was a fervent sentiment of loyalty to the Union.

The president showed a decision that gave great encouragement to the friends of the Union. Edwin M. Stanton succeeded to the attorney-generalship. He was a man of prodigious energy, and was devoted heart and soul to the Union.



THE SOUTH CAROLINA FLAG.

There was the best of reason for believing a revolutionary effort would be made in Washington itself to prevent the inauguration of President Lincoln. General Scott was consulted, and measures were taken to thwart any such attempt. The *Star of the West*, a merchant-steamer that had been chartered by the government, was sent to Charleston with supplies for Major Anderson. Thompson, the secretary of the interior, was so incensed that he resigned office and hastened to Mississippi to help in the work of secession. On the morning of January 9th, the *Star of the West* approached Fort Sumter in an attempt to deliver the supplies secretly. A masked battery on Morris Island opened on her, and she ran up the stars-and-stripes. The battery paid no heed, but continued its fire several minutes longer, Fort Moultrie also sending a few shots. Two steam tugs and an armed schooner moved out to intercept the *Star of the West*, the captain of which, seeing his danger, put to sea and returned to New York.

Although the South Carolinians knew of the coming of the *Star of the West*, Major Anderson had not been apprised. He saw what it meant, however, and doubtless would have opened on Moultrie or the armed schooner, had not the steamer put to sea. He

COPYRIGHT, 1905, BY GEO. T FINN, N. Y.

REMOVAL OF THE TROOPS FROM FORT MOULTRIE TO FORT SUMTER.

Drawn by Edward Gault.

was held quiet by the orders of Secretary Floyd, whose resignation at that time was unknown to him.

The steamer having departed, Major Anderson sent a flag of truce to Governor Pickens, with a demand for an explanation of the outrage, saying that if it was not disavowed he would regard it as an act of war, and thenceforward would not allow vessels to pass within range of his guns. The governor promptly answered that the act was that of the state of South Carolina. Major Anderson was notified that any attempt to re-enforce him would be resisted. Realizing his extremely delicate position, Anderson referred the matter to the authorities at Washington for instructions. He requested Governor Pickens to allow the bearer to proceed thither, and the request was granted.

Meanwhile the provisional government of the confederate states was formed. The general convention of those states met at Montgomery, Alabama, on the 4th of February. They sat in the state house, the states represented being South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana and Florida. Howell Cobb, who had resigned a short time before as secretary of the treasury of the United States, was chosen chairman.

You may be sure there was no mistake about his sentiments on the question. In his opening speech he insisted that the secession of the states was fixed, irrevocable and perpetual; but that it was necessary to provide for the government of the seceded states, and for the maintenance of friendly relations with their sister states, and especially with the other slave states.

On the next day Mr. Memminger offered a series of resolutions declaring that it was expedient to form a confederacy of the seceded states. On the suggestion of Alexander H. Stephens of Georgia, it was decided that the assemblage should be known as a congress. The proposition of Memminger was acted upon, and it was agreed that the constitution of the United States, with a few slight changes, should be adopted as that of the Confederacy. The assemblage was declared to be a congress vested with all the legislative powers possessed by the congress of the old Union. It was decided that the provisional president should hold office for one year, unless superseded by the establishment of a permanent government; that each state should be a distinct judicial district, the judge having all the powers vested in the district and circuit courts; that the several districts together should compose the supreme bench; that wherever the word "Union" occurred in the United States constitution, the word "Confederacy" was to be substituted; that the African slave trade was prohibited; that congress should be empowered to forbid the introduction of any slaves from any state not a member of the Confederacy; that all appropriations must be upon the demand of the president; and that members of congress should not be prohibited from holding offices of honor and emolument under the administration. Other and more minute provisions were incorporated, and the provisional constitution was adopted without opposition, though the representative from South Carolina was much dissatisfied with some of its features.

The chairman and all the members of the congress took the oath of allegiance on the 9th of February, and proceeded to the election of a president and vice-president of the Confederacy. By a unanimous vote, Jefferson Davis of Mississippi, and Alexander

H. Stephens of Georgia, were chosen to these offices. The appointment of committees on foreign relations, postal affairs, finance, commerce, military and naval affairs, judiciary, patents, and copyrights and printing, was made the next day.

There was much discussion over the adoption of a flag. It was finally agreed that it should consist of two broad red stripes, separated by a white space of the same width, the union blue with seven white stars in the center. The flag thus described was soon afterward made, and unfurled on the 4th of March, over the state house in Montgomery.

Jefferson Davis was not a member of the congress that had elected him provisional president of the Confederacy. He had gone to his home at Vicksburg, Mississippi, after leaving the United States senate on the 21st of January. He was there when notified of his election, and started at once for the capital of Alabama. He was received with the wildest enthusiasm along the entire route. He was forced to make twenty-five speeches on the way, and reached his destination on the 15th. When he entered Montgomery he was surrounded by militia, and welcomed by the thunder of cannon and the shouts of the frenzied multitudes.

The inaugural ceremonies took place on the 18th. At noon Davis and Stephens, surrounded by officials, made their appearance on the platform built in front of the state house. The proceedings were opened with prayer, when the confederate president pronounced his address. This of course was a skillful argument in favor of the right of the states to resume the authority once delegated to the United States. In other words, the states composing the union had the right to withdraw from the same and to resume their sovereign independence whenever a majority of the citizens should wish to do so. "Thus," said Davis, "the sovereign states here represented proceeded to form this Confederacy; and it is by the abuse of language that their act has been denominated revolution. They formed a new alliance, but in each state its government has remained."

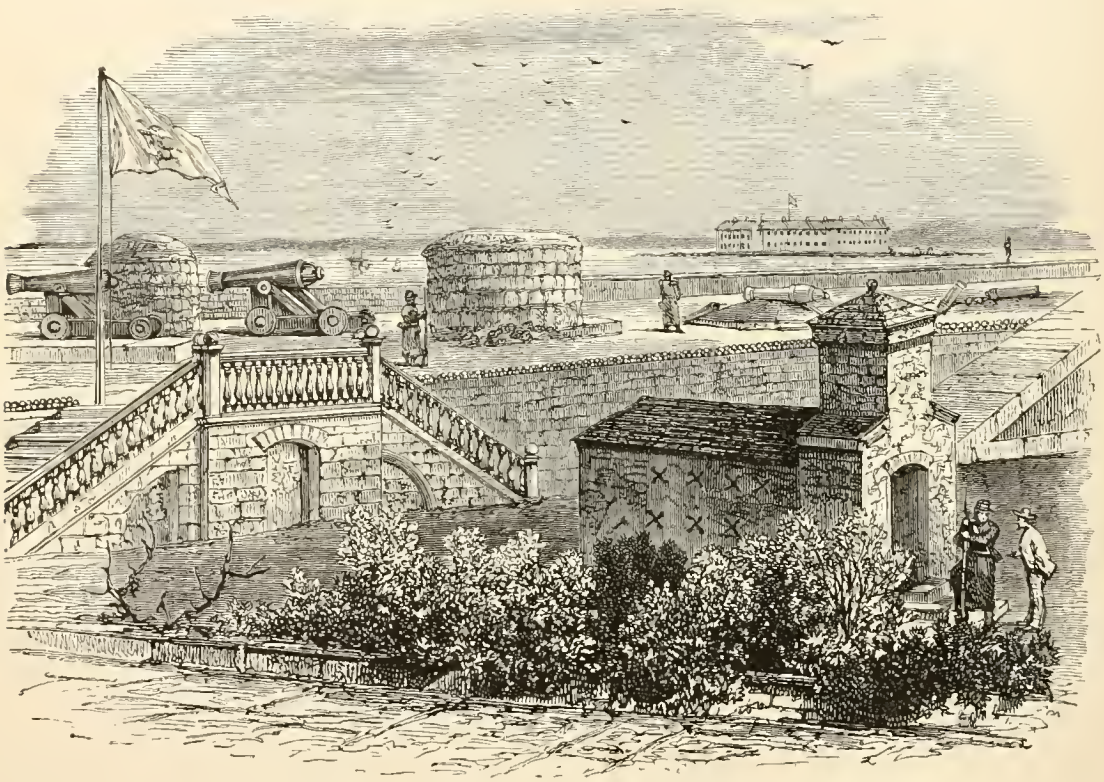
This theory he again expressed in these words: "We have changed the constituent parts, but not the system, of our government. The constitution of these confederate states is that formed by our fathers. In their exposition of it, and in the judicial construction it has received, we have a light that reveals its true meaning."

He gave his hearers to understand that a war was probable because of the attempt of the northern states to subjugate them; he therefore urged the prompt formation of a powerful army and navy. He referred to the possibility of some of the northern states wishing to unite with them, but that such a reunion was not practical or desirable.

You will be interested in learning something more about the president of the Confederacy. He was born in Kentucky in 1808. While he was yet a boy the family removed to Mississippi. The son was given every advantage in the way of obtaining an education and pursued his later civil studies at Transylvania College, Kentucky. He entered the West Point Military Academy in 1824, and graduated four years later. In 1831–32, he served on the northwest frontier in the Black Hawk war, and in the following year acted as first lieutenant of dragoons against the Comanches and Apaches. Withdrawing from the army in 1835, he settled as a cotton planter in Mississippi, but re-entered the army on the breaking out of the Mexican war, as colonel of the first Mississippi volunteers. He showed great bravery at Montery and Buena Vista, being severely

wounded in the latter battle. He was elected to the United States senate on the conclusion of the war, but resigned so as to be a candidate for the governorship of Mississippi. He failed, but became secretary of war under Pierce. He was United States senator again under Buchanan, and resigned and went south at the breaking out of the secession movement.

The following cabinet was chosen by President Davis: Robert Toombs, secretary of state; Charles G. Memminger, secretary of the treasury; L. Pope Walker, secretary of war; Stephen R. Mallory, secretary of the navy; John H. Reagan, postmaster-general;



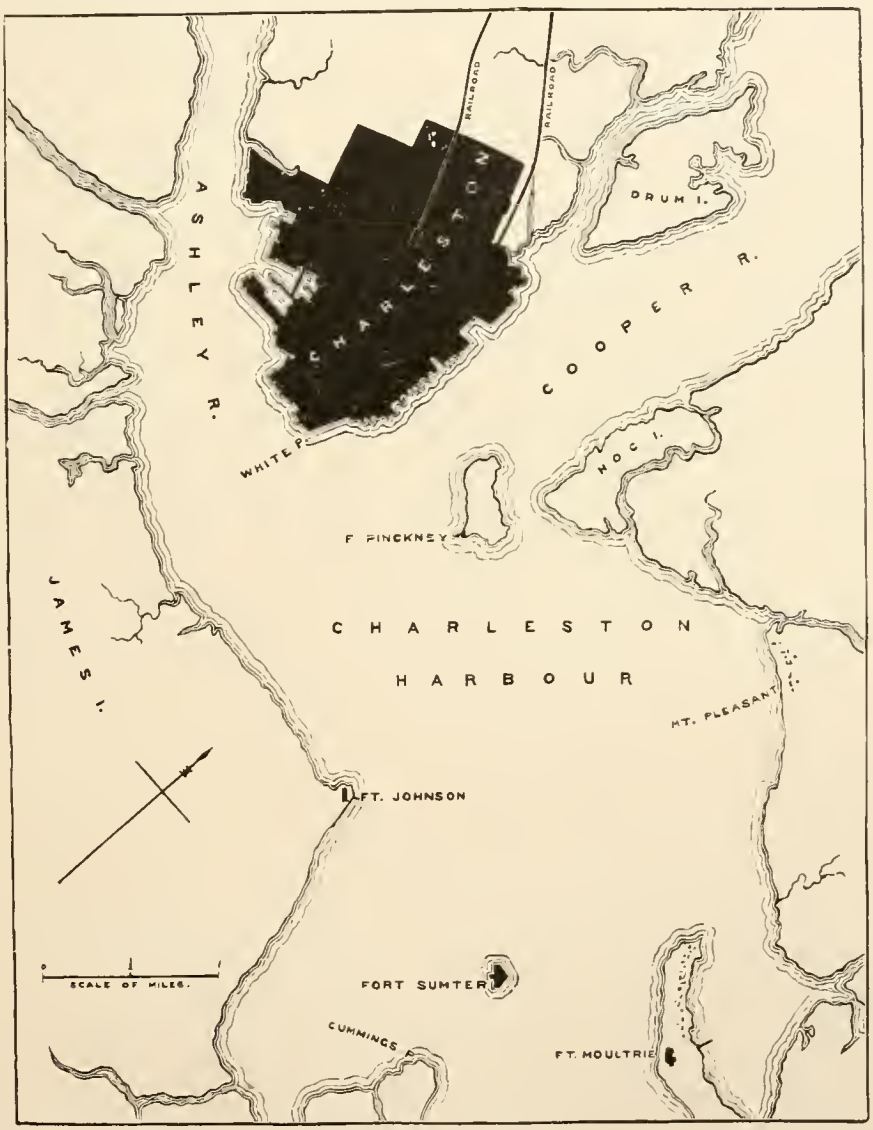
FORT MOULTRIE, CHARLESTON, WITH FORT SUMTER IN THE DISTANCE.

Judah P. Benjamin, attorney-general. The confederate congress authorized President Davis to accept 100,000 volunteers for one year and to borrow $15,000,000.

Orders were issued for the creation of a small naval force for coast defense; a postal system was established; a few needed laws were passed for carrying on the government, and on the 11th of March a permanent constitution was adopted. The president and vice-president were elected for six years, and the former was made ineligible for re-election.

The confederate government was fairly established, when, on the 11th of February, Lincoln left Springfield, Illinois, for Washington. At various points on the route he addressed the multitudes who gathered to see and hear him. He expressed himself in

favor of preserving peace unless the war should be forced upon him in self-defense. It seems strange in view of his sad death, that in Philadelphia, on the anniversary of Washington's birthday, he should have declared he would "rather be assassinated" than surrender the principle of liberty on which the Union was based.



PLAN OF FORTS AND HARBOR AT CHARLESTON.

A plot was formed in Baltimore to assassinate the president, but the assassins were foiled by his taking an earlier train than that in which he was expected to arrive. He reached Washington on the 23d.

General Scott distributed a number of soldiers judiciously through the city on the day of the inauguration. An enormous crowd was present, when, on the morn-

ing of Monday, March 4, 1861, Mr. Lincoln went from the White House to the capitol. Mounted troops moved along the side streets, ready for immediate action. These troops, together with two batteries of horse artillery, were under the personal direction of General Scott.

Between one and two o'clock, Mr. Buchanan and Mr. Lincoln entered the senate chamber arm in arm. The president was pale and nervous, as he well might be, while Mr. Lincoln was cool and self-possessed, though a little flushed with emotion. His inaugural was delivered in the presence of the supreme court, the senate and house of representatives, the foreign ministers and a large number of leading citizens. He opened by alluding to the fears felt by some lest the accession of a republican administration should endanger the peace and the property of the people of the southern states. For this, he declared there had never been any just ground. He had no purpose of interfering directly or indirectly with the institution of slavery in states where it existed. He defined his position on the question of union and secession too clearly to be mistaken.

The new cabinet consisted of William H. Seward, secretary of state; Salmon P. Chase, secretary of the interior; Simon Cameron, secretary of war; Gideon Welles, secretary of the navy; Caleb B. Smith, secretary of the interior; Edward Bates, attorney-general, and Montgomery Blair, postmaster-general. One of the characteristics of President Lincoln was his coolness and deliberation. He carefully weighed the situation, and on the 8th of April notified Governor Pickens, of South Carolina, that the government had determined to provision Fort Sumter at all hazards.

On the day following President Lincoln's inauguration, Major-general Beauregard, a graduate of West Point, and recently a major in the United States army, was sent by the confederate government to take command of the forces in Charleston harbor. When he learned that provisions were to be sent to Fort Sumter, he telegraphed to the confederate secretary of war and asked for instructions. He was told to enforce the evacuation of Sumter without delay. He sent two of his staff to demand the surrender of Major Anderson; the latter refused, adding that he and his garrison would soon be starved out—a piece of information that it should seem he ought to have kept to himself. A second message was forwarded to the effect that if he would set the time when he would evacuate Fort Sumter, and agree in the meanwhile not to use his guns against the confederates, unless himself assailed, General Beauregard would not open fire. Major Anderson felt his position so desperate that he named the 15th as the day on which he would evacuate the fort, unless he should receive additional supplies or other instructions from Washington. This reply was not satisfactory, for it was well known in Charleston that a fleet with supplies and re-enforcements was off the harbor. On the morning of April 12th, Beauregard notified Anderson that he would open fire in one hour. Four regiments of a thousand men had been telegraphed for from the country; ambulances were prepared for the wounded, and the surgeons were ordered to their posts. Seven guns were fired as a signal, and the reserves gathered in the central part of the city.

The night preceding the bombardment was one that can never be forgotten in Charleston. The whole city was stirred by an excitement such as it had never known

Defense of Fort Sumter

COPYRIGHT 1905 BY GEO T FINN, NEW YORK

FROM THE ORIGINAL DRAWING BY KENDRICK

DEFENSE OF FORT SUMPTER

before. No one slept. The beating of drums and the sound of infantry and cavalry hurrying through the streets, were drowned at times by the reverberating thunder of one of the most violent storms of the season.

The bombardment of Fort Sumter opened at half-past four on the morning of April 13th. The first shot was fired from the Cummings Point battery by the venerable Edmund Ruffin, a violent secessionist who had come from Virginia to beg that privilege. This same man, when he saw some years later that the Confederacy was doomed, committed suicide.

Beauregard's batteries were at Fort Moultrie (on Sullivan island) and at Cummings Point, which is a narrow point of land extending northward from Morris island. The distance of these works from Sumter is from 1,600 to 2,000 yards. Two mortar batteries mounted on a hurriedly-constructed earthwork were on Morris island. Cummings Point, the nearest to Fort Sumter, had a number of large guns protected by iron fortifications, besides a floating battery made of palmetto timber sheathed with iron, and mounting four heavy guns.

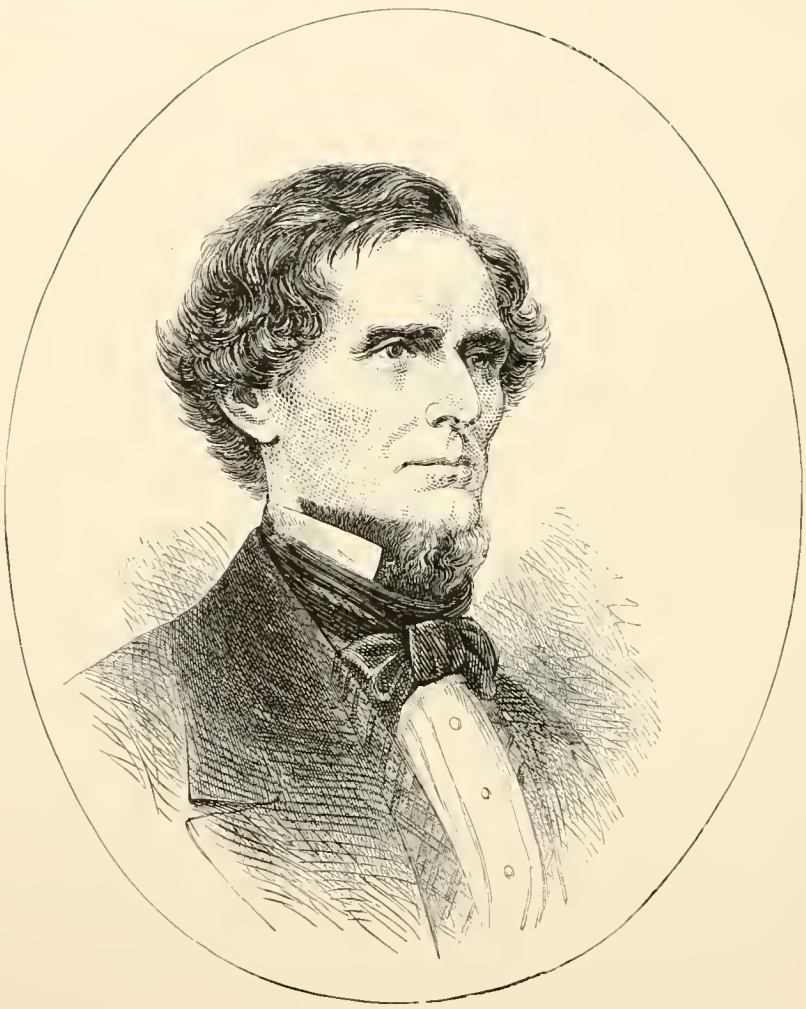
Nineteen batteries converged their fire upon Sumter for two hours and a-half before a gun was fired in return. Major Anderson thought it best that his men should first have their breakfast, since a trying day's work was before them, and they were few in number, there being only seventy-nine regular soldiers, beside thirty laborers who helped to work the guns. At noon-day the supply of cartridges gave out and substitutes were made from blankets, linen and other materials. The guns had no screws, scales or tangents, and were without sheers on which to mount them, until temporary ones were made. Major Anderson ordered his men to keep within the bomb-proof galleries, and not to work their guns on the open parapets, two of which were dismounted by the floating battery. Shells were sent into the fort every twenty minutes, and the guns in the casemate at Sumter steadily answered until dark, when the fire gradually slackened. The besiegers continued the firing throughout the night and the besieged resumed their return shots at seven the next morning.

Little effect was produced by the fire of Sumter, and the fleet that had been sent to the relief of the fort could be seen lying outside the harbor, but it could not get close enough to give any help. Before long the officers' barracks broke into flames, and through the smoke the confederates caught sight of the flag at half-mast as a signal of distress. The fire was extinguished several times, but broke out again and again. The fort was so filled with suffocating smoke that the men could breathe only by lying on their faces and catching the air as it swept in below the hot smoke. To prevent an explosion, ninety barrels of gunpowder were thrown overboard and the magazine closed.

In response to the call of distress, Beauregard sent a boat to Major Anderson with offers of aid in putting out the flames, but before it could reach the fort, a white flag was run up in token of surrender.

The ringing of bells and the discharge of cannon told the frantic citizens in Charleston that Fort Sumter had surrendered. The telegraph throughout the country had been throbbing for hours with dispatches which gave the progress of the bombardment, and all were on the tiptoe of excitement. When the tidings came that the stars-and-stripes

had been hauled down and the "stars-and-bars" run up over Sumter, the Confederacy was convulsed as if by an earthquake. The war spirit seized every body. Men of all professions and ages, from the beardless boy to the tottering grandfather, clamored for the privilege of fighting for the new country. There was no need of a draft to obtain an army: the need was to restrain the multitudes, and to select from them those who were to march against the Union.



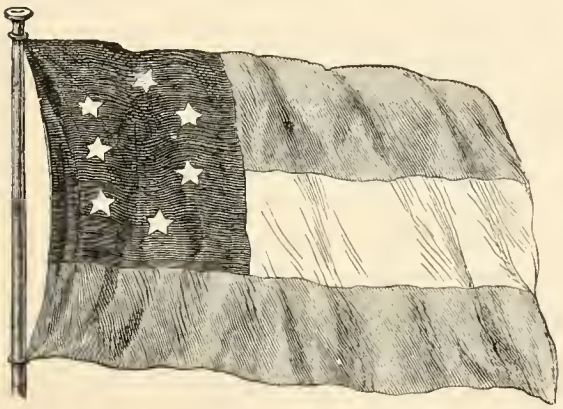
JEFFERSON DAVIS.

The effect in the north was prodigious. The people of that section may be slower to respond to exciting causes, but, once aroused, they are irrestrainable. At the news that the bombardment of Fort Sumter had begun, the streets were crowded with thousands who gathered around the bulletin boards and telegraph offices. The prayer went up from unnumbered hearts that Major Anderson and his garrison would be successful in their defense. At last it became known that the fort had surrendered.

It was then the pent-up emotions passed all bounds. The wrath of the people

became dangerous. Newspaper offices that had shown a tenderness toward the South were compelled to hang out the stars-and-stripes under threat of being torn down; men who had expressed a sympathy for the revolted states had to flee for their lives; the threats against the secessionists were bitter and deep.

The bombardment of Fort Sumter lasted thirty-four hours, during which no person was killed on either side. The structure was reduced to ruins. The garrison was allowed to take individual and corporate property; to march out with arms and the honors of war, and to salute and carry away its flag. The only death that occurred in the fort was caused by the firing of this salute. Three of the besiegers were also slightly wounded. On leaving the fort, the garrison embarked in a vessel belonging to the confederates, and took the flag with them. When transferred to the *Baltic*, of the relief squadron, it was raised to the mast-head and saluted with cheers, and by the guns of the other vessels.



THE CONFEDERATE FLAG.

On reaching New York, on the 18th, the garrison was greeted with salutes from the forts and the acclamations of the people. Major Anderson was presented with the freedom of the city, in a gold box, given ornamented swords and medals, and raised by the president to the rank of brigadier-general.

Soon after the departure of Major Anderson, General Beauregard, Governor Pickens, the executive council, and leading citizens went to Fort Sumter on a steamer and took possession. Governor Pickens, who had watched the bombardment through a telescope, made a fiery speech that evening from the balcony of the Charleston Hotel. He thanked God the war had begun, and promised that they would die before they would surrender. The flag of the United States had been humbled for the first time; it had been lowered before the glorious little state of South Carolina. He was cheered to the echo. Had you been in Charleston at that time you would have seen a city beside itself with exultation. On Sunday the 14th thanksgiving services were held in all the churches.

Three days after the fall of Sumter, President Lincoln called for seventy-five thousand volunteers to serve three months, and Congress was summoned to meet on the 4th of July. The states named in the proclamation as opposing the laws of the republic were South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Florida, Mississippi, Louisiana and Texas. Several that joined the Confederacy later had not yet done so. To the governors of those states President Lincoln directed his appeal, just as he did to each of the northern states.

As you may well suppose, the replies to this request, sent through the secretary of war, were various. Those from the North were enthusiastically in favor of supporting the president in the most vigorous steps for sustaining the Union. Governor Letcher

of Virginia notified the secretary of war that the militia under his control should not be furnished for any such purpose as the national government had in view. Governor Ellis of North Carolina affected to doubt the genuineness of the appeal, and refused to be a party to what he declared to be a wicked violation of the laws of the country and a war upon the liberties of a free people. Kentucky made a similar reply. Tennessee would not supply a single man for coercion, but fifty thousand for the defense of her rights and those of the southern people. Governor Jackson of Missouri was very emphatic, and used these words: "Your requisition is illegal, unconstitutional, revolutionary, inhuman, diabolical, and can not be complied with." Governor Rector, of Arkansas, expressed the same views, declaring that the demand had added insult to injury. It has been said that he was emphatic to profanity, though he has denied the charge. Maryland tried to take a medium position. Governor Hicks was loyally disposed, but his state was a slave-holding one, and most of the citizens were in favor of supporting the Confederacy. The governor was in an embarrassing situation which required the utmost caution. He issued a proclamation on the 14th of April for the troops, stating that four regiments would be detailed to serve within the limits of Maryland or for the defense of the national capital. He told his people that they would soon have the chance in a special election to express their devotion to the Union or their desire to shatter it. The governor of Delaware followed a similar course. In his proclamation, issued on the 26th of April, he recommended the formation of volunteer companies for protecting the lives and property of the citizens against violence of all kinds. These companies, the governor added, could not be ordered by the president into the service of the United States, but if they chose they could offer their services to the general government for the defense of the national capital and the support of the constitution and laws of the country.

On such occasions the newspapers of the country show the feeling of the communities in which they were published. To prove the intensity of the war feeling in the South, I will quote from the *Richmond Examiner* of April 28, 1861: "There never was half the unanimity among the people before, nor a tithe of the zeal on any subject that is now manifested to take Washington. From the mountains and valleys to the shores of the sea there is one wild shout of fierce resolve to capture Washington city at all and at every human hazard." Another Richmond journal, issued on the day that Fort Sumter surrendered, said that nothing was more probable than that President Davis would march an army through North Carolina and Virginia to Washington, and the Virginians were advised to keep their weapons and themselves in readiness to fall in. L. Pope Walker, the confederate secretary of war, predicted that the "stars-and-bars" would by the 1st of May float from the dome in Washington and eventually would be flung to the breeze from the roof of Faneuil Hall, in Boston.

But wild boasting was by no means confined to the South. The *New York Tribune* promised the nations of Europe that Jefferson Davis and his colleagues would swing from the battlements of Washington by the 4th of July. The *New York Times* believed the rebellion could be completely crushed within thirty days. The Philadelphia *Press* asserted that the northern people were invincible and the southerners would scatter

like chaff in the wind before the advance of the federal armies. How sadly each section mistook the courage and endurance of the other!

The Confederacy rapidly crystallized into a compact whole. Two days after President Lincoln's call for volunteers, Virginia seceded; Arkansas followed on the 6th of May, and North Carolina fell into line two weeks later. In Tennessee, especially in East Tennessee, there was such a strong Union sentiment that it was not until the 8th of June that a secession ordinance could be passed. In Missouri the movement resulted in civil war, while in Kentucky the authorities issued a proclamation of neutrality. The people of Maryland were divided in sentiment, but the disunion element was much the stronger.

Two days after the issue of President Lincoln's proclamation, President Davis replied. He began by saying that the president of the United States had declared his intention of invading the Confederacy with an armed force for the purpose of capturing its fortresses, and thereby subverting its independence. The confederate president invited all who were willing to aid the government in resisting such aggression to apply for commissions or letters of marque and reprisal.

President Lincoln issued another proclamation on the 19th of April, establishing a blockade of the southern ports, and intimated that any one molesting a vessel of the United States would be treated as a pirate.

This blockade, as a matter of course, interfered with commerce, and great pressure was brought to bear on Lord John Russell and Lord Palmerston, foreign secretary and prime minister of England, to induce them to raise the blockade and recognize the confederate states. There was a strong sentiment in some parts of Great Britain in favor of this course, but fortunately the authorities would not yield. Had they done so, the results would have been appalling. The North was in the mood to fight Great Britain at the same time it was putting down the armed rebellion at home.

The first loyal troops to reach Washington in response to the call of the president were six hundred Pennsylvanians, who arrived on the 19th of April, the anniversary of the battle of Lexington at the opening of the revolution. Portions of the Seventh Pennsylvania and Sixth Massachusetts regiments, while passing through Baltimore to the defense of Washington, were set upon by an infuriated mob, encouraged by many influential citizens. Numerous southerners were in the city, and there was a determination on the part of a large number that Maryland should secede.

Two hundred Massachusetts soldiers becoming detached from their regiment, were hemmed in by a swarm of thousands, who assailed them with jeers, stones, bricks and pistol shots. The military pushed slowly ahead, showing admirable discipline and self-restraint in the face of great provocation. At last, when three of their number had been killed and eight wounded, the soldiers halted and sent a volley among the rioters. The mayor, George W. Brown, a secessionist, lost his patience also, and catching a musket from a soldier, shot dead one of the leaders of the mob. Nine of them were killed, but the number of wounded was never learned. The others recoiled, but fighting was continued to the railroad station, whence the troops left for Washington. The train moved off in a shower of stones, clubs and pistol shots, followed by the curses of the baffled rioters.

On the day before this attack a body of confederate soldiers advanced against Harper's Ferry. At that point were a national armory and arsenal, which produced ten thousand muskets a year, and usually had from eighty to ninety thousand stands of arms stored in the building. So you can readily see what a valuable prize it would have been for the Confederacy.

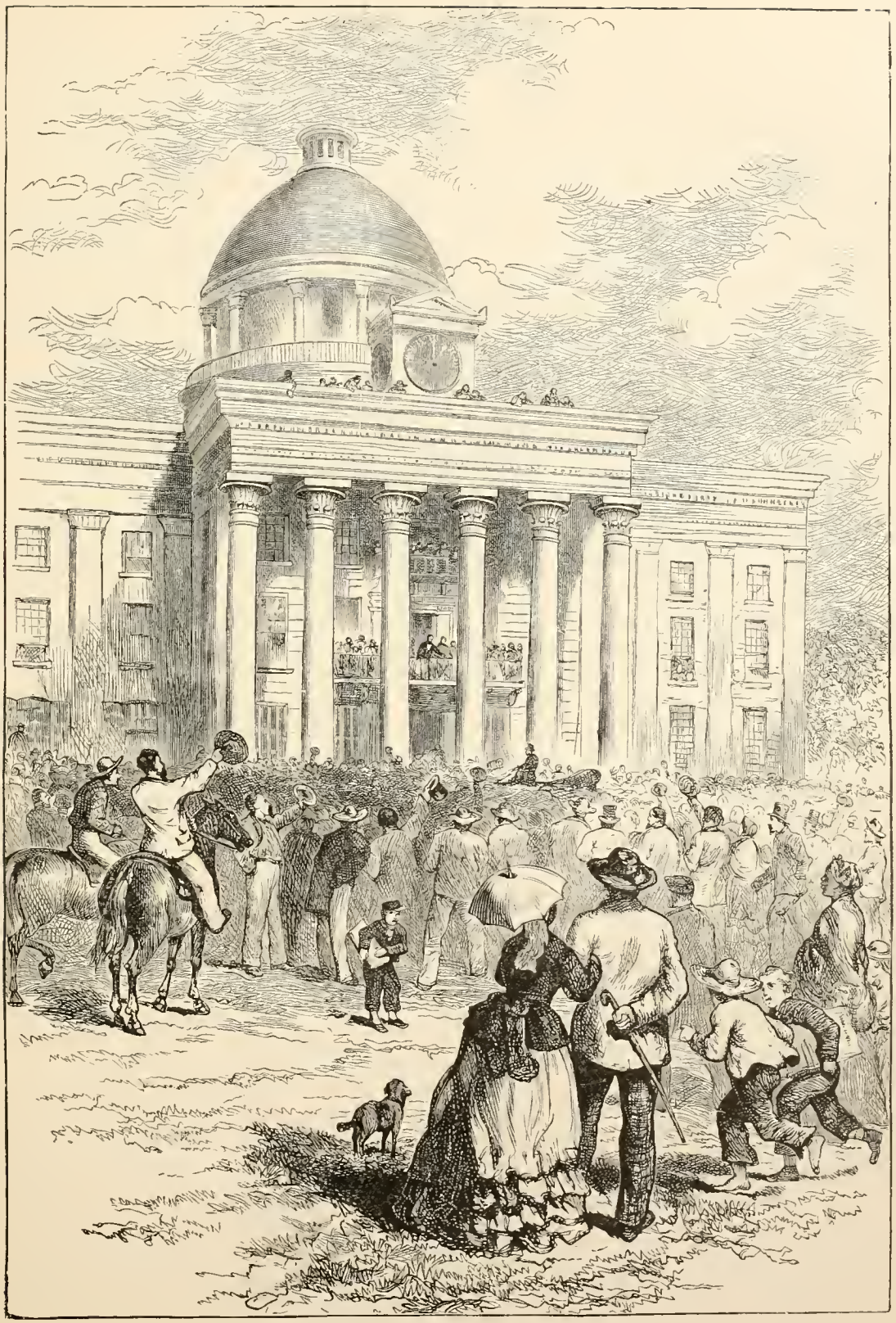
The federal government had gathered quite a force at Harper's Ferry, knowing the danger to which it was exposed, so that the confederates arranged to attack it with three thousand men. By some mistake, however, only two hundred and fifty took part in the enterprise. These silently gathered in the evening at a little village half way between Charleston Court House and Harper's Ferry, and set out for the latter point. A body of infantry led the way and was followed by a few horsemen and a single piece of artillery.

The few moved quietly along the winding country-roads until within a mile of the ferry, when they came upon some pickets who challenged them. The column stopped, and loaded their guns while their leaders consulted together. They were thus engaged when two tremendous booming explosions were heard from the direction of the ferry, and the heavens were lit up by a vivid sheet of flame. Lieutenant Jones, in charge of the arsenal, learning that the confederates were at hand, and believing their number far greater than was the fact, fired the trains which he had laid, blew up the building and retreated across the river with his men toward Pennsylvania. A clamorous crowd followed, and were kept back only by threats of being fired upon.

The explosion was only partly successful. The armory buildings were destroyed, but the machine-shop was uninjured, and with its valuable contents fell into the hands of the confederates. Harper's Ferry became an important post, where a large number of confederate troops were stationed, and from which detachments were sent to different points.

On the 16th of the same month, the Virginians began their preparations to seize the navy-yard near Norfolk, by sinking two light-boats in the channel of the Elizabeth River, so as to prevent any of the vessels going out. The navy-yard is at Gosport, a suburb of Portsmouth, opposite Norfolk. A number of war-vessels, large and small, were there, besides an enormous quantity of arms and munitions of war. Well aware of the weakness of its defenses, the federal authorities directed Commodore McCauley to lose no time in arming the *Merrimac*, to place the *Plymouth* and *Dolphin* beyond danger, to load the *Germantown* with the most valuable property, and to have it ready to be towed out on the first warning. McCauley delayed carrying out these orders, in deference, as he afterward said, to the advice of several of his junior officers. These junior officers soon afterward joined the confederacy.

It was soon clear that an attack by a powerful force was about to be made on the navy-yard. Since the property could not be saved, McCauley ordered all the vessels, with one exception, to be scuttled. At this juncture Captain Spaulding arrived from Washington in the *Pawnee*, which passed the obstructions in the channel. He saw that merely scuttling the vessels would not prevent them from falling into the hands of the enemy, and he directed everything to be given to the flames. This was done, but, as at



99 INAUGURATION OF JEFFERSON DAVIS. (*See page 7.*)

Pen drawing by Howard Palmer.

Harper's Ferry, the destruction was only partial. Early on the morning of April 21, eleven vessels and some of the buildings were burned, but a large number were unhurt and some of the heaviest guns were saved. The property that fell into the hands of the confederates was worth ten million dollars.

The secession of Virginia, the capture of Harper's Ferry and of the Norfolk navy-yard, and the rioting in Baltimore, all took place within a few days of each other. The capital of our country was surrounded by enemies. Governor Hicks had been forced to promise that no more troops should be allowed to pass through Baltimore. The bridges by which the troops were expected to arrive were destroyed, though Governor Hicks denied that he had given any authority for the act. All the telegraph lines leading out of Baltimore, with the exception of one to Richmond, were cut. President Lincoln saw the weakness of Washington, and, when the committee from Governor Hicks called on him, he suggested a compromise, by allowing the troops to pass around instead of through Baltimore. It was finally agreed that they should go to Washington by way of Annapolis, the capital.

The Seventh Regiment of New York, the finest organization of the city, had volunteered their services for thirty days, and were under arms when the news of the rioting in Baltimore reached the metropolis. They marched down Broadway amid the cheering of thousands, and left Philadelphia the following morning for Annapolis. There they joined General B. F. Butler with the Eighth Massachusetts, who had also passed around the city of Baltimore. Taking command of the united forces, General Butler set out for Washington. Part of the railway track had been torn up and the engines disabled by the insurgents; but among the Massachusetts regiment were many mechanics, who speedily repaired damages to track, engines and bridges. Colonel Lefferts reached the capital, while General Butler remained behind to keep the road open.

Every day brought its startling events. On the 3d of May, President Lincoln issued another call for soldiers. By this time the government had gained some idea of the vast task before it, and the volunteers were required to enlist for three years, or for the war. The total asked for was 85,000, of whom 42,000 were to serve in the volunteer ranks, 23,000 as regulars, and 18,000 as seamen. Lieutenant-general Winfield Scott was made commander-in-chief. Out of nine hundred and fifty-one officers in the federal army, two hundred and sixty-two joined the confederates. There were many others who, having left the army, now took service with the insurgents.

After the departure of Colonel Lefferts for Washington, General Butler, as I have told you, stayed behind to keep open the road to the national capital. The government placed him in command of the Annapolis Department, as it was called, which included twenty miles on each side of the railway connecting Annapolis and Washington. General Butler, although not educated as a soldier, was a man of great vigor and ability. He had not held his position long before he decided to make a descent on Baltimore, where he learned that a large quantity of gunpowder, intended for the secessionists, had been stored in a church.

On the 5th of May, he took possession of the Relay House, on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, and fortified his position. Under cover of the guns of Fort McHenry,

and of a gunboat in the harbor, a portion of the troops marched into the city on the 13th and stationed themselves on Federal Hill. General Butler issued a proclamation, stating that his object was to enforce respect and obedience to the laws, and to protect such as were loyal to the constitution. By this time, many of the more violent secessionists had left Baltimore, and the presence of the Union troops gave confidence to the loyalists, who cheered the soldiers while marching to Federal Hill.

General Butler forbade the carrying of supplies to the insurgents, asked for commissary stores and clothing, forbade all display of secession badges and of treasonable meetings, and offered to aid the municipal authorities in enforcing the laws. He seized some material, arrested several persons, and probably would have taken stronger measures had he not been stopped by a reproof from General Scott, who told him that the occupation of Baltimore was without his knowledge or approbation. Indeed, the commander-in-chief was so displeased that he required the government to recall General Butler. President Lincoln immediately after made him a major-general of volunteers, with the command of a large military district, including Eastern Virginia and the Carolinas, with his head-quarters at Fortress Monroe.

You will readily see that the position of General Butler was an important one. Fortress Monroe is the greatest military work in this country. It is on a peninsula called Old Point Comfort, at the entrance to Chesapeake Bay. The building was begun in 1819, when Monroe was president, for whom it was named. Its walls, faced with heavy blocks of granite, are thirty-five feet in thickness, with casemates below. It is encompassed by a moat; and the peninsula is connected with the mainland by a narrow isthmus of sand and a bridge leading in the direction of Hampton.

At the opening of the war, the fortress was armed with nearly four hundred cannon, and before the arrival of General Butler was under the command of Colonel Dimick, of the regular army.

Butler had been a short time only at Fortress Monroe, when some negroes fleeing from the confederate lines came thither for protection. A demand was made for their return, whereupon Butler refused, declaring the negroes "contraband of war." Few expressions have created more attention than this. It displeased those who felt a sympathy for the South, and who had declared from the first that the war was waged for the purpose of freeing the slave. At the same time it delighted the multitude who urged the prosecution of hostilities with all possible vigor. Butler was congratulated on his happy phrase, which in reality became the policy of the government itself, for henceforth fugitive slaves were considered contraband of war.

Butler fortified Newport News, a point of land at the junction of the James River and Hampton Roads, and sent a force to attack the confederate attachment stationed at Big Bethel, about fifteen miles away, on the road to Yorktown. The main body of the confederates was at Yorktown, under the command of J. B. Magruder, formerly an artillery officer in the United States army.

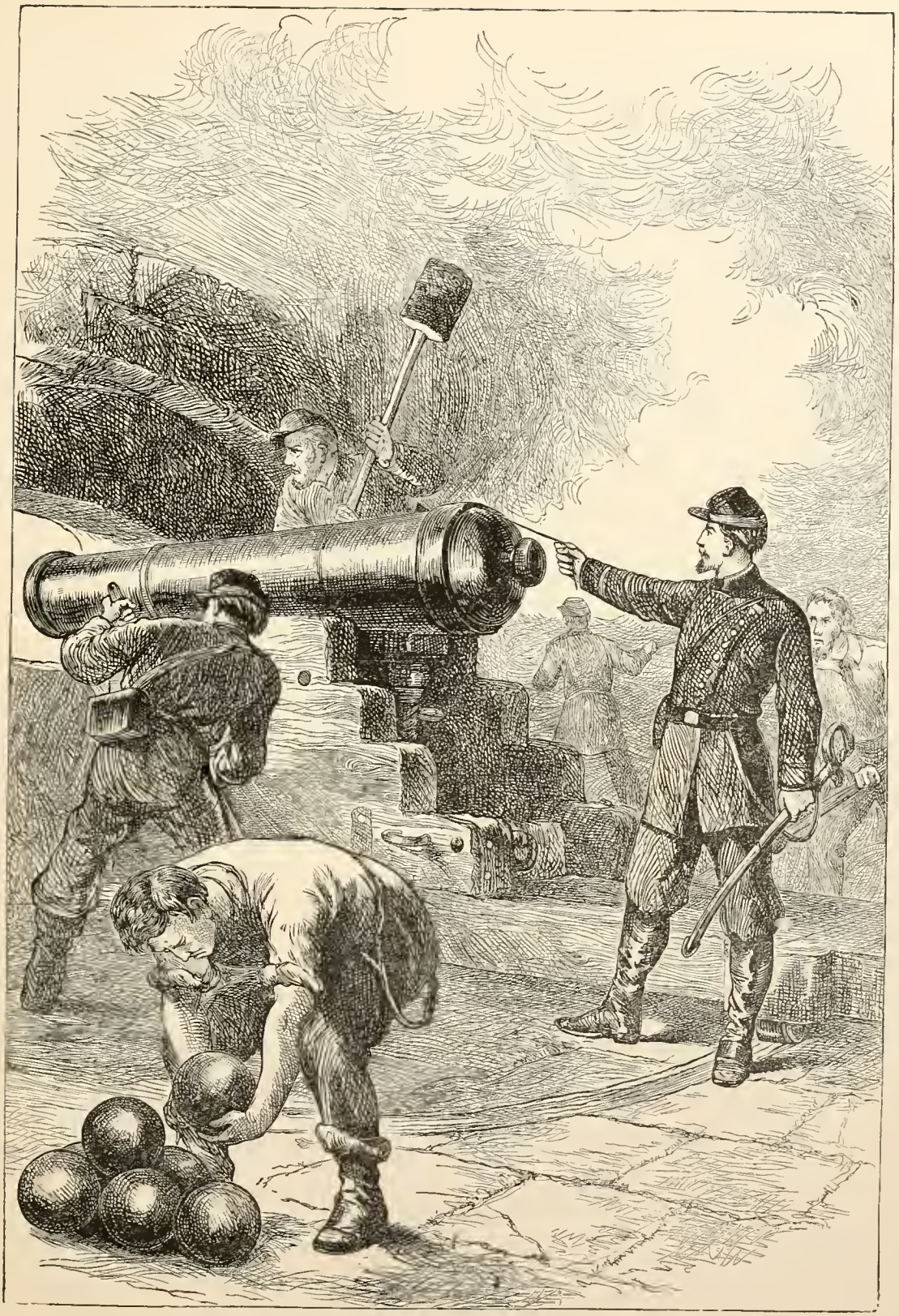
The expedition blundered from the first. The confederate force at Big Bethel consisted of eight hundred North Carolina volunteers, and over three hundred Virginians, with a battery of five howitzers and one rifle-gun. The position was strong, being

surrounded by a forest, while the swampy ground protected the flanks. A short distance in front was Little Bethel, with a small picket of cavalry. The detachment then was under the command of Colonel D. H. Hill.

General Pierce with four regiments started on the night of June 9th, to attack the confederate position. In the early morning light his two columns mistook each other for the enemy and ten men were killed before the mistake was discovered. In the

MAJOR ANDERSON.

assault which followed Captain Winthrop was shot dead while gallantly leading one of the companies. The assailants fled in dismay after losing fourteen killed and forty-nine wounded, among the former being Lieutenant John T. Greble of the regular army. This disastrous blunder was one of the many instances that prove that only men trained to the profession of arms should have charge of military operations.



AT FORT SUMTER. (*See page 14.*)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

CHAPTER II.

EVENTS OF 1861. THE OPPOSING ARMIES.

THE man who became the leader of the confederate armies was Robert Edmund Lee, born at Stratford House, Westmoreland County, Virginia, in 1809. His father was the famous "Light Horse Harry" of the Revolution, and was a great favorite of Washington. The son, who was handsome, talented and highly conscientious, graduated second in his class at West Point in 1829. His ability was of so high a character that he was employed in the most responsible positions even in time of peace. He was engineer-in-chief during the Mexican war, and was wounded at the battle of Chapultepec. His ability rapidly won him the brevets of major, lieutenant-colonel, and colonel. Some years later he went with General McClellan to the Crimea to report to the American government on the military operations of the allied armies before Sebastopol. He was generally regarded as the proper successor of General Scott, whenever the latter should retire from the command of the army.

General Lee went into the service of the South with great reluctance. He saw seven states leave the Union, and still he made no sign of sympathy with them. As late as March 16th, he accepted the rank of colonel of cavalry. He was an especial favorite of General Scott, who used his utmost persuasion to keep him true to his flag. Undoubtedly Lee would have remained in the United States army had not Virginia, his native state, seceded. In a letter to his sister, written after the secession of his state, he said: "The whole South is in a state of revolution, into which Virginia, after a long struggle, has been drawn; and though I recognize no necessity for this state of things, and would have forborne and pleaded to the end for redress of grievances, real or supposed, yet in my own person I had to meet the question whether I would take part against my native state. With all my devotion to the Union, and the feeling of loyalty and duty of an American citizen, I have not been able to make up my mind to raise my hand against my relatives, my children, and my home. I have therefore resigned my commission in the army, and save in the defense of my native state, I hope that my poor services will never be needed, and that I may never be called on to draw my sword."

It cost Lee a painful struggle to take this course. When he decided to cast his lot with Virginia, he did so from a conviction of duty. It was not until the second year of the war that he came into prominence as the leader of the southern armies.

Meanwhile, stirring events were taking place in western Virginia. Colonel Wallace, with a detachment of Indiana zouaves attacked, on the 11th of June, a body of confederates at Romney, in northwestern Virginia. Starting from Cumberland in Maryland, Colonel Wallace and his force marched thirty-three miles over a mountain road to

Romney. Most of the march was at night. They reached their destination at eight o'clock the next day. The confederate camp was on a bluff near the village, and was guarded by a battery of field pieces. By a brilliant dash the federals captured the battery, driving the defenders into the neighboring woods. Colonel Wallace, finding himself unable to pursue the insurgents, returned to Cumberland quite satisfied with his success.

In view of the great events that soon followed, this incident seems hardly worth mentioning, but it resulted in important changes. General Joseph E. Johnston, the confederate commander, became alarmed for his communications and evacuated Harper's Ferry, moving up the Shenandoah Valley to a point nearer Winchester.

Attention was now drawn to the operations of General George B. McClellan, who had been for some time in command of the military district including Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, and western Virginia. He was born in Philadelphia in 1826, and was a soldier by education. He graduated high in his class at West Point. He distinguished himself in the war with Mexico, and was breveted first-lieutenant and captain. While General McClellan was a thoroughly trained soldier, and one of the best engineers in the service of his country, he unfortunately had an inherent distrust of himself. This defect of his nature prevented his ever attaining enduring eminence.

With 15,000 soldiers, mainly from the western states, he advanced against the confederates in western Virginia, under General Garnett, a former instructor of McClellan at West Point. Garnett took up his position on Laurel Hill, west of the chief line of the Alleghenies, and covering the high road leading from Philippi to Beverly. He placed Colonel Pegram with a detachment upon an isolated hill named Rich Mountain, a few miles south of Laurel Hill.

McClellan advanced from the north against these positions, halting on the 11th of July, a short distance from Rich Mountain. The next morning four regiments, led by Colonel Rosecrans, took a circuitous path through the woods for the purpose of turning the position of Colonel Pegram. The rain fell in torrents, and the men were exposed to a heavy fire as they climbed the steep side of the mountain, but they pressed on and drove the confederates down the other side. Pushing eastward, Rosecrans arrived within three miles of Beverly, in which direction General Garnett had retreated from Laurel Hill on finding his position turned. Seeing his peril from the Union forces, Garnett turned northward in the hope of gaining St. George on the Cheat River.

Colonel Pegram had already surrendered with six hundred men, the rest joining General Garnett, who was hard pressed by General Morris. The confederates in their flight cut down trees and overturned large bowlders so as to impede the pursuit of the Union forces, who already found the pursuit difficult because of the swollen streams, dense woods and undergrowth; but they advanced with great energy, firing upon the rear guard whenever they caught sight of them.

McClellan had arranged to intercept the flying troops, but before that could be done, General Morris overtook them. On the 13th of July, he came up with the confederates at Garrick's Ford, on the Cheat River. The enemy were utterly routed, and General Garnett was shot dead while leading his troops. The remnants of his force

were taken in charge by Colonel Taliaferro, who succeeded at last in reaching Monterey on the eastern side of the Alleghenies.

McClellan's campaign in western Virginia was a brilliant success, and gave him unbounded popularity in the north. With the loss of less than fifty men he had routed the enemy, captured a thousand prisoners, seven guns, fifteen hundred stands of arms, and twelve colors. He issued a high-sounding address to his soldiers, congratulating them on their triumph, and expressing his belief that secession was dead in that section of the country. It was, but only for a time.

The war spirit in the North and South was intense. Men were hurrying into the ranks, clamoring to be led against each other, and the confidence of the leaders was unshaken. President Lincoln having summoned Congress to meet in extraordinary session, that body convened in Washington on the 4th of July. No such national anniversary had ever been known. The country was in the agony of a civil war, and though the majority believed it would soon end, the more thoughtful shuddered, for they knew the real struggle had not yet opened. Tens of thousands of lives and millions of property must be destroyed before the Union could be restored.

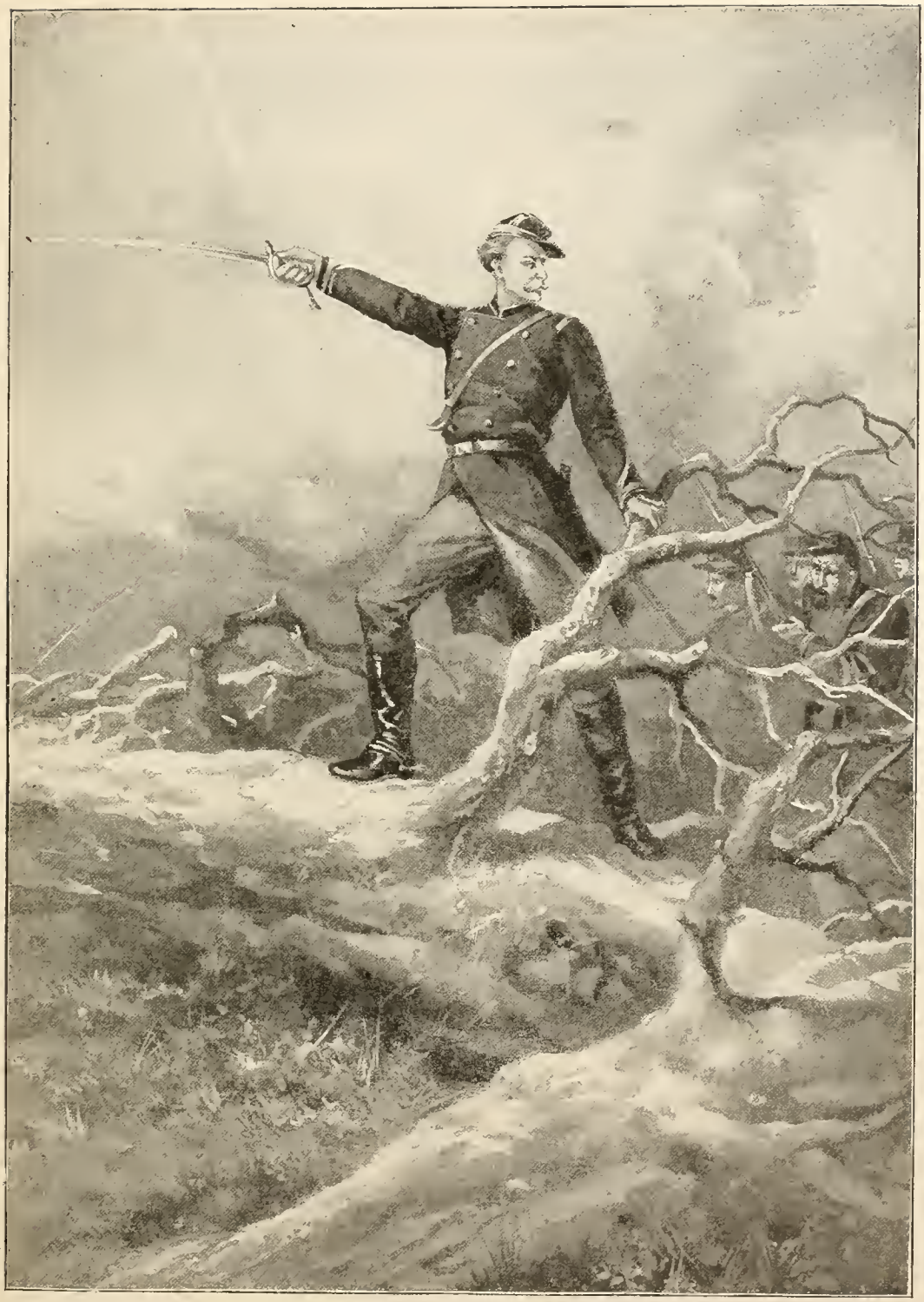
When the senators and representatives came together in Washington, there were many vacant chairs. Those who had formerly occupied them were in the South leading in the effort to destroy the Union, and the armed hosts were almost in sight of the national capital. The listening ear could catch the faint rattle of musketry and the boom of cannon. It was a time when every one was anxious and troubled.

President Lincoln in his message to Congress met the grave question, which, indeed could not be avoided: Can a constitutional republic or democracy maintain its territorial integrity against its own domestic foes? In other words, has a republic the power to defend its own life?

You have heard of the right of *habeas corpus*. If a person is arrested and thrown into prison, he has the right under the constitution to be brought before a judge who shall take steps to learn whether he has been properly arrested. If he has not, the judge will order him set free; if he deserves arrest, then he shall have a fair trial.

You can see how sacred this right should be held; for so long as it prevails it is a guarantee against any person being unjustly punished. It is a serious step to suspend this right, but you can understand that there may be times when the government is compelled to do so. It had already taken that step, and had been bitterly criticised. Chief justice Taney, of the supreme court, had ruled that the constitution and laws did not give the president the right to suspend the writ of *habeas corpus*, nor could he authorize any military officer to do so. The chief justice insisted that a military officer had no right to arrest and bring a man to trial for breaking any law against the United States. He might assist the civil officers in doing so, or should he arrest such party, it was his duty to turn him over, without delay, to the civil authorities for trial.

Other legal authorities disputed the declaration of Chief justice Taney, and President Lincoln insisted that the necessity of the times required the suspension of the right of *habeas corpus*. He asked the sharp question: "Are all the laws but one to go unexecuted, and the government itself to go to pieces lest that one be violated?" The presi-



COPYRIGHT, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

CAPTAIN WINTHROP AT BIG BETHEL. (*See page* 20.)

Drawn by Francis Christy.

dent, insisted, however, that the law had not been violated, for, quoting from the Constitution, "The privilege of the writ of *habeas corpus* shall not be suspended unless when, in cases of rebellion or invasion, the public safety may require it." Since a state of rebellion was then existing it should seem that the president was right.

He recommended that Congress should grant the legal means to make the war a short and decisive one, by placing at the disposal of the government at least 400,000 men and 400,000,000 dollars. Enormous as are those figures, the men required were only one-tenth of those liable to military service and all of whom seemed willing to engage, while the money was not one-twentieth of the wealth of the men who appeared ready to lay their all on the altar of the Union.

In fact, the enthusiasm of the North was such that the government found it hard to prevent the armed forces from swelling far beyond the number needed. It was computed that there were 230,000 troops in the field, from which 80,000 should be subtracted, that number having enlisted for three months, and their terms being nearly over. The regular army had been increased by a regiment of twelve companies of calvary, numbering 1,189 officers and men, a regiment of artillery of twelve batteries, each of six pieces, and numbering in all 1,909 officers and men; and nine regiments of infantry, each regiment containing three battalions, with a total of 2,452 officers and men.

Not only was it necessary to summon an immense army to meet the hosts of the South, but a vast fleet was necessary to make the blockade of the southern ports effective. To guard the line of sea-coast from Virginia to Mexico required hundreds of vessels. Besides this, the confederates were fitting out fast vessels to prey upon northern commerce, and these must be pursued, and, if possible, captured.

There were a few members of Congress who did all they could to cripple the measures proposed for carrying on the war for the union; but an overwhelming majority stood by the government. The bill authorizing the government to borrow $250,000,000 passed Congress by a vote of 150 to 5. Three of these five joined the confederates after the close of the session: they were simply late in going where they belonged.

An appropriation bill, and a bill authorizing a call for half a million volunteers passed the house, and the senate promptly endorsed them. While expressing themselves ready to grant all the legitimate demands of the South, congress declared in the most emphatic manner that the Union must be maintained at all hazards.

Meanwhile, the confederate authorities were fully as active as those of the national government. They had able leaders, both in civil and military affairs, and they were courageous, ardent and hopeful. Their congress passed an enlistment act without any limit as to time, and it was estimated that arms for one hundred and fifty thousand men could be provided in the Confederacy. On the 16th of May, an act was approved, authorizing the issue of 50,000,000 dollars in bonds at an annual interest not to exceed eight per cent., and payable in twenty years. By the same act the secretary of the treasury was given discretionary power to issue in lieu of such bonds, 20,000,000 dollars in treasury notes not bearing interest, in denominations of not less than five dollars, to be receivable in payment of all debts or taxes due to the Confederacy, except the export duty on cotton, or in exchange for the bonds then authorized to be issued. The Confederacy, from

the first, was hard pushed for money. Great ingenuity and much self-sacrifice were shown, but paper promises to pay must always be worthless so long as the power which issues them has not the ability to fulfill its pledges. The confederate notes rapidly depreciated, until in time, they became worth only their value as paper.

By this time, too, the confederate privateers were at work. At the time Congress was in extraordinary session in Washington, twenty armed cruisers were scouring the seas and had already destroyed millions of dollars' worth of northern shipping. I am sorry to say that England, which for so many years had prided herself on her success in breaking up the slave trade, showed an active sympathy for the Confederacy, whose corner-stone was African slavery. The aristocracy, no doubt, were jealous of the vigorous young republic that had gained her independence of Great Britain nearly a hundred years before, and they did a great deal to help the confederate privateers. Indeed, they did so much that, after the close of the war, England was compelled to pay us a good round sum for her aid in the effort to destroy the Union. We shall learn more about that in the proper place.

The most noted of the first confederate privateers were the *Savannah* and *Petrel*, but their career was short. The *Savannah* was captured by the *Perry*, on the 3d of June, and the *Petrel* was sunk by the *St. Lawrence* on the 28th of July. In a proclamation issued by President Lincoln on the 19th of April, he had declared his intention of treating all captured confederate privateers as if they were actual pirates,—that is, he would hang them. Jefferson Davis wrote to him, threatening to hang an equal number of federal prisoners if the crews of the privateers were put to death. This checked the national authorities, and after a time, the privateers were exchanged as prisoners of war. There had already been such exchanges made on the part of the land forces, and it might well be insisted that no distinction should be made.

You remember that Montgomery, Alabama, was the first capital of the Confederacy. Its congress met there for the last time on the 21st of May, when it adjourned to meet on the 20th of July in Richmond, Virginia. This would bring the two hostile congresses close to each other. Howell Cobb said that the reason Richmond was to be made the confederate capital was because Virginia was to be the battle-ground of the armies, and her soil was to be dyed with southern blood. You can understand, however, that Virginia was the most important of the slave states, and the best adapted, therefore, for forming the center of the new system.

Jefferson Davis left Montgomery for Richmond on the 26th of May, 1861. The enthusiastic war feeling which he witnessed on the way showed that he had the full support of the southern people. General Beauregard arrived in Richmond on the 1st of June, and took command of the confederate troops in the department of Alexandria.

The adjournment of the confederate congress to Richmond was such a defiance of the national authorities that the North was exasperated. The cry "On to Richmond," was echoed by thousands. The *New York Tribune* kept the words at the head of its editorial columns for weeks, and declared that the rebel congress should not be allowed to meet there. The northerners became impatient, and demanded in such loud tones to be led against the confederates that the government could not shut its ears.

There was unbounded confidence in the North as well as throughout the South. It looked as if the self-assurance of the North was warranted. In the early part of July, the line of the Potomac was held from its mouth up to Cumberland, in Maryland. The sea-coast in the vicinity was blockaded by armed vessels, and the Virginia bank of the

GENERAL ROBERT EDMUND LEE.

river was closely watched. The confederates, however, had been able to erect a few batteries.

The Union army under General Irvin McDowell numbered about 45,000 men. It was in camp across the Potomac where the recruits were drilled under the eye of General Scott.

The chief confederate army was under Beauregard, and was stationed near Manassas Junction, a strong military position about thirty miles from Washington and connected

NIGHT MARCH ON HARPER'S FERRY.

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

with Richmond by rail. The confederate forces were perhaps less numerous than those of McDowell.

The natural strength of Manassas was great. All around were wooded hills and streams, and Beauregard had thrown up a number of fortifications. One of these was a naval battery of heavy Dahlgren guns taken by the confederates from the Gosport navy-yard and manned by seamen.

A second confederate army was in the Shenandoah Valley under General Joseph E. Johnston. I must refer to one singular fact about this general, one of the ablest of the Confederacy. It seemed to have been his misfortune, that in nearly every engagement in which he took part he was wounded. He was badly hurt in the Seminole war, and was twice wounded in Mexico—once it was thought mortally. At this writing, however, he is alive and in vigorous health.

General Johnston was strongly intrenched in Winchester. It was his task to check any advance by General Robert Patterson and to prevent his junction with McClellan. Thus, as you will see, the Union and confederates armies confronted each other and the shock of arms could not long be delayed.

The army under General McDowell numbered about 30,000 men, of whom less than 1,000 were regulars. Many of the Union soldiers had enlisted for three months and their terms were nearly over. General Scott assured McDowell that Patterson with his 18,000 men would hold Johnston in check or attack him. McDowell, therefore, planned a forward movement against the confederates at Manassas.

General Scott was still the commander-in-chief of the army, but he was old and broken in health. For three years he had been unable to mount a horse, and he suffered greatly from dropsy and vertigo. As it was impossible for him to take the field in person, the active direction of the troops was given to Brigadier-general McDowell, who, since the 27th of May, had held command of the department of Virginia, and who had done his utmost to organize and discipline the army. The soldiers were not yet so efficient as he desired, but the demand of the North that an advance should be made against the confederates could not be unheeded.

The plan of McDowell was to march to Fairfax Court House, there to turn southward and crossing Occoquan River, to attack Beauregard's line of communication.

CHAPTER III.

EVENTS OF 1861. THE FIRST SHOCK OF ARMS.

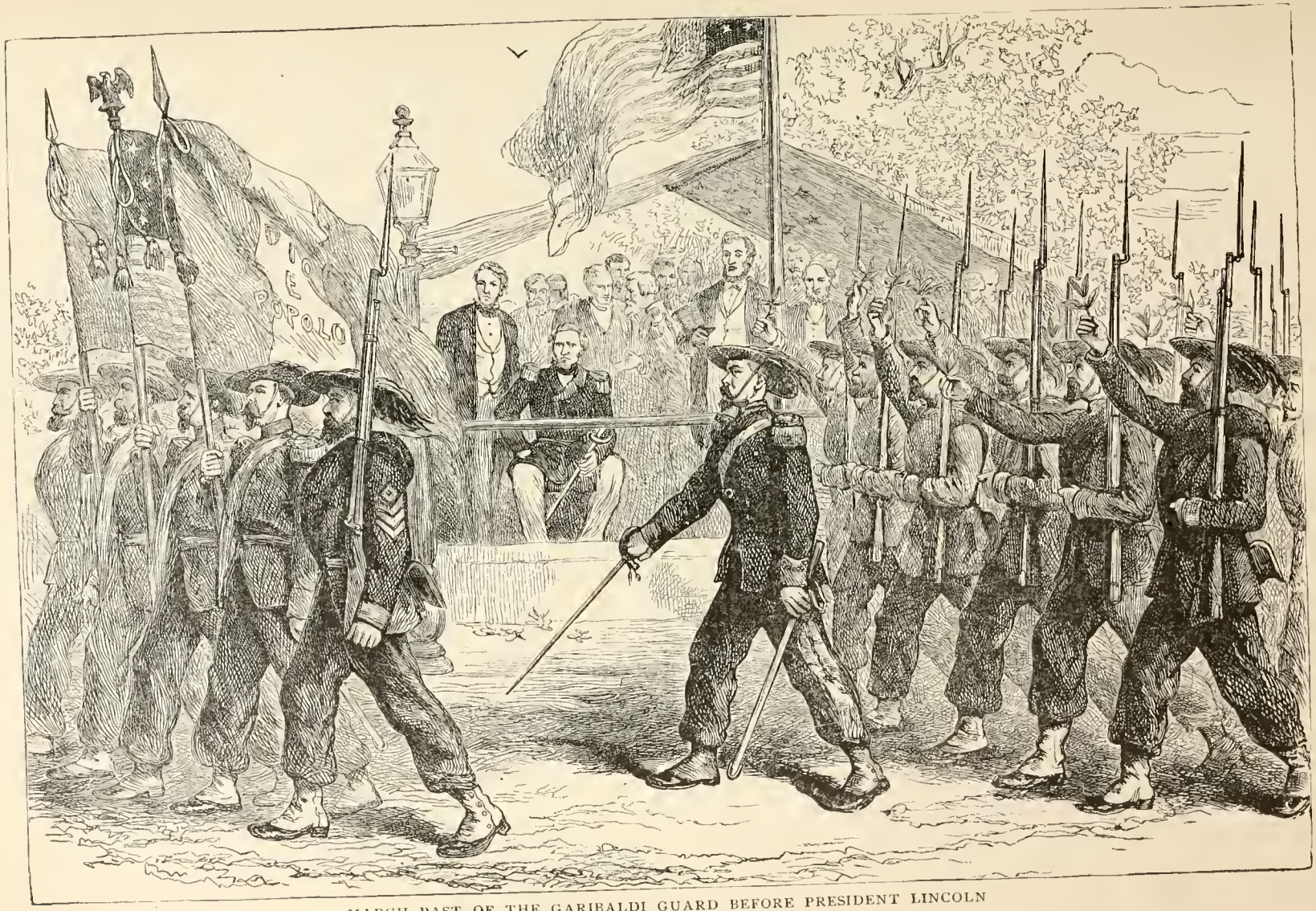
ON the warm, sunshiny afternoon of July 16, 1861, the Union army started on its march to Richmond. The news was flashed through the North that at last the army was on the move with its face toward the confederate capital. Excitement was intense and crowds swarmed around the telegraph offices to learn the news that every one knew must be of the highest importance.

You will be surprised to learn how blind was the confidence of the North in a coming victory. It seemed impossible that there should be a reverse. Crowds of congressmen and other civilians went out from Washington to witness the overthrow of the insurgent forces. Among them were many ladies who, from elevated positions, watched the sight through their opera glasses, and were delighted to think that they were allowed such a novel entertainment.

Sixteen thousand men under General Mansfield stayed in Washington to guard the capital against surprise, while four other divisions to the number of about 50,000 and under the respective commands of generals Tyler, Hunter, Heintzelman and Miles marched over four roads all converging near Centreville. General Tyler began his march at two in the afternoon, the remaining divisions following at eight the next morning. Reaching Fairfax Court House, it was found deserted, and they pressed on to Centreville.

The confederates, as you have learned, were posted at Manassas, along Bull Run, which is a small stream rising in a chain of hills to the west of Alexandria and emptying into the Occoquan about twelve miles from the Potomac. Beauregard's lines extended more than five miles, along the southern bank from Sudley Spring to Union Mills, where the Orange and the Alexandria railway crosses. Within this distance are eight fords and a stone bridge at which point the Warrenton turnpike crosses the stream. The banks of the stream are steep and rocky, and the irregular surface of the surrounding country, with its dense wood and undergrowth, offers the best chances for defense. The confederate reserves were at Camp Pickens, near Manassas Junction, and near by were the head-quarters of Beauregard. An outpost with fortifications at Centreville defended that part of the line. Johnston's division to the left of the other confederates strengthened the line of battle.

A reconnoissance showed McDowell that the character of the ground would not permit him to turn the right flank of the enemy as he had hoped to do. On the morning of the 18th it was found that the confederates had evacuated Centreville, which they had fortified only a short time before. They had posted themselves on the southern bank of



MARCH PAST OF THE GARIBALDI GUARD BEFORE PRESIDENT LINCOLN

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

Bull Run. General Tyler, commanding the First Federal Division, decided to assail them at once. The point of attack was at Blackburn's Ford, between the Warrenton Road and the Richmond and Alexandria railway. Tyler did not try to cross the stream, but opened fire with his heavy guns at a distance of a mile and a half, afterward venturing closer. The confederates replied briskly, and after awhile the unionists withdrew. The confederates crossed at Mitchell's Ford, and, taking a position on the high ground east

COPYRIGHTED, 1884, BY NOTMAN PHOTO CO.

FARRAGUT SHERMAN THOMAS MEADE LINCOLN GRANT HOOKER SHERIDAN HANCOCK

UNION COMMANDERS.

of the road to Centreville, poured a heavy fire into the retreating unionists. You should understand that General Tyler did not mean to bring on a general battle, but intended a reconnoissance, which being completed, he fell back.

It being evident that the confederate position was too strong to be assailed in front, it was decided to move against the left flank. The divisions of Hunter and Heintzelman were to march up stream, cross at Sudley Ford, and, passing down on the right bank,

uncover the other crossings. Then the remaining divisions would cross, and a combined assault would be made.

It required a couple of days to move the inexperienced troops with their luggage and supplies. The time thus occupied was beyond value to the confederates. Johnston having no further fear of Patterson, left Winchester, and, on the morning of the 20th of July, joined Beauregard with 6,000 men and twenty guns, the rest of his force following him. Other troops were hurried forward from Richmond until the confederates felt safe against any attack that could be made by the unionists.

Observe the strength of the confederate position. The left was on the Centreville and Warrenton road, a short distance above the bridge over which that turnpike crosses Bull Run; the right was at Union Mill Ford, some eight or nine miles further down the stream, near the railway to which I have already referred. In front was Bull Run with its high and rocky banks; behind them were dense woods in which thousands of marksmen could be hidden, while firing upon an advancing force. The face of the country was uneven, and in many places very rugged. There were numerous gorges where a small force could hold a much larger one at bay.

General Johnston, by right of seniority, was entitled to command the confederate army, but he was so well pleased with the preparations of Beauregard and the disposition he had made of his forces that he volunteered to serve under his orders. On the morning of Sunday, July 21, the confederates were drawn up in three lines, watching the eight fords over which they expected the unionists to come.

On Saturday evening, McDowell's plan of attack was made known to the division commanders. The purpose, as you have been told, was to turn the confederate left, and destroy the railway leading to the Shenandoah Valley, so as to head off the remainder of Johnston's army. The men were served with three days' rations and instructed how to proceed.

Long before daylight on the hot Sunday morning, the union army was astir, but the forenoon was half gone before the army was fairly started. Tyler's division followed the main road to the stone bridge, while Hunter and Heintzelman turned to the right and crossed the stream at Sudley Ford. This was between nine and ten o'clock.

Colonel Evans, holding the extreme confederate left, had become suspicious, and marched up stream with half a brigade, with which he confronted the union advance while the turning column was beyond the turnpike. Instead of overwhelming this small force, McDowell sent detached regiments and brigades against it. Colonel Evans was thus enabled to hold his ground until heavily re-enforced, when he took a stronger position a short distance back. Hunter, re-enforced also, pressed Evans so hard that generals Beauregard and Johnston hurriedly rode toward the scene of conflict to direct the movements of the troops. They ordered up all the reserves and formed a new line of battle, with six thousand five hundred men, two companies of cavalry and thirteen guns.

McDowell was trying to work around to the confederate left, and hard fighting took place on an elevated plateau partly covered by pine woods and crossed by water courses. The confederates were repeatedly driven down the eastern slope, and though they did

BULL RUN—STAND OF THE UNION TROOPS AT THE HENRY HOUSE. 3 P. M.

much execution with their field-pieces, when noon came they had lost considerable ground.

At one time, when the federals were making a charge, the confederate General Bee exclaimed to General T. J. Jackson, "They are driving us back!" "Well, then," replied Jackson, "we will give them the bayonet." Bee turned to his men and tried to rally them. "Form! form!" he shouted: "there stands Jackson like a stone wall!"

In this way, the famous confederate leader gained the name of "Stonewall Jackson," by which he will always be known. He sent a regiment to take the federal battery that was doing such execution in his ranks. The cannoneers mistook the confederates for a New York regiment coming to their support, and before they could recover from their mistake, the battery was gone. Re-enforcements speedily came up, however, and retook it.

Near the center, the federal brigade under Colonel Richardson opened fire against generals Jones and Longstreet at Blackburn's Ford, with a view of preventing them from re-enforcing the confederate left, where, as you will recall, the unionists were pushing hard. Longstreet, under orders from Beauregard, crossed the stream and assailed the federals, thus preventing them from joining in the fight on the left. The confederate right and federal left were scarcely engaged at all.

Although the fierce fighting at the center was for a time without any marked success on either side, it was on the whole favorable to the unionists. Colonel Cameron, brother of the secretary of war, was killed at the head of a Scotch New York regiment, and Colonel Corcoran, of the New York Irish Sixty-ninth, was taken prisoner. On the confederate side a number of officers had fallen. Jackson and Beauregard were slightly wounded, but would not leave the field.

General Johnston was alarmed. He was at Lewis House, anxiously scanning the country in every direction. He surveyed so far as he could the struggling legions, received reports, sent out orders, and looked longingly toward the south for the re-enforcements that did not come.

"Oh, for four regiments!" he is said to have exclaimed, more than once, as he realized how closely the contending armies were matched, and saw that his own was slowly yielding.

Three o'clock came and passed, and gazing once more toward the Manassas Gap railway, he saw a vast cloud of dust rolling upward. At first he thought it was made by federal re-enforcements, but soon learned that they were four thousand confederates under General E. Kirby Smith. They had come by rail from the Shenandoah Valley. Hearing the sound of cannon that told of the battle, Smith stopped the train and marched hurriedly across the country to the battlefield. As soon as the troops came within sound of Johnston's voice, he ordered them to attack McDowell's right. Another brigade was also directed to join in the attack. Still other bodies of southern troops rushed forward to the help of Beauregard, who was fighting with such great desperation, and who now found himself with more men than the unionists, and of whom a large number were fresh and enthusiastic. He had directed an advance of the whole line,

and was sure of victory. The re-enforcements were placed in position to the left of the confederate line, and swept like a cyclone against the exhausted federals.

The latter were flanked and driven down the other side of the plateau. Sharp-shooters opened fire from the woods, so that the unionists were not only outnumbered but were assailed from three sides. A part of General Stuart's cavalry joined the confederates in their charge, and the federals fled in wild panic.

The flight of the army to Washington was marked by scenes that are beyond description. When an army is seized with panic, every one is frenzied by the one thought of how to escape death. It was between four and five in the afternoon that the right wing broke and fled, soon followed by the center and left. Artillery, infantry, trains, ambulances, members of Congress, civilians, ladies, all in hopeless confusion, made frantic haste to reach Washington. Teamsters and artillerymen cut the traces of their horses, and leaping upon their backs, lashed them into a dead run. Shrieking for those in front to get out of the way, they gave them no time to do so, but trampled them under the hoofs of their animals; terrified fugitives ran panting in front of the cannon that were bounding along behind the running horses, until, exhausted, they fell to the earth and were crushed by the ponderous wheels. Soldiers, white with terror, fled till they dropped, exhausted, by the road side; men and boys that had clambered into the tree-tops to watch the battle, caught sight of the wild masses, and scrambling down joined them: it was a mob in the very extremity of mortal fear. Soldiers threw away guns, knapsacks, rations, every thing that impeded their flight. Hundreds of the wounded lay gasping and dying in the hot sun in the fields, and along the roads between the battle-ground and Centreville. The piteous, moaning roar made up of the many cries of agony, rage and terror, could be heard through the clouds of suffocating dust that marked the flight of the federals.

Early on the morning of the 22d, the fugitives swarmed into Washington. Such was their terror that many did not believe they were safe even there; they ran on into the country beyond; hundreds flocked to the railway station and crowded the trains until a strong guard was sent to force them back; wounded men lay on the pavements cursing the government; the drinking saloons were crowded with officers and soldiers, and one of the worst features was that many showed a morbid pleasure in dwelling on the particulars of the panic, and in magnifying it beyond all truth. Scores of these officers declared that Washington itself would be captured within a week, and that the whole country was going to destruction.

And why was not Washington taken by the confederates? This is the question that has been asked many times. Beauregard and Johnston were bitterly blamed for not doing so, and there can be no doubt that such a golden opportunity could never again come to the Confederacy. The victorious army, if well handled, could have destroyed the union army, and marched almost unopposed into Washington. And then, in the possession of the capital of the nation, the Confederacy would have been acknowledged by all the civilized powers, and its independence secured by the first blow struck.

The generals named have since explained why they did not continue the pursuit. Beyond a doubt they did not know how panic-stricken the unionists were. At the

THE UNION ADVANCE AT BULL RUN.

beginning of the rout, Colonel Radford and Lieutenant-colonel Munford, with six companies of Virginia cavalry (including the famous Black Horse cavalry, which were afterward cut to pieces), were sent in pursuit, the army intending to follow. At this juncture news was brought to Beauregard that the unionists were threatening his position at Union Mills. The pursuit was stopped, though the Black Horse cavalry continued for some hours to cut down the scattered fugitives.

We must all feel sympathy for General McDowell. He was an educated officer of considerable ability, who did the best he could, but knew that his undisciplined men could not be depended upon. They required careful handling, and he was apprehensive from the first. When he saw their utter rout, he rode off to Centreville and ordered General Blenker's German brigade to support and rally the flying troops, while colonels Davies and Richardson were directed to cover Centreville. The Germans were accustomed to bear arms (for you know that in Germany all the able-bodied males must receive a military training), and were always reliable.

Johnston had ordered Ewell to cross Bull Run with a strong force and attack Centreville, but the reception of Ewell was so hot that his men were thrown into disorder and compelled to retreat. By sunset most of the union army had reached the further side of the Centreville ridge. Great as was the panic, it did not spread through the entire army. Blenker's brigade, the regulars, and most of the reserves at Centreville kept their military form, though they had been marching and fighting for more than twenty-four hours in the hot sun. They did invaluable service in covering the flight of the disorganized masses, and in checking the pursuit.

The loss of the unionists in this first real battle of the war was 2,952, including 1,460 missing, most of whom were taken prisoners. General Johnston gave his losses as 1,897.

The whole North was thrown into consternation by the first battle of Bull Run. The confidence in an overwhelming victory was so general that at first all were stunned. But the first shock of arms between the sections had resulted in a complete victory for the confederates. You can imagine the elation throughout the Confederacy. The southerners were now sure that their independence would come within a few weeks at the furthest. So confident indeed were they, that directly after the battle of Bull Run a number of exuberant young men arranged to hold a ball in Washington and distributed tickets of invitation among their friends.

Now, after reading the account of this affair, you will conclude that it was a disaster in every sense to the friends of the Union; but it proved to be the best thing that could have happened. It destroyed at once and forever the blind confidence which up to that hour had prevailed through the North. It was seen that the South was strong, and would fight with a valor that could not be surpassed. It would take months and years of the hardest kind of fighting with immense armies to subdue them. For the first time the northern people understood the work before them, and they resolved that the war for the Union should be waged at whatever cost.

On the day after the battle General McClellan was called to Washington and assigned to the command of the department of the Potomac. He assumed command on the 20th of August, and set about re-organizing the splendid force at his command. No

man in America ever had a more magnificent chance than McClellan to acquire not only the gratitude and admiration of the entire country, but a glory that should last through all time. That he did not do so was due to the inherent defect of his nature—a fear to take chances—an excessive caution the very opposite of the dash and audacity that made the First Napoleon immortal.

It can not be disputed that the re-organization and discipline of the union army were necessary, but as the weeks and months wore on, and the army of the Potomac continued to drill and drill without making any movement against the enemy, the North began once more to feel impatient, and the popularity of McClellan waned. He was loved by the army and by many civilians. Indeed the soldiers have always held "Little Mac" in the highest veneration, and I have already said that no one can deny his great ability, and his spotless character; he lacked but the one requirement of a first-class military leader—daring, and faith in himself. But McClellan did invaluable work in re-organizing and drilling the army of the Potomac.

One important truth forced home upon the authorities was that because a man was a politician it did not follow that he was a military genius, fitted to lead brave men in battle. In those days it looked as if epaulets were everywhere. Lieutenants, captains, majors, and colonels were on parade continually. One of the jokes of the times was that a man in Washington one day threw a stone at a dog and struck three brigadier-generals: it was added that there were fewer officers than usual on the street.

Congress passed a bill authorizing the president to dispense with the services of inefficient officers, and requiring a qualifying examination before any one was appointed to a post of command. Thus it came about that in the space of eight months three hundred and ten officers were dismissed the service—a needed and most beneficial reform.

You will recall that General Butler was stationed at Fortress Monroe, where he was able to guard the entrance to Chesapeake Bay, and to place some check on the surrounding country. He was weakened after the battle of Bull Run by the withdrawal of a large part of his army for the defense of Washington, believed to be in danger of capture by the confederates. General Wool succeeded Butler on the 13th of August as commandant at Fortress Monroe. He organized a naval expedition, which left that place on the 26th of the month for the coast of North Carolina. The purpose was either to occupy or destroy the forts commanding the inlets to Pamlico and Albemarle sounds, and especially to block up the narrow winding channels through which the blockade-runners and confederate privateers made their way.

The expedition arrived off Hatteras Inlet on the 27th. The confederates had removed the buoys, and erected two forts which commanded the winding channels. These forts were built of sand, turfed over, and they mounted fifteen guns. Operations were opened on the morning of the 28th, when some troops were landed under protection of a heavy fire from the ships. A high wind and violent sea stove in several of the boats, and interfered with the landing. The forts were shelled until the garrison of the smaller one escaped to Fort Hatteras. On the morning of the 29th, the confederates surrendered to Commodore Stringham. This was an important capture, as it gave the union forces a foothold in North Carolina.

The confederate authorities decided to attempt the reconquest of Virginia. John B. Floyd (formerly Buchanan's secretary of war, and now a general in the southern armies), was ordered to re-enforce General Wise at Lewisburg, on the Greenbrier River. At the same time, General Robert E. Lee was appointed to the command of the remnants of Garnett's army that had been routed at Rich Mountain and Carrick's Ford, and since gathered at Monterey. Floyd intended to secure the Kanawha Valley and the country to the north. During the latter part of August he advanced by the Lewisburg and Charleston roads. General Cox, with the chief body of federals, was near the junction of the Gauley and the Kanawha. Floyd left Wise to watch Cox while he himself pushed on to attack Colonel Tyler at Carnifex Ferry. Tyler withdrew across the stream as Floyd advanced, and the latter was hindered by the absence of boats. Able finally to cross, he intrenched himself on the right bank of the Gauley at Carnifex Ferry. Floyd now fixed upon a plan for getting to the rear of Cox, so as to cut him off from his base of operations on the Ohio. Before this could be done, Rosecrans marched to the relief of Cox. On the night of September 9, he encamped near Sutton, eighteen miles from Carnifex Ferry, and the next day was opposite the intrenchments of Floyd. A battle opened which lasted until dusk. Rosecrans expected to resume it at daylight, but Floyd retreated during the night. Rosecrans pursued, and finally Wise established an intrenched camp on Sewell's Mountain, while Floyd did not stop until he reached Meadow Bluff on the road to Lewisburg. At this point General Lee united his forces with those of Floyd and Wise, and Rosecrans withdrew to the Gauley.

In the month of October, the North was shocked by an occurrence more disgraceful in some respects than that of Bull Run. On the 19th of that month, General McCall was ordered to occupy Drainesville, eighteen miles northwest of Washington. Brigadier-general Stone, being directed to keep watch on Leesburg, proceeded to Edward's Ferry, on the Potomac. On the night of the 20th, some patrols believed they had discovered a small confederate camp near Leesburg, and it was decided to make an advance in force. The confederate commander in that section was Colonel Evans, who took a leading part at Bull Run. Learning of the union advance, he hastily concentrated his forces on the road from Leesburg to Washington, and on the morning of the 21st was in excellent position to repel attack.

The federals were ferried over the river in three scows, a life-boat and two skiffs, all of which would not carry over one-fourth of the force at the same time. No confederate camp was found at Leesburg, but the confederates in the woods attacked the unionists. Colonel E. D. Baker, of California, an intimate personal friend of President Lincoln, crossed the river with a supporting column of 1,900 men, and took command. The confederates were also re-enforced, and the unionists driven back. Colonel Baker was shot dead, and the federals fled for the Potomac, with the confederates at their heels. Over the bluffs they leaped, and scrambled into the boats, crowding three of them so that they sank. The panic-stricken soldiers sprang into the river and swam for their lives. The confederates bayoneted and shot all they could reach or who did not surrender. The union loss was more than a thousand men.

GUARDING A BRIDGE OVER THE POTOMAC.

CHAPTER IV.

EVENTS OF 1861. THE WAR IN THE WEST AND SOUTH.

YOU will remember that when Fort Sumter was fired on President Lincoln called upon the governors of the different states not in rebellion to help him suppress the insurrection. I told you how various were the answers to his request. At that time Claiborne F. Jackson was governor of Missouri. I have quoted from his reply: "Your requisition is illegal, unconstitutional, revolutionary, inhuman, diabolical, and can not be complied with."

After reading this, you need not be told that Governor Jackson was an ardent secessionist, and was resolved to use every effort to take Missouri out the Union. But that state, like Kentucky and Tennessee, was divided in its sentiments. The majority in Missouri were unionists, which fact did not lessen the resolution of Jackson to secure its withdrawal.

St. Louis, the principal city, was strongly secession in sentiment. On the 6th of May, the police commissioners demanded of Captain Lyon that he remove his troops from all places in and about the city, except the arsenal, of which he was commandant. Lyon called upon the home-guard, who were mostly loyal Germans, and arming them, marched out to the confederate camp, and captured more than a thousand prisoners. On the return of the troops to the city they were set upon by a mob. The soldiers opened upon them in turn, and killed and wounded twenty-two. For Lyon's promptness and energy in this matter, he was made a brigadier-general of volunteers, and given command of all the federal forces in Missouri. He thereby superseded General William S. Harney, who was altogether too timid in his dealings with the enemies of the Union.

Governor Jackson issued a proclamation, calling out 50,000 of the state militia to repel the invasion (as he termed it) of Missouri by United States troops. Sterling Price, a major-general of the state forces, was ordered to Booneville and Lexington, on the Missouri River. On the 14th of June, Governor Jackson withdrew with the force under Price; and Lyon, with 2,000 men, followed and dispersed them.

Meanwhile, Colonel Franz Sigel (a German who in 1848–9 commanded the insurrectionary troops of the Grand Duchy of Baden), with 1,100 men, engaged generals Rains and Parsons near Carthage, in the southwestern part of the state. The confederate force was superior in numbers, and Sigel was compelled to fall back. He conducted his retreat with admirable skill, drew the enemy into a narrow pass, and then poured upon them a destructive fire of canister. Reaching the cover of the woods, he continued his retreat to Springfield. His loss was only thirteen killed and thirty-one wounded, while the confederates lost 200 killed or wounded, and 250 prisoners.

Lyon pushed southward and joined Sigel near Springfield, where they confronted a large force under General Benjamin McCulloch, the Texan ranger, who was commander of the confederate army in Arkansas. Although re-enforced by General Price, he retreated in a westerly direction to Cowskin Prairie, on the Indian frontier.

By August, both sides were largely re-enforced, the federals being under the command of General John C. Fremont. He was known as the "American Pathfinder." He had been appointed a major-general in the United States army, and assigned to the department of the West, including Kentucky, Illinois, Missouri and Kansas. He reached St. Louis four days after the battle of Bull Run, and found a gloomy outlook for the friends of the Union. His command covered a vast extent of territory. He had as his chief subordinates General Pope in the north and General Lyon in the south. Missouri was placed under martial law, and the utmost precautions taken to prevent the confederates from seizing the railways.

The government of Missouri had already passed into loyal hands. The state convention re-assembled at Jefferson City on the 22d of July. Governor Jackson was deposed, and Hamilton R. Gamble, a strong Union man, was elected in his place. Governor Jackson, of course, did not recognize this action, and the congress at Richmond accepted Missouri as a member of the Confederacy. On the 5th of August, Jackson issued a proclamation, declaring that Missouri was no longer a member of the federal Union.

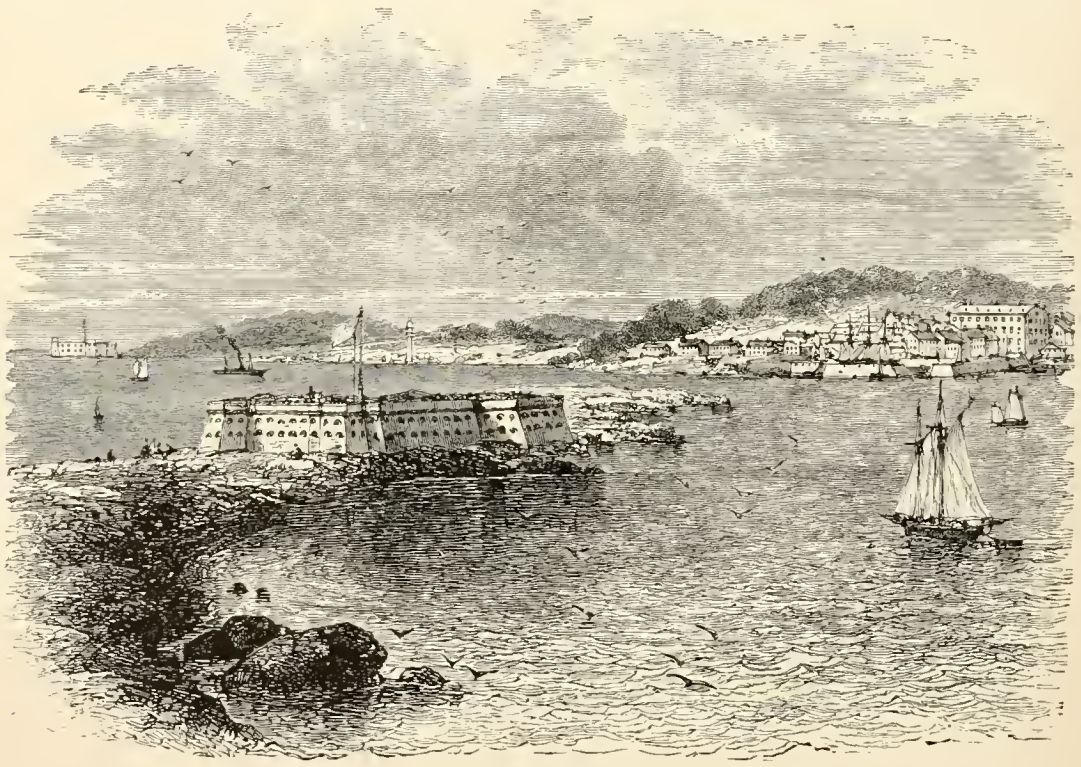
I must tell you of a step taken by Fremont at this time, which caused a great sensation. The proclamation placing Missouri under martial law was issued on the last day in August. In it, Fremont declared that the slaves of those who took part against the Union were free. This was in effect an emancipation proclamation. President Lincoln was a wise and far-seeing statesman, and he felt that the time had not yet come for taking such a momentous step. He wrote a letter to Fremont, criticising several points in his proclamation, and asked him to modify that part relating to the slaves. Fremont declined to do so, but suggested that the president do it—which he did.

The confederates advanced against the federals during the first week in August. Their three columns were led by generals McCulloch, Price and Pierce, and, it is said, numbered 3,500 infantry, 6,000 cavalry, and 15 pieces of artillery. It will thus be seen that the army was formidable in numbers, but it was badly equipped and poorly disciplined. Although the force of General Lyon was inferior, being less than 7,000, he had sixteen pieces of artillery, and was so confident that he left Springfield on the evening of the 9th of August to meet the approaching confederates. His army marched in two columns, one under the command of Sigel, the other led by himself. A severe storm had checked the confederates, who were in camp at Wilson's Creek.

Before daylight, the advance guard of the first federal column attacked the enemy. The ground was wooded and hilly and the battle that followed was without strategy or military skill; it was more like the fighting of a huge mob. The advantage at first was on the side of the federals, but the rugged nature of the ground embarrassed them. General Lyon was wounded early in the engagement, but he refused to leave the field, and putting himself at the head of the First Iowa Regiment, which was brought up to

repel a flank movement, he was galloping forward, swinging his hat and calling on his men, when he was shot through the heart.

Meanwhile Sigel's column was doing well, but an unfortunate mistake brought disaster. Between eight and nine in the morning, the skirmishers reported that General Lyon's forces were advancing by an adjacent road. Sigel directed his men not to fire, but to wave the union flag as a signal. A strong body appeared and at once opened with its batteries, spreading consternation and death in Sigel's ranks. Sigel saw that the new comers were McCulloch's rangers, but his own troops believed they were friends who were firing upon them through mistake, as was the case at Big Bethel.

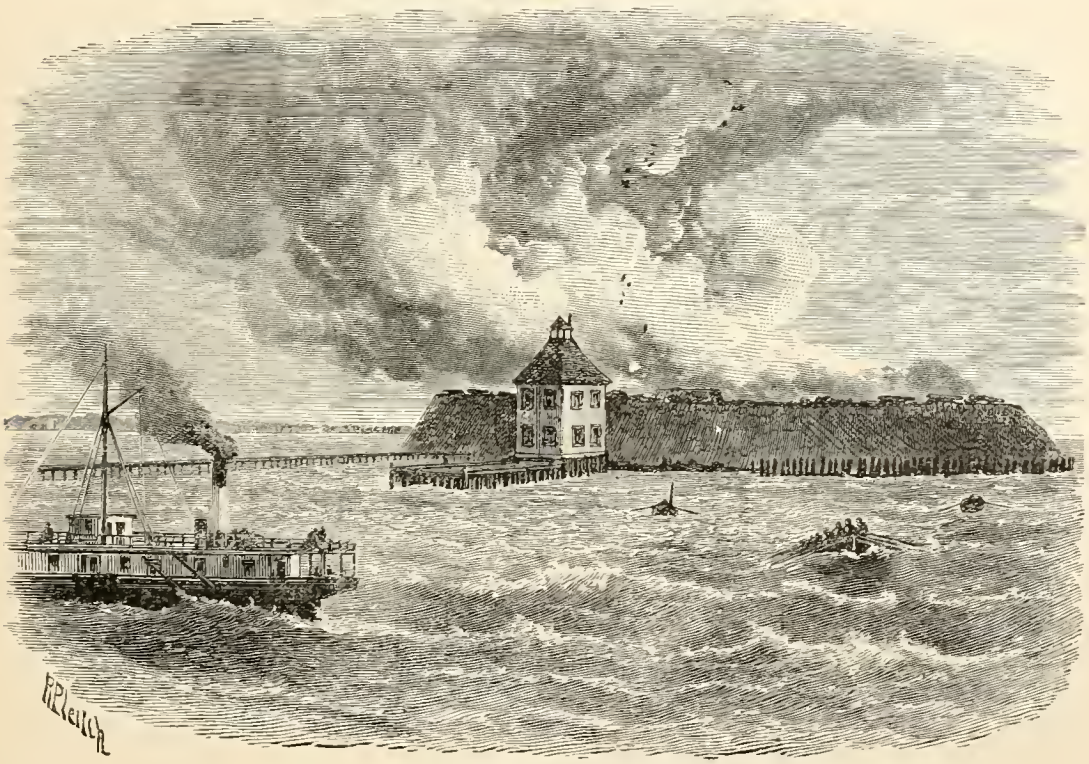


FORT PENSACOLA.

When the truth was learned it was too late and the federals scattered to the bushes and woods, followed and assailed by the Arkansas and Texas cavalry. The blow was too crushing for the unionists to rally. Their total loss in killed, wounded and missing was more than eight hundred. The battle of Wilson's Creek was the severest that had yet been fought in the West.

The federals fell back toward Springfield, which was afterward evacuated, the regiments under the command of Major Sturgis reaching Rolla in the course of a week. They were thus on a railway by which they could readily fall back on St. Louis, their base of operations, should it become necessary. The confederates did not attempt pursuit. General McCulloch withdrew to the Arkansas frontier, and General Price at the head of the state forces was left to look after confederate interests in Missouri.

He did so with energy and effect. The distracted state was overrun by guerrilla bands, and, with a view of giving them help, Price determined to make a demonstration against the federals. He set out with over four thousand men, including seven pieces of artillery, and, sending a detachment to protect his left flank and to seize Fort Scott, he advanced against Warrensburg. This was on the 10th of September. At Warrensburg, he learned that the federals were marching from Lexington toward that point, with a view of making several arrests and of capturing the money in the Warrensburg bank. Price hurried after the federals, who retreated to Lexington. The unionists in that town marshaled under Colonel Mulligan and hastily threw up intrench-



DESTRUCTION OF FORT OCRACOKE.

ments. Having secured re-enforcements, Price summoned Mulligan to surrender, but received a defiant refusal.

The little force under Mulligan was soon invested on all sides, except the north, or toward the river. The unionists fought with desperate bravery, but they were at the mercy of their assailants, and were soon compelled to surrender.

Price now turned southward, and on the 16th of October, Lexington was retaken by the federals, Fremont occupying Springfield. The Missouri legislature, sitting at Neosho, passed an order of secession, though the greater part of the state remained in the possession of the federals. In that section it was brother against brother, Missouri regiments being found on both sides. In many places the people were exposed to "jayhawkers," who plundered federals and confederates alike.

Matters were made worse by the growing unpopularity of Fremont. He had never done any thing to justify the high military faith in him. His arbitrary course incensed the people, and, with the exception of the Germans, he was not liked by his own troops. He was accused of extravagance in the expenditure of money, and the secretary of war went to St. Louis in October to investigate his conduct. That he was patriotic could not be questioned, but he was clearly unfitted for an important military trust. On the 2d of November, the department of the West was transferred to Major-general Hunter.

This appointment was meant to be only temporary, and Hunter was soon sent to Kansas, Major-general Halleck assuming command of the department of the West on the 18th of November. By this arrangement, the greater part of Fremont's force was left under the command of General Pope, who, like Halleck, was a graduate of West Point. The north-western part of Missouri was especially looked after by Pope, who, toward the close of the year, captured a large body of troops marching to join Price. The latter fell back toward Arkansas, and at the close of the year 1861 Missouri was in a state of civil war and anarchy.

The condition of Kentucky during those eventful days was quite similar to that of Missouri. When Governor Magoffin was appealed to by President Lincoln for help in putting down the rebellion, he replied that Kentucky would "furnish no troops for the wicked purpose of subduing her sister southern states." He insisted that President Lincoln should withdraw all federal troops, and asked President Davis that nothing should be done on his part to compromise the neutrality of Kentucky.

President Lincoln in his reply said he could not think that there was a general wish among the people of Kentucky that the union forces should be removed beyond their limits, and he must therefore decline to remove them. He expressed his sympathy with Governor Magoffin in his wish to preserve peace in his state, and regretted that in the letter of the governor no wish was expressed to see the Union maintained.

President Davis assured Governor Magoffin that he would respect the neutrality of Kentucky so long as her people maintained it. Magoffin was a secessionist, but it was otherwise with the legislature. There the union members outnumbered the secessionists by more than two to one. A resolution was passed requesting Governor Magoffin to call out the state troops for repelling invasion, and even to ask help from the United States. The governor vetoed the resolution, but the two houses passed it again, and on the 30th of September, he was obliged to issue a proclamation summoning 41,500 men.

By this time a large body of confederate troops had entered Kentucky. They were under the command of General Leonidas Polk, a graduate of West Point and formerly a bishop of the Episcopal church. He persuaded the confederate government of the necessity of occupying the town of Columbus. On his appearance in Kentucky, a union force under General Ulysses S. Grant was dispatched from Cairo, and the neutrality of Kentucky became impossible.

General Robert Anderson, the former commander at Fort Sumter, crossed the Ohio and took possession of Louisville, while the state troops made ready to co-operate with the union forces. Jefferson Davis dispatched Albert Sidney Johnston, an excel-

lent soldier, to command the western department, in which were the forces of Polk and of Zollicoffer. General Simon B. Buckner took an active part in helping the secession cause in Kentucky.

General U. S. Grant had charge of an expedition whose main purpose was to open the Mississippi—a difficult task indeed, for confederate troops had erected many powerful batteries along the shore. The main positions held by the federals were at Cairo; at Cape Girardeau, some thirty miles above Cairo on the Missouri side; at Pilot Knob, seventy miles to the north-west; and at Paducah, fifty miles east of Cairo. The confederates, as you have learned, had occupied Columbus, about thirty miles from Cairo. In south-western Missouri also they had a force that threatened the federal garrison at Pilot Knob; but General Grant sent a column under Colonel Plummer, who relieved the garrison from all danger.

General Grant now led 3,000 men against Columbus, sailing down the river on the 6th of November, and reaching the next day a point about two miles above the confederate batteries. The troops were landed and through the thick woods advanced upon Belmont, where the enemy were under the command of General Pillow and Colonel Tappan. General Polk was uncertain whether Grant was marching against Belmont, on the Missouri side of the river, or against Columbus, on the Kentucky shore. He finally concluded that Columbus was his objective point, and the main body of confederates therefore were concentrated there, a few detachments only being left at Belmont. They had strengthened their position by breastworks of felled trees, but were so hotly assailed by the federals that they were driven back in confusion to the banks of the river. There they were re-enforced by Polk, who had discovered that Columbus was in no danger, and, coming up the river, he seriously endangered, by a flank movement, Grant's position. Colonel Tappan's camp had been taken by the federals, who planted batteries to fire upon the steamers that were bringing up confederate re-enforcements.

The flank movement alarmed Grant, who hastily withdrew to his transports, leaving many dead and wounded behind. Polk's force was so much the superior that there was no choice left to Grant but to retreat. The federal loss was about 400, that of the confederates probably being larger. There were no other important actions on the upper Mississippi before the close of 1861, but numerous skirmishes and collisions took place in different parts of the country.

The secessionists were so industrious in Kentucky that they succeeded in electing G. W. Johnson, an extreme disunionist, governor. Delegates were sent to Richmond, and two gentlemen were sworn in as senators for that state in the confederate congress. The Kentucky legislature, while decidedly Union in sentiment, was strongly opposed to many acts of the federal government. It condemned a number of arbitrary arrests made in Louisville, and both houses denounced the proclamation of Fremont which was intended to free the slaves. There was a dread also in many quarters that the national government intended to arm the negro population. Tennessee had already seceded, but a number of daring union men were destroying railroad bridges in that section, so that matters could not have been in a much worse condition in the two states than they were at the close of 1861.

CHAPTER V.

EVENTS OF 1861. THE WAR ON THE COAST.

YOU know how extensive our country is, and now that the two sections were at war, the hostilities covered a vast space. Beginning with Virginia, the northern limit of fighting, you have been told of the principal events that took place there during 1861, the first year of the war. The first meeting between the northern and southern armies at Bull Run resulted in an overwhelming victory for the confederates. General McClellan was called to Washington and placed in charge of the department of the Potomac.

MR. MASON.

MR. SLIDELL.

For months he devoted himself to drilling and disciplining the array of soldiers under his command, until his army became one of the finest ever known.

General Scott had become so old and infirm that his days of usefulness were ended. On the 31st of October, he resigned his place at the head of the army. The following day he was placed on the retired list with the full pay and allowances of his rank. General McClellan was made his successor and thus assumed the chief command of all the federal armies. He was ordered to make his headquarters in Washington and to give his attention to the more complete discipline of the troops. At that time the military establishment of the Union consisted of 20,000 regulars and nearly 650,000 volunteers.

You have been told of what took place in Missouri and Kentucky and on the upper Mississippi during 1861. The agents of the government worked night and day to place a large fleet on the rivers and along the coast. They soon succeeded in doing so, and the blockade was made as effective as possible. It could not be entirely so. The confederates with their swift steamers ran back and forth scores of times. When approaching

COPYRIGHT, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

THE "SAN JACINTO" STOPPING THE "TRENT." (*See page* 55.)

Drawing by Edward Gault.

the squadron, they would extinguish or screen every light, and in the fog or darkness would sometimes steal through without discovery. In case of detection, full steam would be put on, and the blockade-runner would make all haste to reach the protection of the friendly fort in shore, or would dart into the winding channel where she could not be followed; or if headed off, would put to sea again.

It was somewhat similar when the blockade-runner tried to steal out upon the open sea, where her superior speed generally carried her beyond reach of the federal pursuers. The swift steamers were painted a neutral tint, so that it was hard to detect them. They carried out cotton, which was exchanged at great profit for gold or arms, and accouterments for the southern soldiers. In France and Great Britain there were more friends of the Confederacy than of the Union. They helped to build, and in many cases to man, the swift steamers that brought such important supplies to those who were striving to break up the Union.

Fort Pickens, as you have learned, was one of the few posts in the South that the confederates failed to capture at the beginning of the war. It was held by the federals from the opening to the close of hostilities. In addition to the union troops within the fort itself, a body of New York volunteers known as Wilson's Zouaves were encamped about a mile away near the shore of Santa Rosa Island, on which Fort Pickens stands. These soldiers were a desperate set of men, as fierce as tigers in combat. Before daylight, however, on the morning of October 9, a large force of confederates under General Anderson swooped down and scattered them like chaff. In the flush of victory, the assailants were stricken by a fear that the federal steamers would cut off their retreat, and they fled in confusion.

On the 22d of November, Colonel Browne, commandant at the fort, in revenge for the raid of the confederates six weeks before, bombarded their works. The war vessels *Niagara* and *Richmond* helped, but the result did not change the relative position of the parties.

While it was impossible to make the blockade very stringent, it was so annoying at New Orleans that the confederates determined to break it up if possible. The confederate fleet lay at Algiers, the naval station of New Orleans, and was under the command of Commodore Hollins, formerly of the United States navy. Among his vessels was a "ram," which was iron-plated and had a horn in front. Driven by powerful engines, such a craft was capable of doing great damage to ordinary shipping. The federals had heard about this new species of war-ship, and were warned to be ready for it, but the weeks passed without its appearing, and many began to think that, after all, nothing was to be feared from it.

The night following October 11 was dark and cloudy, and the five vessels of the federal squadron were anchored near the south-western outlet of the Mississippi, doing guard duty, as they had been doing for months past. The squadron was under the general direction of Captain Pope of the steamer *Richmond*. Between four and five in the early morning, while the *Richmond* was coaling, the confederate ram *Manassas* was discovered close at hand. Hardly was she seen when she crashed into the *Richmond* abreast of the port fore-channels, tearing the coaling schooner from her fastenings and

staving a large hole in the side of the steamer. Backing away, the monster attempted to ram another hole in the stern of the *Richmond*, but failed. The crew of the latter quickly repaired to their quarters, and as the ram steamed past, delivered a broadside from the entire port battery. The iron hide of the *Manassas* was scarcely pierced by the solid shot, which flew off like peas.

As the *Manassas* steamed off, she discharged a rocket toward the clouds, and a few minutes after three increasing blazes of light were discovered coming down the river two or three miles away. They were fire-ships, and it was seen that several steamers and a bark-rigged propeller were behind them. Guided by one of the confederate vessels and the tow boat, the blazing barges swept downward with the tide, directly toward the federal squadron, which was in imminent danger. The moment after the ram struck the *Richmond*, the latter showed a red light as a warning to the rest of the fleet. Without delay the other vessels slipped their cables and got under way. All were ordered to move out into the open waters of the gulf, but this was a hard task. While trying to pass the sandy bar at the south-west of the river, with the enemy at their heels, the *Richmond* and *Vincennes* ran aground. The former, however, swung to and brought her guns to bear on her assailants. The *Vincennes* was abandoned by her captain and crew, who first placed a lighted fuse near her magazine to blow her up.

As the minutes passed without any explosion, Captain Pope ordered the officer and his crew to go back to the abandoned vessel and try to get her off the bar. An examination showed that the lighted fuse had gone out within an inch of the powder. Both the *Vincennes* and *Richmond* were saved. The fire-ships stranded on the western shore of the river and none of the other confederate vessels was able to get beyond the mouth of the pass. The commander of the *Manassas*, while returning up the Mississippi, found that her machinery had been damaged to such an extent that he was obliged to lie up a long time for repairs. The attempt to break the blockade had failed

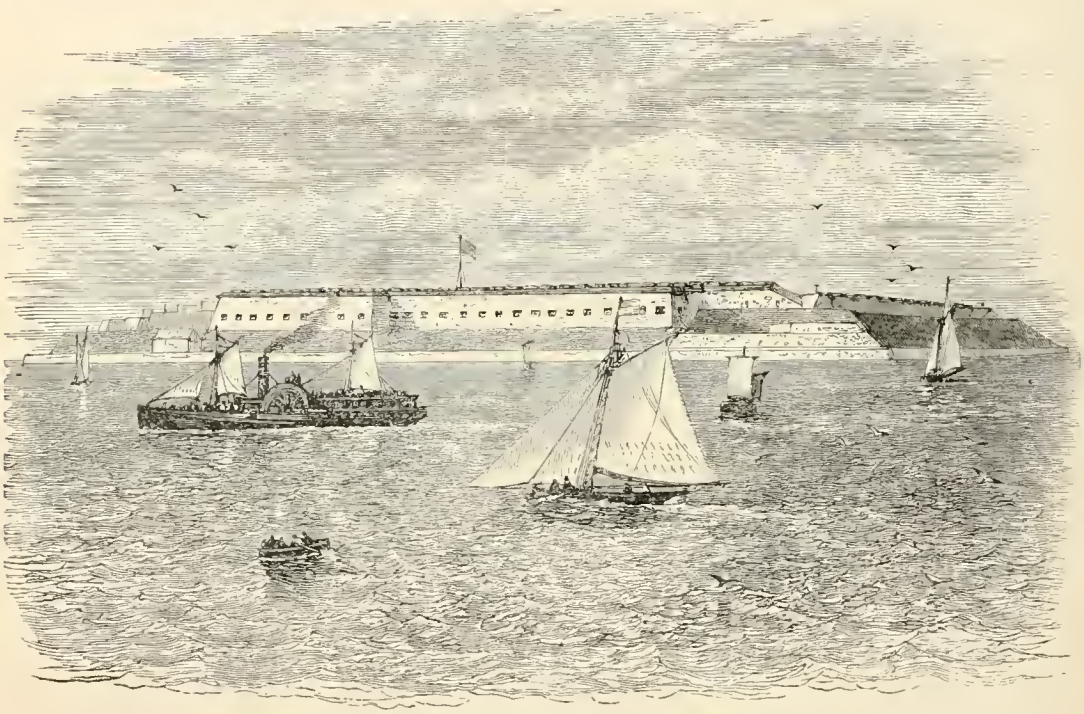
You can understand how important it was for the federal government to secure and hold several naval stations along the southern coasts. On the 29th of October, an expedition left Hampton Roads with sealed orders. Its importance is shown by the fact that it consisted of the large frigate *Wabash*, fourteen gunboats, thirty-four steam transports, and twenty-six sailing vessels. There were about ten thousand troops, and, inclusive of the crews, twenty-two thousand in all. The ships were under the command of Commander Samuel F. Dupont and the troops were directed by General Thomas W. Sherman.

This expedition was one of the most formidable ever sent out by any country. Among the guns were those of the Dahlgren and Parrott pattern, the former being the largest in the American service: they were of cast iron and smooth-bore, while the Parrotts were also of cast iron, but rifled, with a wrought iron band around the breech to give additional strength. All the guns were muzzle loaders.

The coal vessels sailed under convoy on the 28th of October, and, with a view of deceiving the confederates as to their destination, were ordered to rendezvous off Savannah. They were caught in a violent storm near Cape Hatteras; four transports were lost and two vessels, that were obliged to throw their armament overboard, put back to

Fortress Monroe. The scattered craft, however, slowly came up and three war-ships left blockading stations to join the fleet, till all were together off Port Royal, South Carolina. The destination of the expedition was Beaufort, midway between Charleston and Savannah, among a number of low, marshy islands and lagoons. By capturing Beaufort the federal government would be able to maintain a fleet in the harbor of Port Royal. It was on the 4th of November that the entire expedition lay off the bar at Port Royal.

This harbor is two and a half miles wide, and was commanded by Fort Walker on Hilton Head on the southern shore, and Fort Beauregard on the northern shore. The



FORT WARREN.

first thing to be done was to sound the channel between the bar and shore, and to lay down new buoys, the confederates having removed the old ones. This was accomplished in three days, under a fire from the confederate fleet of five small steamers commanded by Commodore Josiah Tatnall, formerly of the United States navy.

On the 7th, the lighter transports and gunboats crossed the bar and anchored in the roadstead. They held Tatnall and his little fleet in check, while the larger war-ships, sweeping round and round in a huge ellipse between the two forts, poured a tremendous cannonade into them. General Ripley, the confederate officer in command at Port Royal, had made the most of every thing at his command. Fort Walker, standing on Hilton Head at the entrance to the channel, was a strong earthwork mounting twenty-three guns, all of the heaviest caliber, some of which were rifled. A small outwork between the fort and the sea mounted a single rifled gun.

BRITISH TROOPS CONVEVED THROUGH CANADA.
Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

Fort Beauregard on the other side of the channel, a little more than two miles off, had twenty large guns and was supported by an outwork, a half mile away, with five guns. The bombardment of these works was kept up without intermission for four hours, when most of the guns in both forts were dismounted or rendered useless. The forts being untenable, were hastily abandoned. The garrisons, helped by the steamers and flatboats which hurried to their aid, managed to get away, taking their wounded with them. They lost severely, while of the fleet only eight were killed and twenty-three wounded. Forty-three pieces of ordnance fell into the hands of the federals, and the forts were occupied by the troops under General Sherman. Every white inhabitant fled from Beaufort. The negroes that stayed behind were set to work on the fortifications at Hilton Head.

Encouraged by its success, the federal government now determined to close the harbor of Charleston by blocking it with sunken vessels. Similar measures had been taken on the North Carolina coast, where Ocracoke Inlet, Pamlico Sound, had been shut up in this manner, as a means of preventing the escape of privateers and the entrance of blockade runners.

Accordingly, forty-five old whaling vessels and mercantile ships were bought by the government and loaded with stone. The 19th and 20th of December were occupied in sinking these craft, and the northerners exulted that Charleston harbor was closed. The rejoicing, however, was not warranted. The powerful current soon swept away the obstructions in the channel, which once more became free.

We narrowly escaped a war with England toward the close of 1861. James M. Mason and John Slidell, both of whom had been United States senators, were appointed commissioners of the Confederacy to the courts of London and Paris. Well aware of the friendly disposition of Great Britain and France, Jefferson Davis saw the importance of being represented at those courts by able men who were fully instructed as to his policy and plans. These gentlemen with their secretaries and families, sailed from Charleston to Havana, where they made no secret that their mission was to secure the recognition of the Confederacy, not only as a belligerent, but as an established power. At Havana, they took passage for England on the British royal mail steamer *Trent*, sailing on the 7th of November. The next day about noon, when in the narrow passage of the old Bahama Channel, a steamer was observed some distance ahead, as if awaiting the approach of the *Trent*. It proved to be the *San Jacinto*, Captain Charles Wilkes (the commander of the United States exploring expedition of 1838–42). He fired across the bow of the *Trent*, which ran up the English colors and kept on. The *San Jacinto* hoisted the stars-and-stripes and sent a shell across the mail steamer, which brought her to. Lieutenant Fairfax was then sent on board the *Trent*, with a demand to see the papers of the British steamer. Captain Moir refused to show them or to allow his passenger list to be examined. Mr. Mason, however, who stood near by, was recognized, and Lieutenant Fairfax ordered a part of the crew of one of his armed boats to come aboard. Messrs. Mason and Slidell were then requested to accompany the lieutenant back to the *San Jacinto*. They refused, when an additional force was summoned and the two with their secretaries were forcibly taken away. Of course they as well as Cap-

Last Moments of John Brown
From Original Painting by Hovenden.

THE LAST MOMENTS OF JOHN BROWN

tain Moir strongly protested against this outrage of the British flag. The *San Jacinto* then proceeded on her way to the United States.

The greatest excitement was caused by the news of this occurrence, both in the United States and England. Commodore Wilkes was the hero of the hour. "Let the handsome thing be done," exclaimed the *New York Times;* "consecrate another July 4th to him; load him down with services of plate and swords of the cunningest and costliest art; let us encourage the happy inspiration that achieved such a victory." A banquet was given to Captain Wilkes in Boston, at which Governor Andrew of Massachusetts pronounced the seizure of the commissioners "an act of conspicuous patriotism and good judgment." The house of representatives passed a resolution thanking Captain Wilkes for what he had done, and the president was asked to have the commissioners placed in the cells of convicted felons and kept there until Colonel Corcoran and Colonel Wood (two union officers held as hostages for southern privateersmen) should be properly treated.

Not only did the northerners exult because of the triumph over the enemy, but they were glad that by the act of Captain Wilkes, England had received what many called a blow in the face. She had shown her friendship for the Confederacy most offensively; she had refused to await the arrival of our minister in her hurry to recognize the South as a belligerent, and she was covertly assisting her to such an extent that the northern resentment toward Great Britain was hot and fierce.

Great Britain flamed with indignation at what was considered the grossest insult possible, and it looked as if nothing but war could wipe out the outrage. On receipt of the news in Liverpool a meeting was called, at which the wildest language and threats were applauded. Those who tried to counsel moderation were not listened to. Great Britain had been defied by the United States, and the consequences must be on the head of the latter.

By and by, when the first burst of fury was over, the English began to investigate the matter. The fact was then brought out that, unjustifiable as was the course of Captain Wilkes, he would have been warranted in seizing the *Trent*, with all on board, and submitting her to an American prize court. This made it look as if the act of Captain Wilkes was more an error of judgment than an intentional insult. The excitement was calmed still more by the fact that Captain Wilkes had acted on his own responsibility. Secretary Seward instructed Minister Adams to make this fact known to the British government, and to state also that the American government was ready to discuss the proceedings in a friendly spirit as soon as the British government would make known its position on the question.

It is not necessary that I should go over the ground taken in this discussion, which can be summed up in a few sentences. You will recall that for years previous to the breaking out of the war of 1812, we were incensed by the course of England in enforcing what she termed the "right of search." Captain Wilkes had done the very thing to which we had objected with such vigor. If we justified him, we gave up the distinctive American policy upon which we have always insisted. Secretary Seward, while claiming that Captain Wilkes had the right to capture the commissioners, was compelled to admit

that he had not done so in a manner recognized and allowed by the law of nations, because Wilkes decided for himself the question whether the prisoners were contraband, and released the vessel, instead of bringing both it and the prisoners to port for adjudication in a prize court. The secretary therefore yielded as gracefully as he could, and ordered the release of the prisoners. It caused much chagrin in the North, but the step was right and therefore wise. Messrs. Mason and Slidell were released from Fort Warren, Boston harbor, and transferred to a British vessel, which was waiting at Provincetown.

It is worth stating that England began preparations for war and ordered a number of troops to Canada. When the transports reached that country the ports were frozen shut. The British government was reduced to the mortifying necessity of asking our government to allow the troops to land at Portland and go across American territory. Permission was given to the very soldiers who were sent thither so as to be ready to make war upon us.

CHAPTER VI.

EVENTS OF 1862. UNION SUCCESSES.

WE have now reached the second year of the war for the Union. It was a year so full of battles and momentous events that we must try to study its history intelligently. A great task was before the union armies, and until that was finished, the end

VIEW ON THE POTOMAC BELOW WASHINGTON.

could not come. Vast campaigns must be pushed to a successful conclusion and prodigious results achieved before the Union could be restored.

The South was fully aroused, armed and defiant. She had brave soldiers and skillful generals. She had placed large armies in the field and was confident of gaining her independence. She had already fought and won important battles, and her position warranted her faith in herself. The South, it may be said, had solidified. Except in eastern Tennessee, there was no union sentiment that was worthy of being taken into account. Strong, enthusiastic and defiant, her people had no fear of the final issue.

Now, in order to subdue the Confederacy, several distinct things had to be done. First, it was necessary to open the Mississippi, which the confederates had closed. From Texas and the south-west the South drew enormous supplies for her armies. If the Mississippi could be cleared of the confederate batteries along its shore, the Confederacy, to a certain extent, would be cut in twain, and a deadly hurt would be inflicted.

It was necessary to pierce the confederacy—that is, to invade the South and capture her commanding points. You can readily understand, therefore, why Richmond, the capital, was the special aim of the union armies from the first; why such desperate efforts were made to capture it, and why it was defended with such valor to the last.

Before Richmond could be taken, the army of northern Virginia, defending it, would have to be conquered. General McClellan, when appointed commander-in-chief of the federal armies, was asked by President Lincoln to prepare a memorandum of his plan of operations. In response, McClellan said the most important strategetical point was in eastern Virginia, where the decisive struggle must be fought out. It was necessary, of course, that campaigns should be pushed in other directions, in order to support the principal movement. An advance should be made on the Mississippi, and the confederates must be driven out of Missouri. Operations should be pushed in eastern Tennessee to help the union men there, and to seize the railways leading from Memphis to the east. Regiments should be equipped in western Virginia, and the commander-in-chief insisted on the importance of occupying Baltimore and Fortress Monroe, and of keeping a large army within call of Washington for its protection.

These were the main features of McClellan's view of the military situation at the beginning of 1862. He hoped to occupy Richmond, Charleston, Savannah, Montgomery, Pensacola, Mobile and New Orleans. Could he succeed in doing that he would certainly be warranted in hoping the Confederacy would give up the struggle.

The first military movements of the year took place in Kentucky. The western military district was commanded by General Halleck, with head-quarters in St. Louis. Under his orders were General Grant in western and General Buell in eastern Kentucky. General Buell occupied Somerset and Columbia, near the upper part of the Cumberland, and was confronted by General Zollicoffer, whose camp was at Mill Spring, on the southern bank of that river. Crossing the Cumberland to the northern bank, Zollicoffer was joined by his superior officer, General Crittenden. At midnight, on the 18th, the combined forces set out to attack the federals stationed about ten miles distant. The latter were under the command of General George H. Thomas, one of the best officers we have ever had. He was gathering recruits, and had already a considerable force. He discovered the approach of the confederates before daylight, and the action speedily opened.

The federals were driven back at first, but under their admirable leader they soon rallied, and regained the lost ground. While the fighting was at its fiercest, General Zollicoffer, riding at the front of his men, got so close to a federal regiment that one of the officers shot him dead with his revolver. His fall from his horse caused a partial panic, and the confederates began to retreat. Nothing gives a combatant so much courage as the knowledge that his enemy is fleeing, and the federals, with cheers, followed the flying enemy. The pursuit was kept up until the confederates reached their intrench-

ments. There they were shelled so hard that they were driven out and forced across the Cumberland. In their haste they had to leave their wagons, horses, artillery and camp equipments, all of which fell into the hands of the federals. General Crittenden retreated first to Monticello, and then to Gainesborough, Tennessee, his troops starving and almost freezing to death.

This victory placed eastern Kentucky in the hands of the unionists, but the confederates had a firm hold in the western part. General Albert Sidney Johnston, the confederate commander, held a line from Bowling Green on the right to Columbus on the left. The line was very strong because of the nearness of the Columbia and Tennessee rivers, and because of the railway system connecting the ends of the line. Johnston strengthened his position still further by building two forts, Fort Henry on the right bank of the Tennessee in Kentucky, and Fort Donelson on the left bank of the Cumberland, fifteen miles south-east of the other, and within the limits of Tennessee.

General Grant decided, in combination with the fleet under Commodore Foote, to attack Fort Henry. The expedition embarked at Cairo, February 1, and four days later the troops landed four and a half miles below Fort Henry. The plan was to assault the fort on the land side with the soldiers, while the fleet assailed it in front. It was believed that the latter could drive the garrison out, and Grant meant to cut off their escape.

A vigorous cannonade opened between the fort and gun-boats, the latter gradually working their way closer in shore and making their fire more effective. A shot pierced the boiler of the *Essex*, scalding twenty-nine to death (the only federal losses during the engagement), and causing the boat to drift helplessly down stream. By and by General Tilghman, commanding Fort Henry, lowered his flag. He had seen from the first that he must surrender, and he sent off the majority of his garrison, numbering nearly 3,000, while he made his defense with a force less than a thirtieth of that number.

Grant and his gun-boats now moved up the Cumberland to attack Fort Donelson. At first he had barely 15,000 men, but he soon obtained as many more. Toward the close, the garrison numbered about 20,000. Heavy batteries commanded the river, and on the land side were numerous rifle pits and intrenchments. The latter, however, were an element of weakness rather than of strength, for on the morning of February 12 they were still unfinished. On the day succeeding, General Floyd arrived with his troops from Cumberland. He assumed general direction, the right wing being commanded by General Buckner and the left by General Pillow.

The attack was opened at three o'clock on the afternoon of the 14th by Commodore Foote, with four iron-clad gun-boats and two wooden vessels. They began to fire at a distance of more than a mile, but the confederates remained silent until the vessels were within less than a fourth of that distance. The fort stood upon a bluff a hundred feet high and covered a hundred acres. Its elevation enabled it to send a plunging fire upon the boats, two of which were disabled and drifted down stream, the others soon following. They had lost fifty-four men. Among the wounded was Commodore Foote, who withdrew with his fleet to Cairo, having decided to wait until a strong force should be brought up from that place to attack the fort.

General Grant, with that bull-dog-like tenacity which was one of his strongest char-

acteristics, had his grip on Fort Donelson and would never let go. Taking his position in front of the works, he soon invested the entire confederate left, excepting a strip of swampy ground near the river. The weather had been remarkably mild for the season, but now the temperature dropped to 12° below zero, and the union soldiers suffered greatly. The situation of the confederates was little better and it became more desperate every day. There was but one thing to do—that was for the garrison to cut its way out. The attempt was made before daybreak on the morning of the 14th, and for a time looked as if it would succeed. Grant was down the river consulting with Commodore Foote, and reached the field about nine o'clock. With the genius of a true soldier, he saw that the opportunity for which he was waiting had come, and he ordered an advance of the whole line, the gun-boats being requested at the same time to do what they could to help. The assault was successful at every point.

That night the confederate leaders held a council of war. The conclusion was unanimous that nothing remained but to surrender. General Floyd said: "You know my position; I would rather die than surrender." General Pillow added: "There are no two persons in the world whom the federals would be better pleased to capture than you and me: we must escape."

General Buckner listened to this cowardly talk, and agreed to remain and conduct the surrender. That night, Floyd stole across the river with his brigade, there being hardly enough boats for the purpose, while Pillow crossed the river in a scow and got away. The body of infantry having escaped in boats, many of the cavalry made off by the lower road to Nashville.

At the dawn Grant was ready for his assault upon Fort Donelson. Before a gun was fired, Buckner sent a letter to him proposing an armistice until 12 o'clock that day, in order to arrange terms of capitulation. Grant's famous reply followed: "No terms except unconditional and immediate surrender can be accepted; I propose to move immediately upon your works."

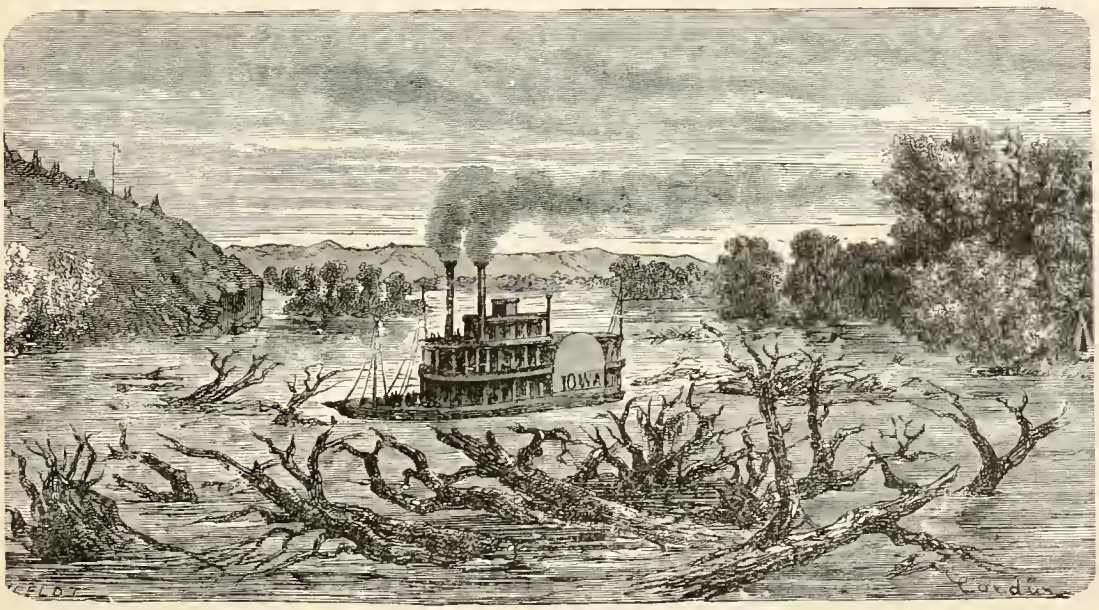
The initials of General Grant's name, U. S., are, as you will observe, the initials of the words *Unconditional Surrender*, from which fact he was sometimes afterward called "Unconditional Surrender Grant." Buckner was compelled to accept the terms, but he pronounced them ungenerous and unchivalrous. When, however, they were made known, his misgivings proved to be unfounded. All the prisoners were allowed to keep their personal baggage, and the officers were permitted to retain their side arms. The prisoners numbered 15,000, the greatest number that had ever surrendered at one time in this country. Fort Donelson was occupied by union troops, and the river by the gun-boats. The blow was a severe one to the Confederacy, and caused unbounded rejoicing in the north When the dispatch was read in Congress it was added that Floyd "stole" away during the night. As he had been accused of stealing arms for the cause of secession, while he was still a member of President Buchanan's cabinet, the thrust was received with much laughter and applause. General Grant at once became famous.

The conduct of Floyd was so despicable that President Davis a short time after deprived him of command, while General Pillow's military career was also ended. General Buckner, however, as soon as exchanged, was given an important command. I can

not help anticipating, in this place, by saying that after the ending of the unhappy war, General Buckner became a devoted friend of General Grant and was one of the pall-bearers at his funeral.

Before the fate of Fort Donelson was settled, General Albert Sidney Johnston withdrew from Bowling Green to Nashville. He evacuated that city on learning of the surrender, and it was occupied by General Mitchell at the head of a division of Buell's army.

General Johnston continued to fall back, and finally took position near Murfreesboro', Tennessee, the entire northern portion of which, including the Cumberland River, was abandoned by the confederates. General Polk also evacuated Columbus, on the



A RIVER BOAT.

Mississippi, and assumed a line of defense forty miles further to the south, near New Madrid, on the western bank of the river. On the day following, the federal cavalry from Paducah, followed by Commodore Foote's gun-boats, reached Columbus and took possession.

Having fallen back so far, the confederates established a new line of defense for the south-western states. Polk at New Madrid was to the left. Johnston at Murfreesboro' to the right, and Beauregard at Jackson, Tennessee, formed the center. If you will examine the situation, you will see that the southern cause had suffered a serious check. The confederates had been forced to give up all of Kentucky, and to leave the upper part of Tennessee open to the federals. As a consequence, they had lost command of the railways and important rivers, and the moral effect of these reverses was felt through the whole Confederacy.

On the 19th of February, three days after the fall of Fort Donelson, the electoral votes of the confederate presidency were counted. It was found that Jefferson Davis

was unanimously re-elected. Alexander H. Stephens of Georgia was elected vice-president.

These officials were inaugurated at Richmond, on Washington's birthday. The president admitted the serious reverses lately suffered by the Confederacy, but insisted that they should only stir the people to greater endeavors to be free.

The next movement that claims attention was a military and naval expedition against the coast of North Carolina. The land forces were to be under the command of General Ambrose E. Burnside of Rhode Island, a soldier educated at West Point, and who had returned to the army on the breaking out of war. Commodore Louis M. Goldsborough had charge of the fleet, and nothing was neglected that could make the expedition successful. The fleet consisted of fifteen gun-boats, eight propellers, and fifty-seven transports. On the latter were 11,000 troops, divided into three brigades. The expedition left Fortress Monroe on the 12th of January and anchored inside Hatteras Inlet on the 17th. Three heavy earthworks, mounting twenty-four guns, were on Roanoke Island, with a force of 3,000 men behind them. The narrow, insular country had been defended by the confederates at the northern extremity, but not at the southern. A short time before, that part of North Carolina east of the Chowan River, together with Washington and Tyrrel counties, had been made a military district, under charge of Brigadier-general Henry A. Wise, formerly governor of Virginia. He belonged to the command of Major-general Huger of the Norfolk department.

You will observe from the situation of Roanoke Island that it was an important point. Lying between Roanoke Sound on the east and Croatan Sound on the west, it commanded both channels. Its possession gave a foothold over all the north-eastern parts of North Carolina, unlocked several rivers, canals and railways, and exposed Portsmouth and Norfolk in Virginia to an attack in the rear. General Wise had often called the attention of the Richmond authorities to the need of protecting the point, but little was done. A few piles had been driven into the sands and several batteries were planted on the marshy soil. The climate was so malarious that many of the negroes employed on the works were prostrated. General Wise himself became so ill that he was obliged to hand over the defenses to Colonel Shaw. The confederate gun-boats were only seven in number. They were under the command of Commodore Lynch and were stationed between Roanoke Island and the mainland.

The attack was made on the morning of February 7, when the union gunboats entered the channel of Croatan Sound. Commodore Lynch saw the folly of fighting such a formidable force and withdrew his gun-boats under cover of the batteries. The firing soon became general, and Wise, who was on the mainland, sent his son, a lieutenant, with a re-enforcement of troops. One of the confederate gun-boats was sunk, and the firing continued till dark, without much loss on either side.

Meanwhile, the land troops were taken by the transports into Croatan Sound, where they disembarked in the rear of the gun-boats and out of reach of the confederate batteries. The landing was made late at night. The advance next morning was in three columns, through a marshy swamp covered with forest. Directly around the confederate works the trees had been cut down, so as to give the cannon free play, but a little further

THE UNITED STATES TREASURY AT NEW YORK. (*See page* 139.)

On this site George Washington took the oath as the first President of the United States.

away the woods afforded the best kind of cover for the federals. The swampy ground on both flanks of the confederates was passed by the advance, and the former were thus forced out of their intrenchments. Hotly pursued by the assailants they rushed to the shore and embarked in boats that were towed off by a steamer. A number were captured, including some of the wounded. Among the latter was Lieutenant Wise, son of the governor, who was mortally hurt and died in the hands of the unionists. The whole island was secured at a small loss of life.

The confederate gun-boats were chased by the federal squadron and were attacked while in the narrow channel that leads to Elizabeth City. The crews, after a brief resistance, fired their craft and fled to the shore. The little town of Winton on the Chowan was fired by the federals.

It was now determined to attack Newburn, near the river Neuse, on the railway connecting Beaufort with Raleigh. After a laborious march over muddy roads, the troops arrived in front of the town on the night of March 13. The place was defended by a line of forts in advance of the houses. The fire from these was so effective that after the attack had continued awhile, the order was given to storm the works. This was effected after a desperate struggle. The confederates, finding their position turned, while the gun-boats were coming up the river, fled in confusion. One of the forts was blown up, and the confederates, hurrying across the river, burned the bridge to impede pursuit. Entering the town of Newburn, the federals found it deserted. It had been set on fire by the defenders, who thus destroyed vast quantities of cotton, turpentine and military stores, the court-house, a hotel and a number of private residences. The city was occupied, and General Foster was made military governor. Shortly after, a detachment of gun-boats took possession of Washington, at the mouth of the river Tar, in Pamlico Sound. Fort Macon, commanding the entrance to the harbor of Beaufort, was captured on the 25th of April. A touching incident of the surrender of the fort took place. When the "stars-and-bars" came down and the flag of the Union was run up, an old confederate bugler climbed upon the ruined rampart and saluted the flag of his country by playing "The Star Spangled Banner."

About this time, Commodore Dupont captured the towns of Fernandina and Jacksonville on the Florida coast. Thus, as you will see, a large part of the confederate seacoast had fallen into the hands of the federals, and in many parts the blockade was made more stringent and oppressive than ever.

President Davis in his message referred to the humiliation of the capture of Roanoke Island. A committee of investigation found that the blame for the disaster rested upon General Huger, commander of the department, but especially upon Judah P. Benjamin, secretary of war, who had paid no heed to the urgent appeals of General Wise. Benjamin became so unpopular that he resigned, but President Davis immediately promoted him to the more responsible office of secretary of state. This caused disgust among many of the strongest supporters of President Davis.

CHAPTER VII.

EVENTS OF 1862. PROGRESS OF THE WAR IN THE SOUTH-WEST.

LET us now follow the progress of the war in Tennessee and Missouri. After General Grant's brilliant capture of Fort Donelson, he and General Buell continued

MR. SEWARD.

their advance, and made ready for fresh assaults on the confederate lines. The line of defense adopted by the southerners after falling back, was very long, extending from

New Madrid in Missouri, through Island Number Ten on the Mississippi, to Murfreesboro' and Cumberland Gap in the north-east, with the center at Jackson—a point south of both extremities.

The continued possession by the confederates of Island Number Ten required them to hold the outpost of New Madrid. General Pope, therefore, led an expedition against

CAPTAIN ERICSSON.

New Madrid, while Commodore Foote made in front a demonstration with his gun-boats. This was in the latter part of February. Batteries were afterward erected, which were used against the confederate gun-boats and shipping in the river. On the night of March 13, in the midst of a fierce storm of rain, thunder and lightning, the garrison of New Madrid withdrew to Island Number Ten, and to the works on the eastern bank of the

Mississippi, in Kentucky. The federals took possession of the town, securing a large amount of stores and cutting off the island from communication down the river.

The unionists were making good progress, and they now brought their batteries to bear against the confederate left on Island Number Ten. Little effect, however, was produced, and other measures were adopted. General Pope and Commodore Foote decided to cross to the opposite shore and capture the batteries that commanded the channel from that side. To do this, it was necessary to dig a canal across a peninsula formed by the river, so as to cut off New Madrid from the attacking force above, and to give the gun-boats a greater command over the insular defenses than the sinuous course of the Mississippi would permit. Greater facilities would thus be afforded to the transports that were taking troops from New Madrid to the other side of the Mississippi.

The digging of this canal was a prodigious task, for it had to be twelve miles in length and must be finished without delay. One-half the distance was through a marshy forest, where the trees had to be cut off four feet below the surface of the water. Formidable as was the work, it was finished in nineteen days. During this time, the confederates were so occupied by the heavy fire of the gun-boats and mortar-batteries that they had no chance to interfere with the digging of the canal.

On the night of April 6, four steamers and a number of transports went through the canal. A division under General Payne was sent across the river in transports, and the soldiers landed without opposition on the left bank of the Mississippi. The defenders of the batteries were taken by surprise, and were quickly driven out. Island Number Ten being no longer tenable, the defenses were abandoned, and the position, with a vast amount of war material, surrendered to Commodore Foote. The blow was a severe one to the confederates, since this was a most important step in forcing open the great Mississippi.

After the capture of Nashville, General Grant went with his army down the Tennessee River to Pittsburg Landing. General Buell started for the same section overland. The union army being thus divided, each part was exposed to the attack of the enemy. The confederates had two powerful armies, commanded by officers of skill. The senior was General Albert Sidney Johnston, General Beauregard commanding the other division. To strike Grant a crushing blow, Johnston united his whole force with that of Beauregard, and on the 3d of April started for Pittsburg Landing. Their army was over 40,000 strong, divided into three corps and a reserve. The marching was slow, so that the neighborhood of Grant's position was not reached till the afternoon of the 5th.

Pittsburg Landing occupies a bluff reaching back to a plateau half a mile in extent, and is eighty feet high. General W. T. Sherman had been ordered to take position on this plateau, far enough back from the river to leave room for an army of 100,000 men. The order was given by General Charles F. Smith, and was his last. He had military ability of the highest order, but a slight injury received at Fort Donelson in stepping on a boat was followed by gangrene, and he died on the 25th of April.

There have been many accounts of the battle of Pittsburg Landing, and to-day numerous statements made by those who took part in it directly contradict one another;

but no doubt General Grant did not expect the attack, and was not prepared for it: in other words this fine soldier, for once in his career, was surprised. He had not less than 38,000 men on his side of the Tennessee, and Buell was only a short distance away with 40,000 more. Johnston and Beauregard attempted to crush Grant's army before Buell could arrive: the attempt was nearly a success.

Grant had thrown up few if any defenses, and his divisions were scattered about the ground. You must bear in mind that an army of such dimensions occupies an enormous area. The plateau is crossed by numerous creeks and streams, and is covered in most places with woods, making it difficult for the assailed force to concentrate for defense.

At daylight, on Sunday morning, April 6, Hardee's corps threw itself with great fury upon the outlying divisions of the federal army and drove them in upon the main body. The division of General W. T. Sherman was among the first to receive the shock. Many of the officers were asleep, while the soldiers that had risen were mainly engaged in preparing breakfast or cleaning their guns.

The federals were thrown into confusion by the assault. A part of General Prentiss's division got into form, but was driven back. Three regiments and the general himself were taken prisoners. Then some of Sherman's brigades got into line and held their ground for a short time. But nothing could withstand the furious onslaught. The assailants drove the divisions of Prentiss and Sherman back, trampling through their deserted camps and capturing most of their artillery.

By and by the confederates came in front of General McClernand's division, posted on rising ground. They met such resistance that General Bragg, commanding one of the supporting bodies, brought his troops into action. Helped by others, he assailed the federal position with such energy that McClernand was driven back, and the utmost confusion followed.

At the opening of the battle, Grant was on the opposite side of the river in consultation with Buell. Hastening back, he came upon a field that appeared to be hopelessly lost. By noon, the entire union army had been driven out of their camps, and were huddled together on the verge of the bluff above the landing, where it looked as if there was no possible escape. At two o'clock there seemed to be no hope for the federal army.

About this time General Johnston was struck in the knee by a cannon ball that shattered the limb. At that moment, a confederate regiment was dashing in front of him on a charge, and, sitting erect, he pressed his bleeding leg against the saddle, that they might not see he was hurt. When they had passed, one of his aides, seeing his frightful wound, reproved him that he had not spoken of it.

"Had I done so," replied Johnston, "it might have caused confusion and panic among the soldiers who were charging past." He was lifted from his saddle and a few minutes later bled to death.

The ability of General Grant showed itself at this crisis. Before the confederates could reach that part of the plateau where the federals were huddled together at bay, it was necessary for them to cross a deep ravine, with considerable water in the bottom. A few unimportant earthworks had been hastily thrown up on the opposite brink, and about fifty guns got into position. Two gun-boats were also stationed so that their fire

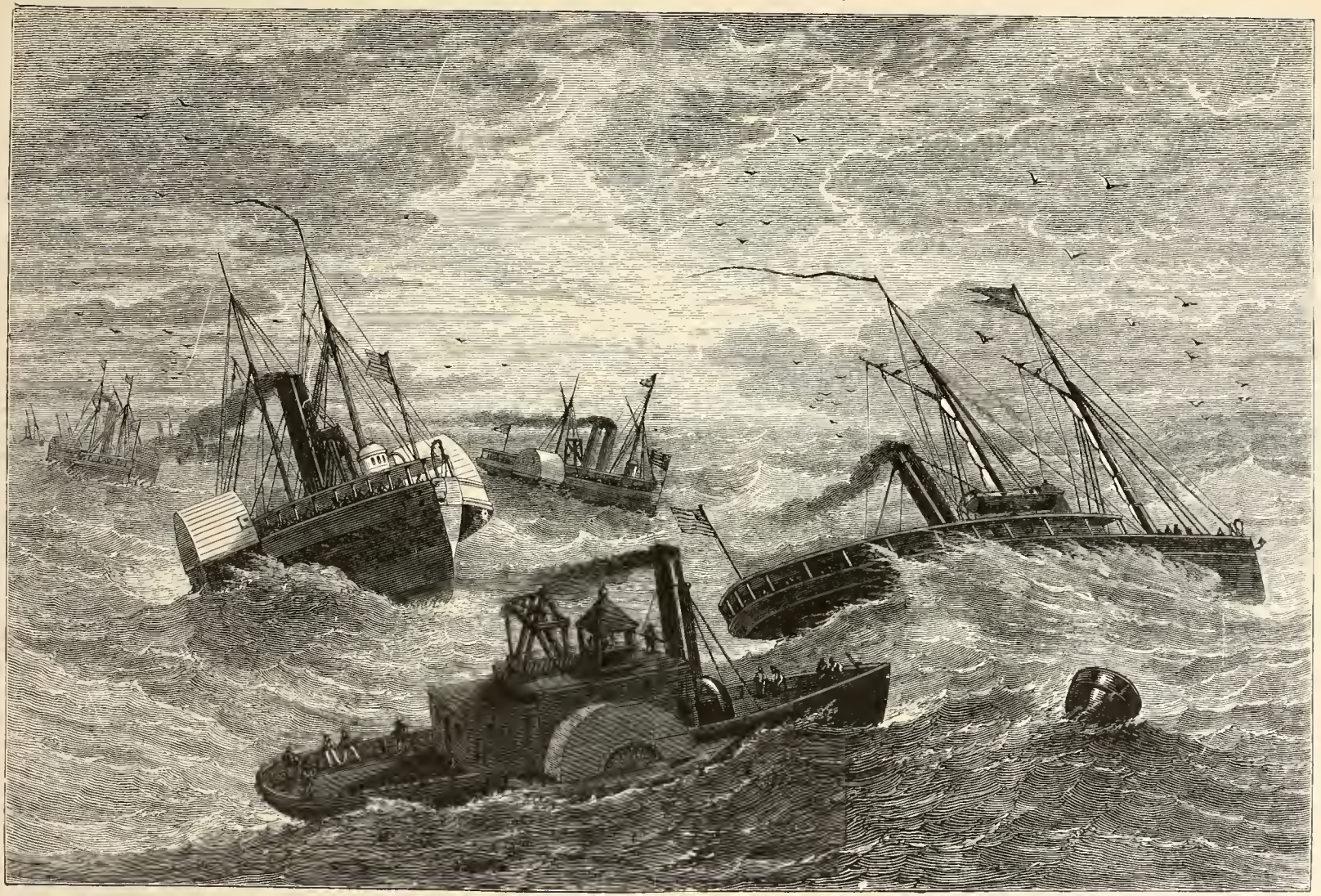
swept the ravine. The confederates charged down the bank and tried hard to dash up the other side so as to reach the federals. The fire in front and from the gun-boats swept them away like leaves from the path of a tornado. The attack was led by General Bragg in person, and was renewed unsuccessfully again and again, till four in the afternoon, when the attempt was given up. Grant was thus left master at that point. Still the confederates held the field, and it looked as if a single well-directed movement on their part would enable them to capture the whole union army, but they were too much exhausted to make that effort.

There seemed to be full warrant for Beauregard's dispatch, which contained these words: "At six o'clock in the afternoon, we were in possession of all the enemy's encampments but one, nearly all his field artillery, about thirty flags, colors and standards, and over 3,000 prisoners—all the substantial fruits of a complete victory, such as have rarely followed the most successful battles. The remnant of his army had been driven in utter disorder to the immediate vicinity of Pittsburg Landing, under the shelter of the heavy guns of his iron-clad gun-boats, and we remained undisputed masters of his well-selected, admirably-provided cantonments."

Beauregard had succeeded to the chief command on the death of Johnston, and many of his men were engaged in plundering the federal camps and loading themselves with spoil. Doubtful whether any thing more could be done that day, he ordered the several divisions to withdraw. The numbers of the two armies were about the same, and with the advantage the confederates gained at first, they should have won a complete victory.

Great changes in favor of the union army took place during the night. General Wallace, who was accused of "losing his way" during the day, arrived at night with 5,000 men. Three divisions of Buell's army, aggregating 22,000, had crossed the river, so that Grant had now about 50,000 troops under his command. The success of the confederates had so disorganized and scattered them, that less than 30,000 could be got together the next morning.

Grant was ready to assume the offensive at daylight, when placing the fresh troops in front of the disorganized ones they advanced to the attack. A cold, drizzling rain was falling, but the charge of the fresh federal legions was resistless. At seven o'clock, the engagement was general, but the confederates sought to do little more than to hold their assailants in check until the main body got beyond reach. The unionists continued to regain the positions they had lost the day before, until a last stand was made in their center, where Sherman and Wallace furiously pressed Beauregard. Sherman declared the musketry firing the fiercest he had ever seen. "Step by step," says Wallace, "from tree to tree, position to position, the rebel lines went back, never stopping again. The firing was grand and terrific. To and fro, now in my front, then in Sherman's, rode General Beauregard, inciting his troops, and fighting for his fading prestige of invincibility. Far along the lines to the left the contest was raging with equal obstinacy. As indicated by the sounds, the enemy were retiring everywhere." The confederates retreated to Corinth, and the union victory was complete. Nothing like pursuit was attempted until the 8th, and even then little was done.



BURNSIDE'S EXPEDITION CROSSING HATTERAS BAR.

In the tremendous battle of Pittsburg Landing, the union loss was 1,735 killed, 7,882 wounded, and 4,044 missing. The loss of the confederates was 1,728 killed, 8,012 wounded, and 959 missing. You can faintly realize the savageness of the battle by observing that of the 100,000 men engaged nearly one-fifth were killed or wounded.

The confederates resumed the position they held before their advance, but they had been defeated when they ought to have won a great victory. The federals had been taught a most useful lesson, and there was no danger that they would allow themselves to be caught at such disadvantage again. They were now firmly established on the upper part of the Tennessee River, and were ready to strike effective blows from that base of operations. Although the new troops did not behave well, those who were somewhat accustomed to battle had fought with fine courage. General Sherman, among the other brave officers on the union side, was specially commended. Wounded in the hand, and with his legions badly cut up, he remained on the field, and by his steadiness and skill did much to turn the rout into a victory.

Just after this battle, a daring exploit was performed by the union commander, O. M. Mitchell, famous also as a learned astronomer.

He commanded the third division of Buell's army, and was sent to destroy Beauregard's communications with the forces in Virginia. Marching with great swiftness, Mitchell captured Huntsville, Alabama, on the 11th of April, cut the telegraph wires, and sent out strong parties east and west to destroy the bridges. He then repaired those on the road from Nashville, and defeated a strong confederate force sent against him. He afterward occupied Florence, Decatur and Tuscumbia, compelling Beauregard to retreat southward instead of eastward, as was his first intention. Mitchell's death from yellow fever a short time after, cut short a career that undoubtedly would have been brilliant.

The campaign in Missouri was re-opened early in the year 1862. General Price wintered at Springfield, in the southern part of the state, and received not only supplies of clothing, but many recruits. Being attacked by the armies of generals Curtis and Sigel, on the 12th of February, he retreated to the frontiers of Missouri, Arkansas, and the Indian Territory. Even there he was not safe, and, finding himself threatened by Curtis, he continued southward to the Boston Mountains, where he effected a junction with Benjamin McCulloch, the Texan ranger. It was not long before he was joined also by General Earl Van Dorn, an old United States officer, who had command of all the confederate troops in that section. Albert Pike brought in 2,000 Indians by way of re-enforcements.

All these arrivals made the confederate army so large that its leaders decided the time had come to assume the aggressive and to attack General Curtis. The federal army was in the neighborhood of Sugar Creek, south of Pea Ridge, on the Fayetteville road. The right was commanded by General Sigel, the left by General Carr, and the center by General Jefferson C. Davis.

On the 6th of March Sigel's division was attacked. The German was surprised and nearly cut off, but his wonderful skill in retreating enabled him to extricate himself and to join the main army. Fearing that the road in the rear would be seized by the enemy,

General Curtis changed his front so as to range across Pea Ridge, facing north-west. Here they were attacked by a powerful confederate force which, advancing through ravine and brush, drove back the right wing. The confederates encamped for the night on the ground they had won, and General Curtis took a new position almost a mile further back. The success of the southerners on the right enabled them to overlap the line of the federals and to threaten their communications with Missouri.

Though hard pressed, the left wing of the union army was more fortunate. General McCulloch sought to form a junction with Van Dorn and Price. Sigel threw forward a detachment to check him, but a cavalry charge scattered his men, captured several of his guns, and placed him for a time in a critical condition. The struggle was continued between McCulloch's troops and those of Colonel Osterhaus of Sigel's division, and the federals probably would have been driven back had not General Davis gone to their help. This at once changed the aspect of things. The confederate right was shattered and two of their best officers, McCulloch and McIntosh, were killed.

On the night following the 7th, Van Dorn established his headquarters near the position held in the morning by General Carr, who had been forced back. The situation of the union army was critical, for nothing but the hardest kind of fighting could deliver them from their peril and hold their communications with Missouri. During the night a change in the order of troops was made. General Carr was placed in the center, General Davis on the right, Sigel still remaining on the left.

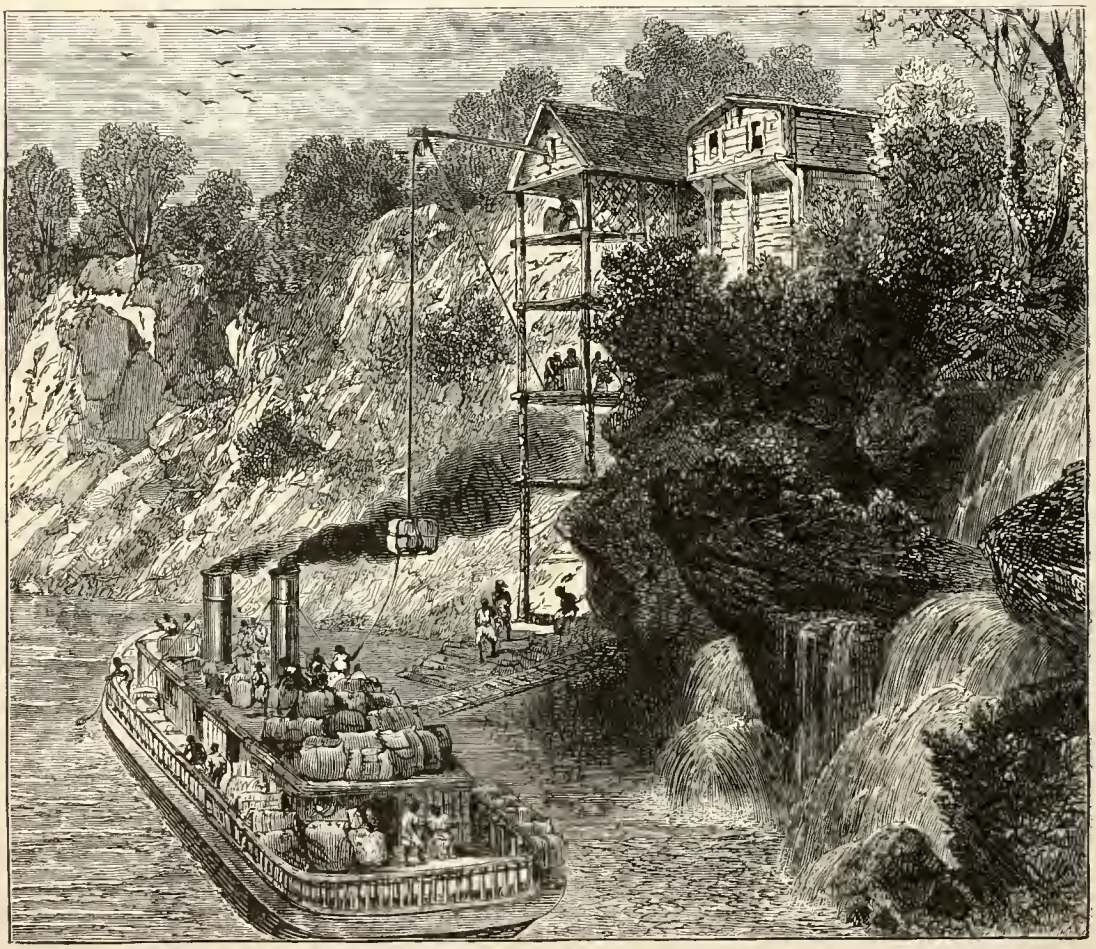
The battle was renewed at eight o'clock the next morning. It was necessary to dislodge the confederates from a range of steep and wooded hills. General Sigel, under cover of his artillery, threw his infantry regiments forward so as to threaten the position of the enemy. The fight lasted two hours, and was of the fiercest character, but the union batteries succeeded in silencing those of the confederates, and the union line pushed on with fixed bayonets, while the heavy guns still poured their fire into the weakened ranks of the enemy. The latter fought with great bravery, but they were driven steadily into the open ground behind. General Curtis ordered the center and the right wing forward. The confederate left was turned, the center broken, and before the simultaneous advance of the union army the enemy fled for refuge among the trees of Cross Timber Hollow. The confederates were badly defeated, while the federals regained their communications.

On the 9th General Van Dorn sent in a flag of truce, and asked permission to bury his dead. Curtis granted the request, but charged his adversaries with tomahawking, scalping and mangling the bodies of the dead. Van Dorn, in his reply, expressed the hope that Curtis had been misinformed, and said that his Indian allies had been regarded for years as civilized. Van Dorn, in turn, charged the Germans with committing atrocities, while General Sigel insisted that his countrymen had been savagely treated by the confederates. In the turmoil and excitement of battle, civilized men often lose control of themselves and do things which at other times they would view with horror.

Respecting Albert Pike's Indians, it has been stated that they proved almost as dangerous to their friends as to their enemies. In the way of discipline they were uncontrollable, and scalped confederates and unionists alike.

After their defeat, the confederates withdrew toward the north, to obtain re-enforcements and to re-organize. General Curtis was also re-enforced from Kansas and Missouri, and stayed at Keetsville for the rest of the month. In April, he moved toward Springfield, Missouri, on learning that Price was advancing toward the same point. Nothing resulted, and Curtis went back to Arkansas, taking a south-easterly direction.

Some months later Curtis found himself in a position of grave danger. He was



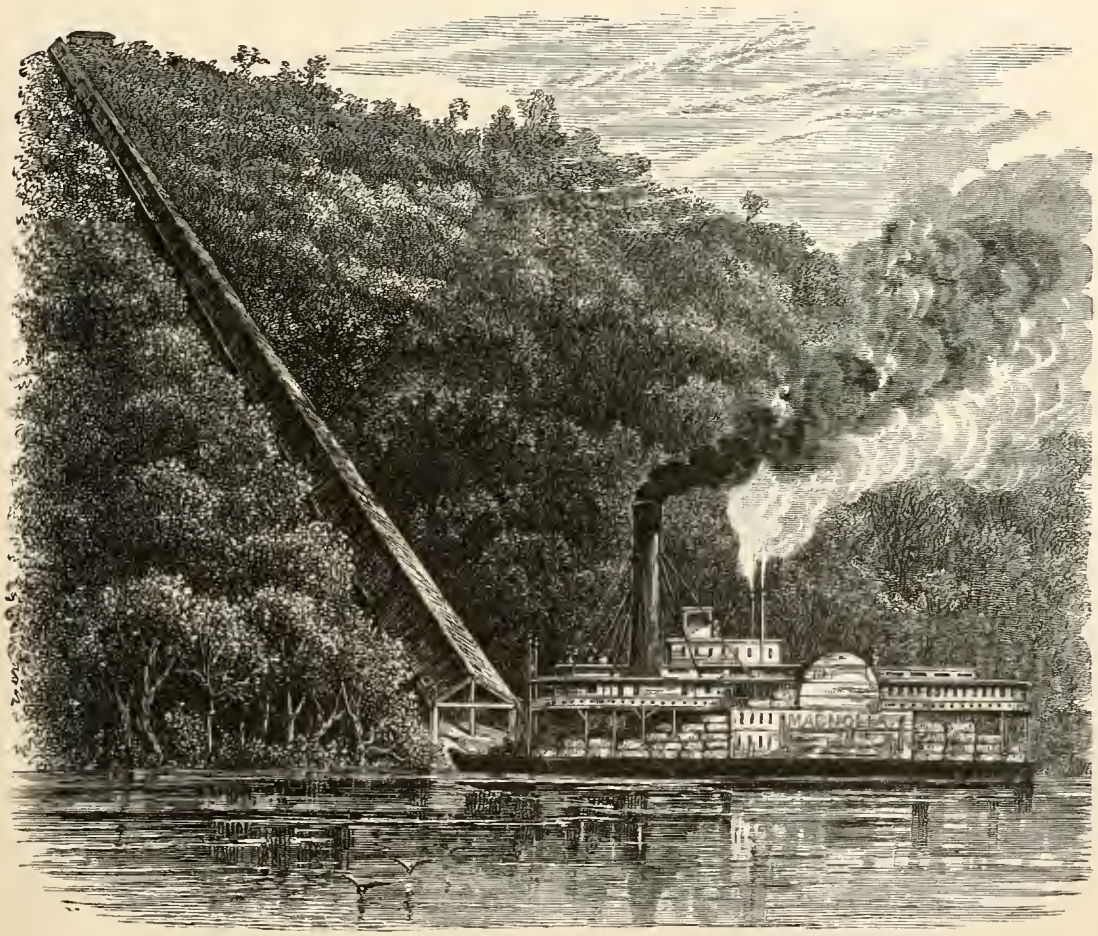
LOADING A COTTON STEAMER.

established at Batesville. His supplies ran short, and as he was in a hostile country, surrounded by enemies, a great deal of anxiety was felt for him and his men. In June an expedition was fitted out at Memphis to descend the Mississippi to the mouth of the Arkansas, and thence to ascend the White River to Batesville. The attempt failed, but stores afterward sent by land from Missouri reached Curtis about the 1st of July.

Curtis moved from Batesville to Jacksonport, and finally established himself at

Helena on the Mississippi. In September, he was made commander of the department of Missouri, embracing that state, Arkansas and the Indian Territory. Skirmishes and minor engagements followed, but none was of a character to affect the progress of the war. The confederates wished to penetrate into Missouri and regain their power north of Arkansas. The unionists did what they could to defeat the attempt, and they succeeded.

The battle line between the North and South extended so as to reach from Virginia



VIEW OF A COTTON-SHOOT.

to New Mexico. In the latter section General Sibley was at the head of a small force of Texan confederates. Some of the forts and posts in that far-off region were held by the federals, and the confederates, being without heavy guns, were not strong enough to drive them out. Skirmishes and desultory fighting took place, but there was only one engagement that amounted to any thing. This was fought February 21, 1862, and is known as the battle of Valverde. The opposing forces were General Sibley and his Texans on one side, and Colonel Canby and the garrison of Fort Craig on the other.

Sibley and his force marched from Messilla, Arizona. Learning that his foe was within thirty miles, Colonel Canby marched out with a large force to fight him; but, being unable to find the enemy, he returned. A few days later, two thousand confederates appeared in front of the fort, but retired without making an attack. Colonel Canby sent Major Duncan with a squadron of cavalry to harass them. The Texans continued retreating down the valley of the Rio Grande, and on the 21st took up a position at Valverde, some distance below Fort Craig. The federals crossed the river with a battery of six pieces and two mountain howitzers, and attacked them. The fighting was desperate and lasted most of the day. The Texans made furious efforts to capture the battery that was doing so much execution, and they finally succeeded, though at great expense of life. Some of the New Mexican volunteers on the federal side had fled in panic and the regulars refused to obey orders. At this moment of confusion, the Texans charged with their terrific war-whoops, shot down every gunner at the battery, and turned it upon the federals, who fled in confusion.

Colonel Canby had sixty-two killed and a hundred and forty wounded, besides losing his battery. He was obliged to retreat to Fort Craig, where he was unmolested, General Sibley's forces being too much crippled to warrant an attack.

Skirmishing and desultory fighting continued, but the confederates were unable to make any progress toward conquering New Mexico. The house of representatives in Richmond passed a resolution of thanks to General Sibley, his officers and men for their victory at Valverde, but General Sibley himself declared that the value of New Mexico to the confederacy was not worth one-quarter of the blood shed in the campaign.

CHAPTER VIII.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE MONITOR AND THE MERRIMAC.

WHEN the Norfolk navy-yard was burned in 1861, the frigate *Merrimac* was set on fire and scuttled. She sank before the flames did her much harm and the confederates brought her to the surface and transformed her amazingly. The *Merrimac* had been a frigate of 3,500 tons and forty guns, and was more than three hundred feet in length. She was cut down to her old berth-deck, and both ends for seventy feet were covered over so as to be even with the water when she was in fighting trim. On the mid-ship section a roof of pitch-pine and oak one hundred and seventy feet long, was built at an angle of forty-five degrees. It reached from the water line to a height of seven feet above the gun deck, and was twenty-four inches thick. Both ends rounded so that pivot-guns could be used as bow and stern chasers. This wooden backing was covered with iron plates (prepared in the Tredegar Works, Richmond, from railroad iron), two inches thick and eight inches wide, and was smeared with grease to divert the shots fired against it. The prow was of cast iron projecting four feet; the pilot-house was forward of the smoke-stack, and covered with four inches of iron. The rudder and propeller were unprotected, so they were the weakest part of the formidable iron-clad.

The vessel was rechristened the *Virginia*, but the name did not stay with her, and she will always be known in history as the *Merrimac*. She carried ten guns, eight at the sides, one at the stern and one at the bow. Her massive iron armor sloped down her sides, so that when in motion she looked like an enormous mansard roof floating over the water. Her commanding officer was Commodore Franklin Buchanan, who formerly had charge of the Washington navy-yard. Under him were Lieutenant Catesby R. Jones, the executive officer, six other lieutenants, six midshipmen, surgeons, engineers, and other officers, besides a crew of three hundred men. These latter were shipped in such a hurry that they were strangers to each other and to the ship. Workmen were engaged on the *Merrimac* up to the hour of sailing, so that little time was gained in which to drill the crew in the management of the iron-clad.

The *Merrimac* could move but slowly, and steered so badly that, with her enormous length, it took her a full half-hour to turn, while her draft of twenty-two feet of water confined her to a narrow channel in the Roads. But she was faster than any wooden sailing vessel, and with her prodigious weight and iron horn could sink any vessel that floated.

George M. Brooke, who had resigned from the United States navy-yard when the South seceded, was the man who remodeled the *Merrimac*. Great pains were taken to keep all the facts of her construction a secret from the Washington authorities, but it became known that the confederates were shaping a strange craft that should astonish

the world, as in fact it did. It was told in our capital that some fine morning this monster would steam out of Norfolk, demolish all the shipping there, pass up the Potomac, and, after laying Washington in ashes, would devastate all the northern sea-coast cities. These rumors seemed so absurd that most people laughed at them, but there was uneasiness in many quarters. The capture of New Orleans (where the confederates used armored vessels) had not yet taken place, and there was enough uncertainty as to what a genuine iron-clad could do to cause thousands to await with anxiety the coming of the *Merrimac*.

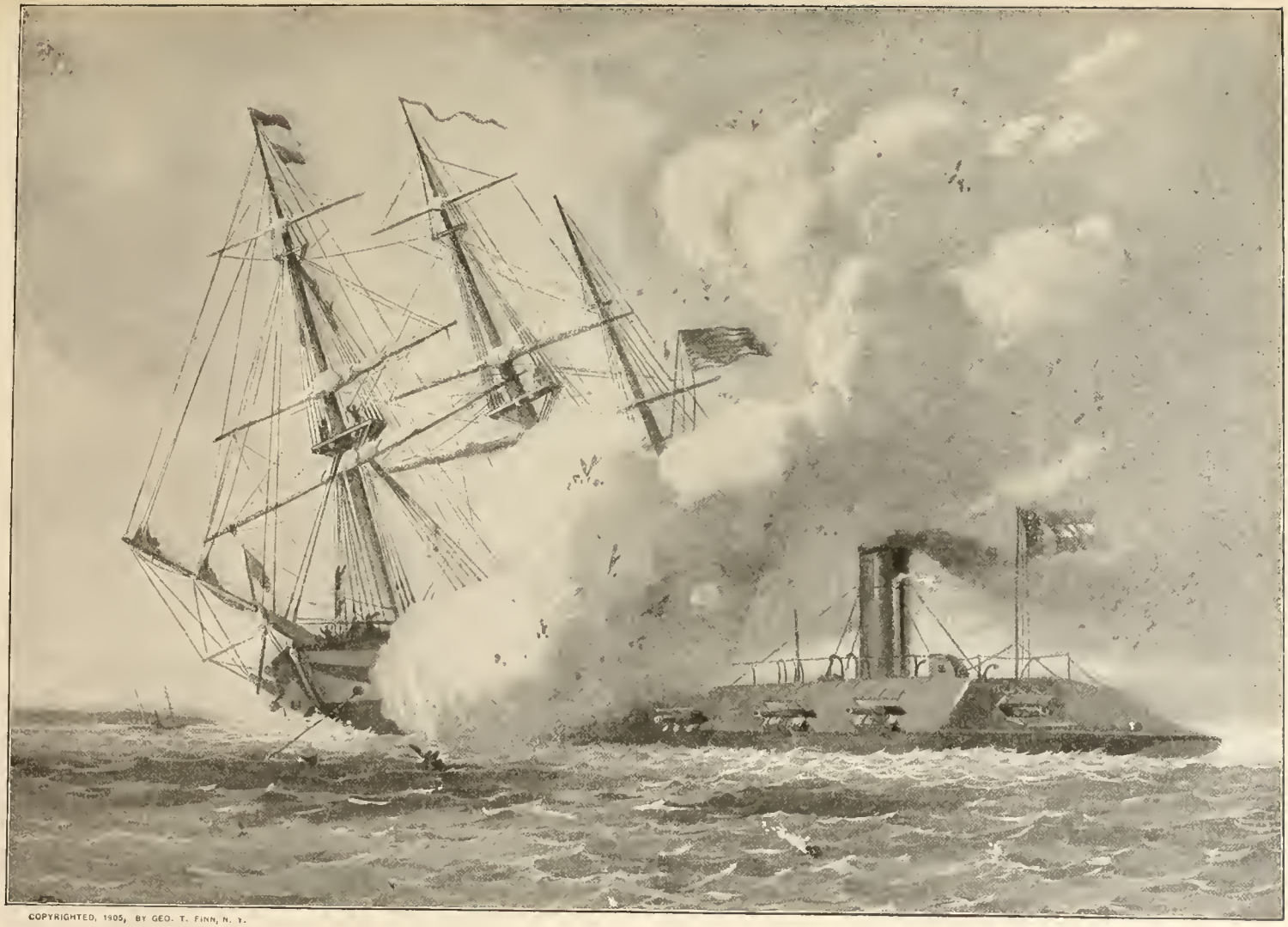
The real mission of this iron-clad was to clear Hampton Roads of the union fleet

BATTLE OF PITTSBURG LANDING.

that lay at anchor there. This consisted of five vessels under the command of Captain Marston of the *Roanoke*. He and the other commanders had heard all kinds of reports about the *Merrimac*, and you may be sure they were on the watch for her.

A column of black smoke was seen creeping along the clear sky, in the direction of the Norfolk navy-yard, at noon on the 8th of March, and, shortly after, the vast hulk was observed forging slowly through the water. At last the dreaded *Merrimac* was coming out on her errand of death and destruction. She was accompanied by three gun-boats, ready to give whatever aid they could.

The union fleet cleared for action, which was to be one of the strangest naval con-



COPYRIGHTED, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

THE "MERRIMAC" SINKING THE "CUMBERLAND."

Drawn by G. Walter Gibson.

flicts in the history of the world. The vessels were the steam frigates *Minnesota* and *Roanoke*, and the sailing frigates *Congress*, *Cumberland* and *St. Lawrence*.

The *Minnesota* and *Roanoke* at once advanced to meet the *Merrimac*, the former meaning to run her down, but both got aground. The *Cumberland*, commanded by Lieutenant George U. Morris, swung herself across the channel, so as to bring her broadsides to bear, and began to fire pivot-guns as soon as the iron-clad was within a mile. The huge metal balls bounded from her sides as harmlessly as peas from the hide of a rhinoceros. The only result was to shoot away her flag-staff. She made no reply, even when the *Congress* added her broadsides to those of the *Cumberland*. The pilot of the latter declared that he saw the cannon balls bound from the *Merrimac* like balls of rubber. Never before had a craft floated that could endure such a terrific bombarding. The broadsides of the *Cumberland*, however, knocked off the muzzles of two of the *Merrimac's* guns, riddled the steam-pipes and smoke-stack, and killed and wounded twenty-one men.

The *Merrimac* now began to use her guns, one shell killing four marines and five sailors on board the *Cumberland*. This was followed by a murderous broadside which mowed down officers, marines and sailors.

The *Merrimac* now swung around, steamed a mile up the James, and turning again came down under full speed, and crashed into the *Cumberland* under the starboard bow. The shock knocked every man on board from his feet and straightened the heavy cable chain like a violin string. It keeled the ship over until her yard-arms almost touched the water, and tore a hole as large as the head of a hogshead, through which the water rushed like a mill stream. The prow of the *Merrimac* was broken off, but her immense shot pierced the wooden sides of the *Cumberland*, killing and wounding scores, and setting the vessel on fire. The brave crew not only put out the flames, but returned the fire with a vigor that speedily would have destroyed an ordinary vessel, but the shots were seen to bound hundreds of feet upward, without doing any damage. It was with strange feelings that the crew of the *Cumberland* saw the iron monster throw off these enormous shot, driven with such prodigious force.

"Surrender that ship, Morris, or I'll sink her!" shouted Lieutenant Jones, a former classmate of Lieutenant Morris, through one of the port holes of the *Merrimac*.

"Sink her, then," called back Morris; "I'll go down with her first!"

The next minute the red flag, meaning "no surrender," was run up to the fore-truck of the *Cumberland*.

Again the *Merrimac* dashed against her victim, her guns doing murderous work. The decks of the frigate were covered with blood, but there was no faltering. As fast as one crew of a gun were killed, others took their place, and the unequal battle continued. There is no sea fight in all history where such heroism was shown, for the struggle was hopeless for the *Cumberland* from the very first.

While this destruction was going on, Commodore Buchanan was in full view on the upper deck of the *Merrimac*, directing operations. A daring sailor named Cavanagh on the *Cumberland* twice attempted to leap on the iron-clad when she came within reach, for the purpose of killing the confederate commander. He struck the sloping roof each

time, but could not hold on, and slipping into the water, swam back to the *Cumberland*. The latter sank fast and her guns were fired after the water was knee deep on her decks. Then, as she was going down, Lieutenant Morris shouted:

"Save yourselves, boys! Each for himself, and God for us all!"

Every boat had been shot away except one, which was filled by those who first reached it. The wounded were in the after cock-pit, and the chaplain went down with them, all perishing together. A number of the uninjured were shot while in the water, but others succeeded in swimming to Newport News. Lieutenant Morris sprang over as his vessel went down and was saved. The *Cumberland* sank to her cross-trees in fifty-four feet of water, the stars-and-stripes still floating from her top-mast. Of her crew of 376 men, 121 lost their lives.

The *Merrimac* having destroyed the *Cumberland*, now turned her attention to the *Congress*, which was aground. Getting astern of her at a distance of two hundred and fifty yards, she raked her fore and aft, while one of the gunboats attending the *Merrimac* kept up a fire on the starboard quarter. The unwieldy iron-clad slowly forged back and forth, while her guns poured their resistless fire into the helpless *Congress*, which sent back broadside after broadside only to have them glance off the impenetrable mail as before.

It was evident from the first that there was no escape for the *Congress*. One hundred men, including her commander, had been killed, and every shot from her assailant meant death to many more. To stop the slaughter, the flag of the *Congress* was hauled down and a white pennant hoisted at the peak in token of surrender.

As you may well suppose, the officers and men at Newport News watched with consternation the destruction of the two frigates. They kept up a continual fire on the iron-clad, but could do her no damage. Commodore Buchanan, seeing the white flag fluttering from the peak of the *Congress*, ordered two of his gun-boats to steam alongside, take off the men and set fire to the frigate.

Lieutenant Smith of the *Congress*, who was killed, was succeeded by Lieutenant Pendergrast, who gave up his sword and colors to Lieutenant Parker of the *Beaufort*, one of the gun-boats alongside. The confederate ordered him to return to his ship and have the wounded taken off as rapidly as possible.

Meanwhile, the federal forces at Camp Butler kept up a hot fire on the confederate gun-boats. The shore was lined with sharp-shooters, who picked off officers and men on the decks and rigging. Confederate officers shouted to General Mansfield to stop firing, and pointed to the white flag of the *Congress*.

"She may float the white flag," shouted the general in return; "but we don't!"

The shots from Newport News burst the steam chest of one of the confederate tug-boats alongside the *Congress* and drove both away. At the same time another shot exploded the steam chest of one of the confederate gun-boats, which floated off and grounded on Sewall's Point. The fire quickly became so hot that the gun-boats were driven away with only thirty prisoners.

Seeing that he could not take possession of the *Congress*, Commodore Buchanan ordered her fired with hot shot. This was done, and in a short time she was in flames fore

and aft. Lieutenant Pendergrast was still on board with most of his men, who sprang into the water and swam for shore. Many of them died after being assisted to land.

One of the federal sharp-shooters succeeded in striking and badly wounding Buchanan in the thigh. He was taken below, the command devolving upon Lieutenant Jones. But it was now five o'clock and growing dark. The *Merrimac* had done awful work for one day, and she therefore steamed to Sewall's Point, intending to return in the morning and complete her task. Her flag-staff had been repeatedly shot away, and during the latter part of the fight, the colors were kept flying from the smoke-stack and a boarding-pike. At Sewall's Point, Commodore Buchanan and the other wounded were sent to the naval hospital. As one of the officers remarked: "We slept on our guns dreaming of other victories on the morrow."

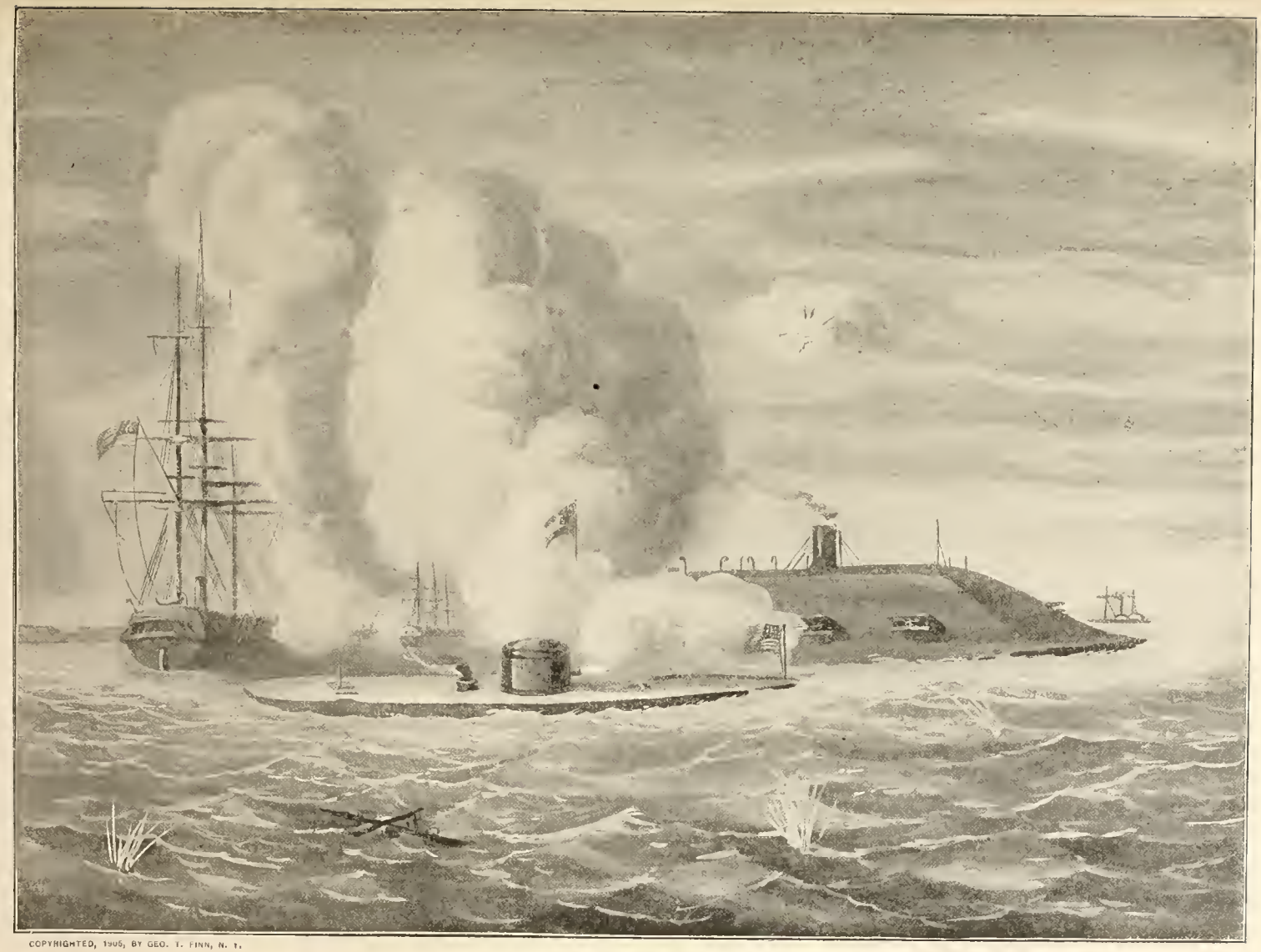
The news of the exploits of the *Merrimac* was received in Washington and Richmond the same night. In the latter it caused the wildest rejoicing, and in the former a feeling akin to dismay. President Lincoln called a cabinet meeting upon receiving the news.

"The *Merrimac*," said Secretary Stanton, "will change the whole character of the war. She will destroy, *seriatim*, every naval vessel. She will lay all the cities on the seaboard under contribution. I shall immediately recall Burnside; Port Royal must be abandoned. I will notify the governors and municipal authorities in the North to take instant measures to protect their harbors. We may even receive a shell or a cannon-ball from the *Merrimac* in the White House."

The *Congress* burned all through the night, and was watched by the soldiers at Newport News and at Sewall's Point and by the sailors on board the *Minnesota* lying aground. For hours the flames worked their way up the masts and spars, until they were outlined in fire against the dark sky. At intervals loaded guns and shells exploded, the heavy reports echoing from every headland of the bay. At two o'clock in the morning, a tremendous flash was followed by a sheet of flame which lit up the whole sky. The magazine had exploded, but the hull remained intact and continued to burn until after daylight.

One of the most industrious and gifted of men died in the city of New York in 1889 at the great age of eighty-six years. John Ericsson was born in the province of Vermeland, Sweden, and when a small boy attracted notice by his wonderful inventive powers. He served a number of years as engineer in the Swedish army, and then went to England, where he introduced several important inventions, which won him a number of medals and prizes. One of these inventions was the propeller, which not being well received he brought to the United States in 1839. You have not forgotten the account of the steamer *Princeton*, which, while cruising on the Potomac in 1844, under Commodore Stockton, exploded one of her enormous guns, killing the secretary of the navy and a number of other people. The *Princeton* was built by Ericsson, in 1841, and was the first propeller made for our government. It had other ingenious inventions of Ericsson that have since come into general use.

This remarkable Swede, then about three-score years old, had been at work for a long time on a war-vessel of unique pattern, which was about to be put in service. It



COPYRIGHTED, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

FIGHT BETWEEN THE "MONITOR" AND "MERRIMAC."

Drawn by G. Walter Gibson.

was more like a raft than a ship of war, and was composed of two parts, forming really an upper and lower vessel. The upper was shot-proof above water-mark, and was 172 feet long, the length of the lower vessel being 124 feet. The upper was five feet deep and the lower six and a half feet, with a breadth in the one case of 41 feet, 4 inches, and in the other of 36 feet at the top and 18 feet at the bottom. The sides of the upper vessel were made of oak, twenty-five inches thick and covered with five inches of iron armor.

The most novel feature was the turret, made of eight-inch plates of rolled iron, increasing in thickness to the port holes, where it was eleven inches through. The deck consisted of eight inches of solid oak covered with two-inch plates of wrought iron. The pilot-house was made of nine-inch plates of forged iron: this proved not to be strong enough. The height of the turret was nine feet and the diameter twenty-one feet and the craft drew ten feet of water. She was armed with two eleven-inch Dahlgren guns, smooth bore, firing solid shot weighing 180 pounds. She was capable of a speed of five knots an hour. During action her smoke-stacks were taken apart and laid flat on the deck, the draught to the engines being maintained by strong blowers. The top of the pilot-house was covered with an iron plate two inches thick, not fastened but kept in place by its weight alone, the purpose being to afford an egress for the crew in case of necessity. The pilot-house presented a flat surface on all sides and on top. It rose four feet above deck, and was barely large enough to hold three men standing. From the commander's post to the pilot-house, he directed by signal the steering of the vessel and the movement of the turret. The *Monitor* was only one-fifth the size of the *Merrimac*, and in appearance she has been aptly compared to a cheese-box on a raft.

The preparations for her departure were so hurried that the mechanics worked upon her night and day up to the hour she sailed. She was commanded by Lieutenent John L. Worden, with Lieutenant S. Dana Green, a youth of only twenty-two, as executive officer. Her crew were all volunteers. No one was anxious to take command of the novel craft, it having been offered to several before Worden assumed charge. It was a fortunate day for him when he did so, for it made him an admiral, although, as I shall show you, Lieutenant Green was entitled to fully as much glory and yet received no recognition of his great services.

The *Monitor* had a hard time of it on her voyage southward. With a crew of 16 officers and 42 men she left New York on Thursday morning, March 6, in tow of a tug-boat. She escaped foundering only by the skill and desperate efforts of her officers and crew. In spite of all that could be done, the berth-deck hatch leaked, and the water ran through under the turret like a waterfall and was driven through the small eye holes in the turret with a force that knocked the helmsman from the wheel. So much water forced its way through the blower-pipes that the belts of the blower-engines slipped. This stopped the artificial draught and the fires could not get enough air to support combustion. When the two engineers rushed into the engine-room they were overcome by gas and could not be revived until they were carried to the top of the turret. The water then poured through the hawser-hole

and down the smoke-stacks and blower-pipes in such quantities that the vessel was in danger of sinking. The engine-room was so full of gas that no one could stay there, and the steam ran so low that the steam-pumps could not be worked. The crew resorted to the hand-pumps, which were not strong enough to throw the water through the top of the turret, the only opening for it.

Fortunately the wind went down, or the *Monitor* would have sunk. By and by the engines were started again, but in the night the weather became rough once more and the wheel-ropes were jammed. Officers and crew toiled all night, and toward morning smooth water was again reached.

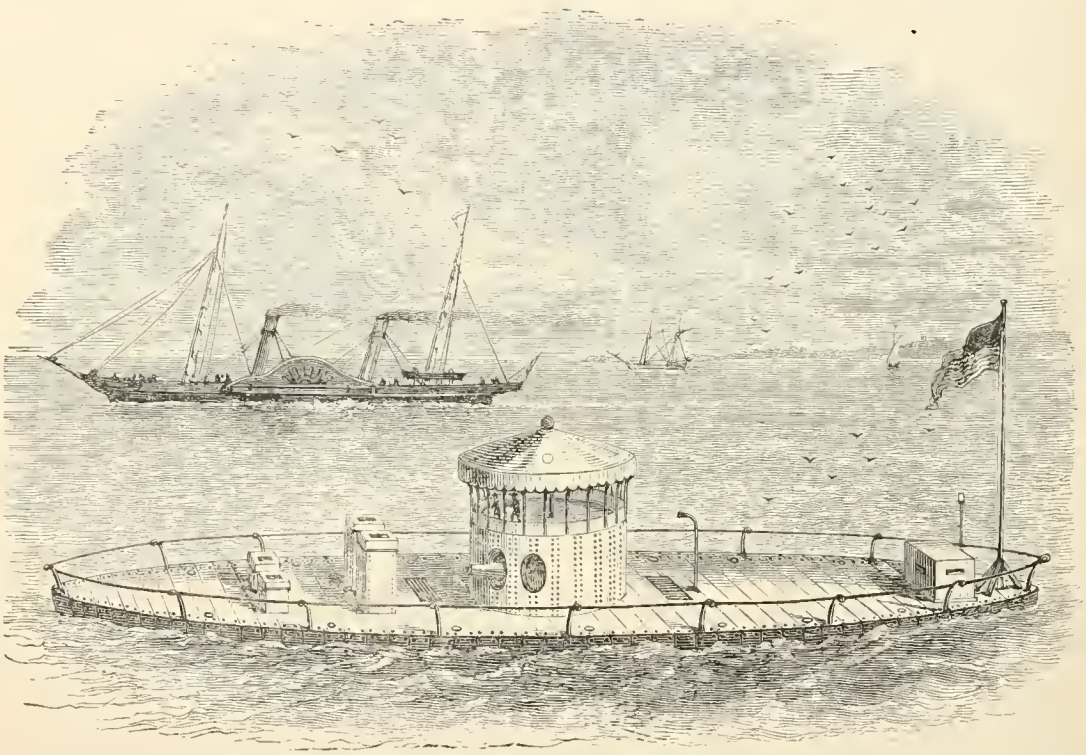
The *Monitor* continued stealing southward night and day, and on the afternoon of March 8, while passing Cape Henry, she caught the boom of the *Merrimac's* guns as she fired her red-hot shot into the doomed *Congress*. About ten o'clock that night she steamed into Hampton Roads, unknown to the enemy. Her crew watched the burning *Congress*, by whose glare they saw the topmasts of the *Cumberland* above the water, with the stars-and-stripes fluttering from the peak. Respecting the physical condition of the crews of the *Merrimac* and the *Monitor*, Lieutenant Green said that those on the confederate boat had passed the night near Sewall's Point, her people enjoying rest and sleep, elated by the thoughts of the victory they had achieved that day, and cheered by the prospects of another easy victory on the morrow. The *Monitor* had barely escaped shipwreck twice within the last thirty six hours, and for forty-eight hours few, if any, of those on board had closed their eyes in sleep, or had any thing to eat but hard bread, as cooking was impossible.

At daylight the next morning, the *Merrimac* steamed out, accompanied by two of the gun-boats, anxious to finish her work. Before the monster reached the helpless vessels, the odd-looking *Monitor* darted out from behind the *Minnesota*, and boldly advanced as if to challenge the *Merrimac* to mortal combat. It was like David going to meet the vaunting Goliah.

The first shot was fired by the *Monitor*, when only a hundred yards separated the iron-clads. The *Merrimac* replied and the firing continued with much rapidity for a time, and then more slowly. The space between them varied from fifty to two hundred yards. Most of the shots of the *Merrimac* passed over the low deck of the *Monitor*, but a number struck squarely against the pilot-house and turret. The detonations were so terrible that the gunners were almost deafened. Lieutenant Green, with two assistants and sixteen men, had charge of the guns of the *Monitor*.

Despite the tremendous shots of the *Merrimac* against the turret of the *Monitor* the latter continued to revolve, and the gunners gained confidence. The nimble *Monitor* dodged about her huge antagonist, seeking a vulnerable spot. Once she made a dash at the stern to disable the screw, but missed the mark. Acting-master Stodder was injured by the shock received when leaning against the turret, at the moment it was struck by one of the shots of the *Merrimac*. Early in the action the speaking tube from the pilot-house to the turret was broken, so that the commander could only communicate with his executive-officer by means of signals. This added to the difficulties, since a number of messages miscarried.

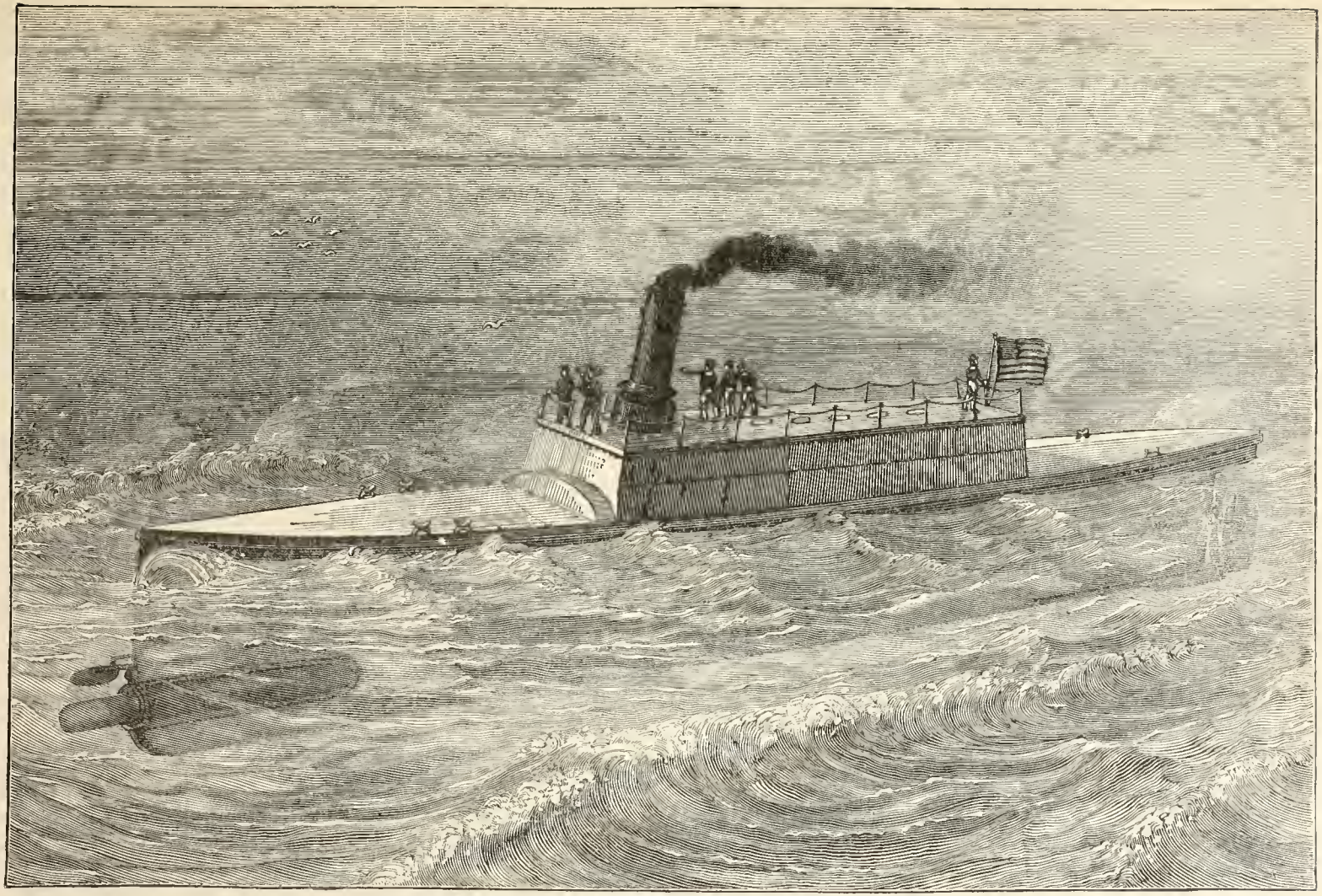
The *Merrimac* made a furious rush at the *Monitor*, which deftly dodged her, and at the same moment, Lieutenant Green planted a hundred and eighty pound shot upon the forward part of the other's casement. The battle raged for several hours in this manner at close quarters, the *Merrimac* firing shell, while the *Monitor* used only solid shot. About noon a shell struck the sight hole in the forward part of the pilot-house of the *Monitor*, lifting the iron plate, and completely blinding Lieutenant Worden, who was standing behind it; the flood of light led him to think his boat was badly injured, and he gave orders to sheer off, leaving Lieutenant Green in command. Lieutenant



A MONITOR, AND BLOCKADE-RUNNER.

Green instantly ordered another attack on the *Merrimac*, but she had already turned about and was laboriously making her way toward Norfolk. A number of shots were sent after her, but she did not stop or make any reply. No person had been killed on either side.

The striking result of the fight between the *Monitor* and *Merrimac* was a revolution in the method of conducting naval warfare. Nations like Great Britain and France, that possessed enormous navies of wooden ships, saw that all would be helpless before the attack of an iron-plated vessel. The days of "wooden walls" were over: that of iron-clads had come. The United States at once contracted with Captain Ericsson for a fleet of "Monitors," which were used in blockading the southern ports. For a time our country was the greatest naval power in the world.



THE "DESTROYER" TORPEDO-VESSEL OF CAPTAIN ERICSSON.

CHAPTER IX.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE FALL OF NEW ORLEANS.

ONE of the most important events of the year 1862 was the capture of the great city of New Orleans.

You can see from its situation that it is one of the most important commercial cities in this country. The enforcement of the blockade ruined its commerce, and the feeling in that city was very bitter toward the federals. A river fleet employed against the blockading squadron was increased, and several iron-clads were in course of construction.

It was a question during the early days of the war whether New Orleans should be attacked from the direction of the Gulf of Mexico or by a fleet descending the Mississippi. The general belief was that the city was secure from any assault below, having lines of defense. The outer line consisted of forts Jackson and Philip, on opposite banks of the river. Bear in mind that while these forts were twenty-five miles above the mouth of the Mississippi, they were seventy-five miles below New Orleans. They were garrisoned for the most part by regular troops, many of whom had formerly been in the army of the United States.

The second line of defense was established among the woods and swamps that line the river banks between New Orleans and the Gulf of Mexico. This was meant to guard against the approach of infantry, though the stream was defended by two ranges of cannon. Too little attention was given to the second line, which had been weakened by the withdrawal of many of the large guns forming the river batteries.

New Orleans was in no condition to resist a well organized expedition, though its defenses were of a formidable nature. Forts Philip and Jackson mounted one hundred guns. Some distance below the forts a boom of hulks and logs connected by chains, stretched across the river. Above this lay a confederate fleet of fifteen vessels, including the iron-clad ram *Manassas*, and an unfinished floating battery, covered with railroad iron, and known as the *Louisiana*. The city had been almost stripped of troops to re-enforce Beauregard's army in Tennessee. Three thousand ninety-day volunteers had been raised to take their place, but they were poorly armed.

For months the national government had been preparing a tremendous naval and military expedition for the capture of New Orleans. The fleet was under the command of Commodore Farragut, and consisted of six sloops of war, sixteen gun-boats, five other vessels, and twenty-one mortar-schooners. The schooners, under charge of Captain David D. Porter, each carried one thirteen-inch mortar, the combined and continued fire of which it was hoped would demolish the forts. General B. F. Butler commanded the land forces, which were mostly New England troops.

The first installment of soldiers arrived at Ship Island, in the Gulf of Mexico, off the

COPYRIGHTED, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

CAPTURE OF NEW ORLEANS. (*See page 90.*)

Drawn by A. R. Waud.

Mississippi coast, in December, 1861; the next came in January, and the squadron under Farragut followed soon after.

While the forces were at Ship Island, a reconnoissance was made to determine the best means of approaching the city, which could be reached through Lakes Borgne and Pontchartrain, or by the Mississippi itself. The former route was impracticable because of the shallowness of the water, and it was decided to advance by way of the river.

Even this route was found difficult, the water being of much less depth than was marked on the maps—due probably to the fact that the channel had partly filled during the stagnation of commerce since the blockade. The *Colorado* drew so much water that she could not get over the bar at South-west Pass, and it took two weeks to work the *Pensacola* over, so that it was three weeks before the natural obstruction was passed. The mortar-schooners went through Pass à l'Outre.

The gun-boats and mortar-vessels crept stealthily up stream, their masts and rigging wreathed with bushes, to deceive confederate observers. The station for the fleet was twenty-two miles below the forts, whence the gun-boats were sent up stream to assail any of the enemy's craft within reach, and to shell the woods so as to drive out confederate sharpshooters.

The troops were taken in transports through Pass à l'Outre to Table Island, and thence in smaller boats to a point twelve miles in the rear of Fort Philip on the north-eastern bank of the stream. Soon after, two schooners from the mortar fleet entered a bayou in the rear of Fort Jackson, and by the 13th of April, several gun-boats were within two miles of the fort.

Fire was opened with the mortars on the 18th and continued without intermission for six days and nights, during which period more than eight hundred tons of iron were launched at the forts. Fort Jackson received the most attention. The citadel was set on fire during the first day. The officers' quarters were burned the second day and the artillerists driven from the parapet guns. About fifty men were killed or wounded, but the fort did not suffer materially. Hundreds of the shells sank fifteen or twenty inches in the mud, where their explosion did no harm.

During the six days of bombardment, the forts could not do much in the way of reply, owing to the short range of their guns. Fire-barges, piled with kindling wood, and smeared with tar and turpentine, were sent down the stream by the confederates in the hope of destroying the fleet, but they were caught by boats and towed ashore, where some of them set fire to the wharves of Fort Jackson and helped the federals to aim their guns with greater accuracy.

On the night of April 20, no fire-ships drifted down the Mississippi, and Lieutenant C. H. B. Caldwell, in the gun-boat *Itasca*, went up the stream to open a passage through the boom that still barred the channel. Boarding one of the hulks, he slipped the chain and made an opening large enough for the passage of the fleet. The *Itasca* was swept ashore by the current and exposed to the fire of Fort Jackson, but she got safely off.

Farragut now called his captains together and told them that he had resolved to run by the forts; what he wished was their advice as to the best means of doing it.

It was decided to make the passage during the darkness, and every thing that could be thought of was done to conceal the boats. The crews of some of the vessels smeared them from stem to stern with mud; others whitewashed the decks; some lined the bulwarks with hammocks and splinter nettings, and at the suggestion of J. W. Moore, engineer of the *Richmond*, cables were hung over the sides of all the vessels, in line with the engines.

On the night of the 23d, Lieutenant Caldwell again went up the river to see whether the passage was still open. It was not yet midnight when he signaled that the way was clear and every vessel was made ready for action.

The intention had been to take advantage of the moonless night, but the blazing fire rafts lit up the river as at noonday. It was almost three o'clock on the morning of April 24 when the fleet got under way. Captain Theodorus Bailey in the *Cayuga* led the first division, consisting of eight vessels. They threaded their way through the opening, and sailing close to Fort Philip, poured in grape and canister as they went by.

Beyond the fort the *Cayuga* found herself in a swarm of confederate gun-boats. One was fired and ran ashore and another driven off. The *Varuna* and *Oneida* were directly behind the *Cayuga*. The latter rammed one of the vessels of the enemy, and cut her nearly in two. The *Varuna* was struck by two gun-boats, and crippled so severely that she sank. Her commander, Captain Boggs, fired his last broadside when the water was running into the muzzles of his cannon. He sent a shell into the boiler of one of his assailants, blowing her up, and then escaped with most of his crew.

The *Mississippi* collided with the confederate ram *Manassas*, and after a sharp fight boarded her, set her on fire and left her to drift down stream and blow up.

All the while the federal fleet was pushing up the river. The second division was was led by Commodore Farragut's flag-ship *Hartford*. Sailing close to Fort Jackson, the commodore gave it a broadside, and then crossed over to bestow the same compliment on Fort Philip. Just then the *Hartford* grounded on a shoal and she was set on fire by a blazing raft that was thrust against her. A part of the crew soon put out the fire, while the rest worked her guns, and she soon backed off into deep water.

A few minutes later, a steamer swarming with boarders approached the *Hartford*, but a shell skillfully dropped exploded with such effect that the steamer went to the bottom of the Mississippi. The rest of the division, and the third division, led by Captain H. H. Bell, of the *Sciota*, followed. Two of the federal gun-boats caught in the boom, and one was disabled by a shot that pierced her boiler, but every vessel of the confederate fleet was either captured or destroyed. The union loss was thirty-seven killed and a hundred and forty-seven wounded. The loss in the forts was fifty-two; it is not known how many were killed in the confederate fleet.

Having been so successful, Commodore Farragut resolved to continue up the river to New Orleans. A regiment of confederate troops on shore was forced to surrender, and on the morning of the 25th the Chalmette batteries of the second line of defense were encountered three miles below the city. It was a small matter to silence them: then New Orleans lay at the mercy of the invaders.

At noon on the 25th, Farragut sent Captain Bailey ashore to demand the surrender

A SLAVE AUCTION.
Pen drawing by Charles Harris.

of the city. General Lovell had withdrawn the troops intended for the defense. The mayor refused to haul down the secession flag, but the unionists took possession, raised the stars and stripes over the Mint, and turned the city over to General Butler, who had received the surrender of the forts. The governor of Louisiana had also fled, calling upon the planters to burn their cotton, so as to prevent it falling into the hands of the invaders. In compliance with this proclamation, 250,000 bales were destroyed.

The inhabitants of the captive city were in a desperate mood. Burning steamers, fire-rafts and blazing cotton-ships drifted down stream. The vast amount of cotton stored along the levee for miles was fired, and the black mass of smoke pouring upward darkened the whole sky. The people swarming on shore were as savage as tigers, and any one who dared to express friendship for the federals was shot down at once. Captain Bailey himself was in personal danger when he first landed to demand the surrender, but a few cooler heads protected him, and Farragut soon placed his war ships so as to command the city.

The people were so violently hostile that the patience of the conquerors was sorely tried. At one time, Commodore Farragut threatened the city with bombardment, but fortunately the necessity for such a terrible chastisement passed away.

The capture of New Orleans was a severe blow to the Confederacy, and there was little fight left in Louisiana. On the morning of the 24th, when Farragut ascended the river with his fleet, Commodore Porter, whose detachment of gun-boats and mortar-vessels still lay below, prepared to engage the forts and such remnants of the confederate fleet as might remain. A demand was sent to the forts for their surrender, which being refused, bombardment was opened on the 26th, the call for surrender being repeated on the following day.

Porter proposed generous terms to the garrisons, whose officers wished to continue the fighting, but the soldiers were unwilling to keep up a defense that was useless. When tidings came of the fall of New Orleans, and it was learned that General Butler had cut off the retreat of the garrison, the troops refused any longer to obey orders. Seizing the guns, they turned them from the ramparts. Several of the cannon were spiked and the officers who ventured to interfere were fired upon. A number of the men deserted and surrendered to Butler's pickets. Realizing at last that they were powerless, the officers sent a boat to Commodore Porter on the morning of the 28th with a letter stating that the forts would be surrendered on the terms proposed.

The union commander was rowed to Fort Jackson, where he was engaged in discussing the terms of the capitulation, when he observed the confederate iron-clad *Louisiana* in flames and drifting toward the union fleet. She had been towed to a point above the forts, her guns shotted, and the vessel fired, in the hope that it would blow up in the middle of the union fleet. Commodore Porter regarded this act as a breach of faith, but, unable to learn all the facts at the time, he sent word to the captains of his ships to be on their guard, and he continued the negotiations.

Just abreast Fort Philip, the *Louisiana* blew up with a terrific report, and the heated guns scattered shot and shell in every direction. One of the fragments killed a confederate soldier in the fort, but no other damage was done. On the conclusion of the surren-

der, Commodore Porter made prisoners of the officers and crews of the vessels afterward taken, and considering that they had acted treacherously toward him by firing the *Louisiana*, he sent them north.

On the 1st of May, General Butler took formal possession of New Orleans. He at once wrote to Secretary Stanton giving an account of the wretched condition of the people, and intimating that he meant to compel a respect and obedience to the laws. His rule in New Orleans was very strict and stern — so much so indeed that the fury of the South was roused against him.

He virtually placed the city under martial law. His proclamation was sent to the offices of the newspapers, one of which refused to publish it. Thereupon he took forcible possession of the office, and selecting compositors from his own forces, set up and printed the proclamation.

New Orleans being secure, the union steamers went up the Mississippi to Baton Rouge, the capital, which they captured without any resistance. Still ascending the river, they took Natchez, and the position of the Confederacy became so critical in the south-west that the confederates evacuated the forts and navy-yard of Pensacola on the southern coast of Florida. The intention of General Jones, the commandant, was to transfer to Mobile all the weapons, stores and machinery he could carry, and then to burn the public buildings of Pensacola.

This, however, was a difficult matter, for the federals were posted on Santa Rosa and occupied Fort Pickens, besides which a number of union vessels were known to be lying off Mobile. Nevertheless, the confederates managed the task with much success and ingenuity. "Quaker guns" were mounted on the works, and every thing was done to conceal the movements of the garrison. Some valuable material was first sent by rail, and some by a small steamer, to a place of safety. On the 9th of May the infantry marched out of town. Three companies were left to fire the buildings.

The bursting out of flames was the first hint that the federals received of what was going on. The garrison of Fort Pickens opened a furious bombardment, and on the arrival of Commodore Porter and his fleet, the military and naval officers demanded the surrender of Pensacola. The civil authorities complied at once and a force was immediately landed which succeeded in saving considerable property; but the destruction was enormous.

I have told you that the rule of General Butler in New Orleans was stern, but the population was so turbulent that sternness was a necessity. On the 10th of May, he seized a large amount of specie deposited in the office of the Dutch consul, under the belief that it belonged to the confederate government or was about to be expended in its behalf. All the consuls in New Orleans protested, but Butler would not recede.

That which brought the severest criticism, however, was his "woman order," issued on the 15th of May. The women of the city had shown their spite toward the union soldiers in such an offensive manner that General Butler ordered that whenever any of them "by word, gesture or movement" insulted the officers and soldiers, such women should be treated as indecent street-walkers. Mayor Monroe wrote an angry note to General Butler on the subject, whereupon Butler ordered him arrested and committed to

Fort Jackson. The mayor hastened to apologize, and the order for his imprisonment was recalled. The bad taste of the "woman order" was condemned, not only in Europe, but by many in the North.

The circulation of confederate paper money ceased in New Orleans on the 29th of May, in accordance with the orders of General Butler, and on the 1st of the following

COMMODORE FARRAGUT.

month, the port was declared open for commerce. He continued to rule the city with an iron hand. Suspected parties were arrested, and the newspapers were suppressed for urging the destruction of the sugar and cotton crops. William B. Mumford hauled down the American flag on the 26th of April, after it had been raised over the Mint. Not only that, but he dragged it through the mud and tore it in strips. He was arrested, tried before a military commission, and on the 7th of June hanged.

Some of Butler's orders were beneficial. The bakers and venders of food were not allowed to charge more than a certain tariff fixed by the city authorities, and the sentence of death was executed on two federal soldiers convicted of robbery—these three being the only military executions that took place during the occupancy of New Orleans by General Butler. Furthermore, he commuted the sentence of death passed by a court martial on six confederate soldiers, who, taking advantage of their parole at Fort Jackson, tried to raise a company to serve in the army of General Beauregard.

On the 25th of July, an order was issued declaring that all slaves leaving the city by

THE BANKS OF THE MISSISSIPPI.

direction of their masters were free. The following month a tax was levied on disloyal corporations and firms for the benefit of the poor. The property of prominent secessionists was confiscated, and all the inhabitants were disarmed by order of the military commandant. In the same month, a number of negro troops were organized into the Native Guards, and placed in the service of the United States. On the 24th of September, Butler ordered all Americans, male and female, to renew their allegiance to the United States, and at the same time to render an accurate return of their property. The penalty

for a refusal was fine or imprisonment at hard labor. You will be surprised when told that 60,000 persons complied with this order. The city was never so thoroughly clean as it was under Butler's rule, and, as a natural consequence, no yellow fever visited where it had so often raged with great virulence.

General Butler was superseded by General Banks on the 14th of December. He tried a lenient course, but his kindness was mistaken for weakness, and he was forced in self-defense to use harsh measures.

CHAPTER X.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE PENINSULAR CAMPAIGN AGAINST RICHMOND.

ALTHOUGH many more stirring incidents took place in 1862 in the west, there were tremendous struggles in the east to which we must give attention. Bear in mind that the military movements and battles of which you have learned were practically simultaneous, as were those of which I shall now proceed to speak. The battles of General Grant—the capture of Fort Donelson and Island Number Ten — the battle of Pittsburg Landing, the evacuation of Corinth by General Beauregard, the fight between the *Monitor* and *Merrimac*, and the fall of New Orleans — all took place during the early months of the year.

Momentous events were, at the same time, taking place in the east.

When the new year opened, General McClellan was still drilling and disciplining the army of the Potomac. He had made it one of the finest armies in the world; but, since you have been told much about General Grant, let me point out a strong difference between these two able military leaders.

McClellan spent week after week and month after month in drilling his army, in order to make sure that when the time came for fighting his men would be fully prepared. While he was thus employed, the confederates were doing the same thing. Consequently, at the end, say of six months, the armies held the same relative position toward each other that they did at first: much valuable time had been lost and nothing gained.

Now, Grant was as strong a believer in discipline as McClellan, but he drilled, as may be said, "on the run." As soon as he could throw his forces into any kind of shape, he went to fighting, knowing that if his men were undisciplined it was the same with the enemy: by going into camp for the sake of drill, he gave his foes opportunity to do the same; the advantage was nothing, while much was lost by the delay.

McClellan had an army of two hundred thousand around Washington, and, as the weeks and months went by with the same tiresome drill, and the same vague promise that there would soon be a forward movement, the North could not conceal its impatience. Some of the leading papers in their references to the magnificent force that lay inactive headed their articles, "O Lord, how long!" This impatience at last was so outspoken that it could not be unheeded.

In the month of March, 1862, came signs that the army of the Potomac was about to advance upon the confederate army which barred its passage to Richmond, the capital of the Confederacy.

President Lincoln was not in accord with McClellan as to the best method of conducting the campaign against Richmond. McClellan's plan was to advance from the lower part of Chesapeake Bay, by way of Urbana, on the Rappahannock. The town

was not far from the confederate capital, and could be reached by vessels of heavy draught. Once occupied, the enemy would have to give up his positions near Manassas, as well as the batteries erected on the lower Potomac, so that he could protect Norfolk and Richmond.

You will observe that such a campaign would leave Washington unprotected, and an attack from the confederate army would be quite certain to follow. Should a force be left behind at the national capital, its numbers would have to be such that it would seriously weaken the grand army marching against Richmond. The president thought it better to move around Alexandria on the intrenchments at Bull Run. On the 27th of January, he issued an order directing that on February 22 following, there should be a general movement of the land and naval forces against the enemy's position on the Potomac; and that all the disposable force of the army of the Potomac, after providing for the defense of Washington, should be formed into an expedition for seizing and occupying a point upon the railway south-west of Manassas Junction.

McClellan naturally enough felt annoyed that this plan should have been announced without first letting him know that his proposed scheme had been set aside. He remonstrated with the president and insisted that the route by the Chesapeake was much the better one; but while admitting the force of many of McClellan's arguments, Mr. Lincoln clung in the main to his first views. But the weeks slipped by and the grand army remained idle. There were, indeed, occasional skirmishes between the reconnoitering forces of the two armies, but they amounted to little. In the latter part of February, a detachment of the union army superintended the rebuilding of the railway bridge at Harper's Ferry, and the re-opening as far as Hancock, of the line from Baltimore to Ohio, which had been cut by the confederates.

In January, 1862, Cameron, Lincoln's first secretary of war, retired from the Cabinet. He had never secured the confidence of the public, for, although an adroit politician, he could not rise to the high plane of disinterested patriotism demanded by the times. Finally, after various demands for the secretary's removal, the president took action, avoiding a rupture by making Cameron Minister to Russia, and appointing as his successor Edwin M. Stanton of Pennsylvania, who had acted as attorney-general during the last few weeks of President Buchanan's administration. There can be no doubt that Stanton was one of those who were impatient with the delay of McClellan, for the disposition of the president to take important steps without consulting the commander of the army became more marked after the accession to office of the new secretary of war. McClellan says that during Cameron's term of office he was supported cordially by the department and had been led by Stanton's professions of personal friendship to expect an equally loyal support under the new incumbent. He attributed the immediate change in the department's attitude toward him and the breaking up of his intimate relations with the president directly to the hostility developed by the new secretary.

It is true that immediately upon Stanton's assuming office there was a radical change in the conduct of military affairs, and consequent friction between the department and the commanding general. But this condition was not so much the result of

BENJ. F. BUTLER.

personal feeling as the direct outcome of the personal characteristics of the two men. Stanton was a man of intense, often immoderate, force and energy, of passionate feeling, which sometimes led him to indiscreet expressions, and blunt to the point of rudeness. But with it he was intensely sincere and patriotic, and he would allow no private considerations or claims to interfere with his view of public duty. These characteristics inevitably came into collision with McClellan's weakness for concealing his purposes, his lack of definite policy, and his jealousy of his military rights. Two orders were soon issued by Lincoln: one directed the formation of the army into corps and appointed generals to the command of those corps, the other made arrangements for the intended advance, leaving to McClellan the responsibility of carrying them out.

News having been received that General Joseph E. Johnston, commander of the confederate forces at Manassas, was withdrawing his lines with the view of taking up new positions, a forward movement of the army of the Potomac was begun on the 10th of March. McClellan's plan of advance from the Lower Chesapeake had been discovered by spies in Washington, and General Johnston's action was with the view of defeating such movements.

President Lincoln, however, still clung to his plan and the course of the confederate commander rendered McClellan's proposal more difficult to carry out than before. It was, therefore, decided that the union army should march toward Centreville and occupy the positions vacated by the enemy. There was much dissatisfaction in the North that the latter should have been allowed to escape without a battle, but there was no help for it. The roads were in such bad condition that pursuit was out of the question.

The confederates after using the railways to remove their stores to their new positions had destroyed the rails, sleepers and bridges. The surrounding country was so desolated that a flying column of federals which had pushed its way to Cedar Run without enough rations, ran some danger of starving before its return.

The main body of the army crossed the Potomac into Virginia, and McClellan made his headquarters at Fairfax Court House. While there, he read in a newspaper an order of President Lincoln, stating that since the general had personally taken the field at the head of the army of the Potomac he was relieved, until otherwise ordered, of the command of the other military departments. It was ordered also that all the commanders of the departments should thenceforth communicate directly with the secretary of war.

While at Fairfax Court House, McClellan and his four corps commanders, Sumner, McDowell, Heintzelman and Keyes, agreed upon a plan of operations; and on the 13th of March, President Lincoln issued an order directing the manner in which it should be carried out: "First, leave such a force at Manassas Junction as shall make it entirely certain that the enemy shall not re-possess himself of that position and line of communication. Secondly, leave Washington entirely secure. Thirdly, move the remainder of the force down the Potomac, choosing a new base at Fortress Monroe, or anywhere between here and there; or, at all events, move such remainder of the army at once in pursuit of the enemy, by *some* route."

The next day McClellan issued an address to the army, in which he declared that the period of inaction had passed, and that he was about to lead to battle "a real army,

Portrait of Abraham Lincoln

ABRAHAM LINCOLN

magnificent in material, admirable in discipline and instruction, excellently equipped and armed." The hopes of the loyal North were aroused to a high point.

On the 16th, the several divisions of the army of the Potomac were massed in new positions near Alexandria, ready for embarkation, which was begun the following week. It was found, however, that there were not nearly enough transports, and no more than half the troops could be put on board. They were to be sent to Fortress Monroe, but two weeks passed before the whole effective force of 85,000 men could be sent to that position. A part of General Sumner's corps stayed behind, until relieved by other troops, to guard Manassas. Provision was also made to protect Washington against attack by the enemy.

Previous to this, McClellan had ordered General Banks to rebuild the railway from Washington to Manassas and Strasburg, so as to open communication with the Shenandoah Valley; to post a strong force at Manassas and at Strasburg, with block-houses at the railway stations; to throw out pickets as far as Warrenton Junction, and the line of the Rappahannock; and to keep an unremitting patrol with cavalry in all directions where there was any danger of the enemy attempting to get in his rear. This was a proper precaution, for the confederates were in force in the Shenandoah Valley.

Banks occupied Winchester on the 12th and 13th of March, and General Shields advanced beyond that town to Strasburg. He found such a strong force of confederates in the neighborhood, under Stonewall Jackson, that he fell back to Winchester. At that place, after the departure of most of General Banks' corps, he was attacked by Jackson. The engagement was a fierce one, and the confederates were repulsed. The battle caused much uneasiness in Washington, for it was uncertain what the confederate strength was in the Shenandoah.

McClellan's new campaign, as he explained, made Fortress Monroe the first base of operations, taking the route by Yorktown and West Point upon Richmond, as the line of advance. The fall of the confederate capital involved the conquest of Norfolk and all of Virginia. McClellan believed he could fight a decisive battle between West Point and Richmond, and that the enemy, fully aware of the momentous character of such a contest, would concentrate all his forces to meet him. West Point was to be reached without delay, and used as the chief depot of the federal forces. The best method of reaching that point was by means of a combined naval and military attack on Yorktown; then pushing a strong corps up the York River, under cover of the gunboats, and establishing the new base of operations at the distance of twenty-five miles from Richmond.

Such in brief was the plan of General McClellan for striking the Confederacy a mortal blow, and restoring the supremacy of the Union. For its execution he wanted 150,000 men and 400 guns.

The first division of McClellan's army was embarked in the latter part of March, but the general himself remained at his head quarters near Alexandria, until most of his forces were on their way to the Yorktown peninsula. While waiting, he received a letter from President Lincoln saying that he felt compelled to order the detachment of Blenker's division, amounting to 10,000 men, to the support of Fremont, but he promised that no more should be withdrawn from the army of the Potomac.

2551918

On the 1st of April, McClellan and his staff embarked on a river steamer for Fortress Monroe. The troops were landed on the 4th, and the first detachment of 56,000 men with 100 guns began their march on Yorktown. About the same time, the mortifying announcement reached the commander that the garrison and other forces at Fortress Monroe were detached from his command, and that he was not to take any men from that place without the sanction of General Wool, the commandant.

But for the excessive caution of McClellan, he might have marched straight up the Peninsula without paying any attention to Yorktown. General Magruder was the commander there and had only ten thousand men, and the federals could easily have overwhelmed them. Magruder's defenses consisted of a line of intrenchments reaching from Yorktown to a point on Warwick Creek, one of the tributaries of the James. These intrenchments were more than thirteen miles long. Warwick Creek was dammed up, and guarded with batteries and earthworks. Yorktown itself was slightly fortified, but the York River was defended by water batteries and by a number of works at Gloucester Point. It is easy to see how weak a line of five thousand men must be when extended over thirteen miles, for Magruder placed half his force at Yorktown and Gloucester Point, and strung the rest along the path to the Warwick.

McClellan decided to lay regular siege to Yorktown. He thus threw away his opportunity, for every day's delay gave the confederates time in which to strengthen themselves. General Johnston gained a chance to send re-enforcements to Magruder, whose power of resisting the unionists must soon be increased tenfold.

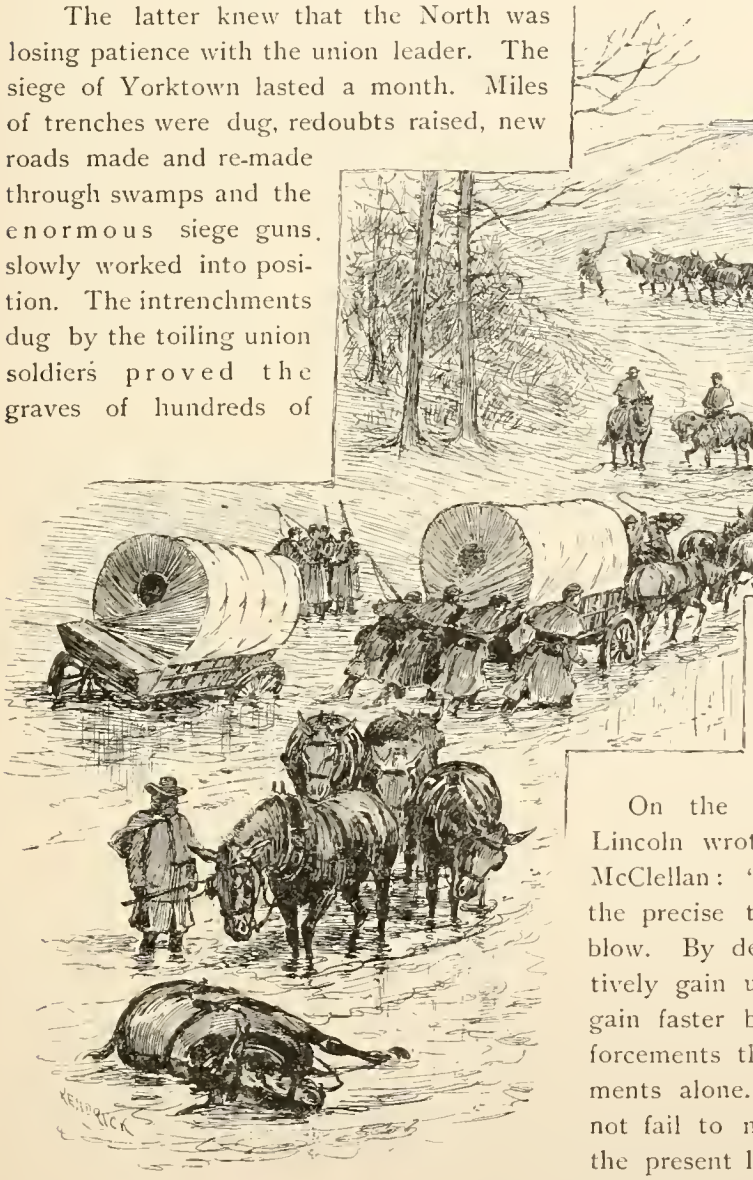
It was a wearisome and laborious siege. The fine weather changed to wet; rain fell continually and it required the most herculean labor to drag the enormous siege guns through the muddy swamps; infantry and cavalry suffered alike, and the spirits of all were depressed, for there was not the least need for the delay and exhausting toil in the malarious swamps of the Peninsula.

An advance line of intrenchments, thrown up by Magruder, was found deserted and was occupied by the federals. The left column, under General Keyes, met with little resistance until it reached Lee's Mills, standing on Warwick Creek. There a heavy fire was opened from the other side of the stream. With his natural timidity, McClellan feared the place could not be taken by assault, and he concluded to await the arrival of the rest of his army and his heavier guns, before risking an attack. Magruder was anxious, for he had such a small force that he knew that McClellan, if he chose, could sweep it from his path; but, when he saw the union commander laboriously throwing up batteries, he smiled, and drew a sigh of relief. Re-enforcements were hurrying to him and his condition must soon be vastly improved.

All this time Richmond was without any real defenses and the magnificent army of the Potomac could not have been kept back except by the single person who did it,—its own commander. The latter was counting on the arrival of his first corps under McDowell, which he expected would land near Gloucester Point and turn the confederate defenses at Yorktown by marching on West Point. This corps, however, as he soon learned, had been detached by the secretary of war to protect Washington. Stonewall Jackson's attack on Shields at Winchester caused uneasiness in Washington and led

to the use of McDowell's division for the defense of the capital. The commanders of the corps had agreed that 45,000 men were necessary to render Washington safe, and, inasmuch as only 15,000 had been left by the departure of McClellan, no fault can be found with the course of the president.

The latter knew that the North was losing patience with the union leader. The siege of Yorktown lasted a month. Miles of trenches were dug, redoubts raised, new roads made and re-made through swamps and the enormous siege guns slowly worked into position. The intrenchments dug by the toiling union soldiers proved the graves of hundreds of them. It would have been a saving of life had a battle been risked at first and a defeat encountered.



MOIST WEATHER AT THE FRONT.

On the 9th of April, President Lincoln wrote a very plain letter to McClellan: "I think," he said, "it is the precise time for you to strike a blow. By delay, the enemy will relatively gain upon you: that is, he will gain faster by fortifications and re-enforcements than you can by re-enforcements alone. . . . . The country will not fail to note—is now noting—that the present hesitation to move upon an intrenched enemy is but the story of Manassas repeated."

The weeks spent in the siege of Yorktown gave to the confederate commander the opportunity he wished. He concentrated his army on the Peninsula, and prepared new intrenchments nearer Richmond to which he could retire, if driven from the first. He arrived on the 17th of April, bringing with him 35,000 men, thus raising the confederate

force to 53,000. Ten days before he came, McClellan telegraphed to Washington that Johnston was in his front, and without doubt the union army, numbering only 85,000, would be confronted by 100,000 men, if not more, of the enemy. President Lincoln replied that from McClellan's own returns he had 108,000 soldiers under his immediate command, while others were on the way. In the vast army at the command of the union commander were 10,000 cavalry, 55 batteries of artillery, making a total of 330 field-guns and a siege-train of 103 guns. At his back was Fortress Monroe with its garrison of 10,000.

While re-enforcements reached the confederates, McClellan's numbers were also increased. A division of McDowell's corps arrived at Shipping Point with orders to help the army before Yorktown. It numbered 10,000, under the command of General Franklin.

The first parallel within a mile of the Yorktown batteries was finished at last. The construction of other parallels went on unceasingly. The federals employed balloons in making reconnoissances; one hundred and even two hundred pound rifled cannon, and 13-inch mortars were placed in position. Four steam gun-boats, taking position within two or three miles of the Yorktown batteries, shelled the place at long range, without much effect. The two-hundred pounders worked better than was anticipated.

At last, when May came, every thing was in readiness to open the grand bombardment that was to demolish Yorktown. On the morning of the 4th, it was reported that a great fire was raging in the place. Heintzelman went up in a balloon and took a view of the confederate camp. He speedily made the mortifying discovery that Johnston and his army had gone, taking every thing of account with them.

McClellan telegraphed exultingly to Washington that he held the entire line of the enemy's works and had thrown all his cavalry and horse-artillery in pursuit. He promised to lose no time, but would press the enemy to the wall.

The disappointment, when the truth became fully known, was intense throughout the North. The confederate army had simply fallen back to a stronger position; it had gained time for strengthening the defenses of Richmond, and it was now close to the sultry summer months, when the union soldiers were sure to suffer greatly in the miasmatic swamps, through which they were laboring with so much difficulty.

The pursuit of the confederate army of Yorktown was conducted by General Stoneman. It was found that torpedoes had been placed in the roads and gateways, and others were found near springs of water; General McClellan employed his prisoners in removing them. One of the federal balloons sent aloft revealed the retreating columns only a few miles distant. They were marching in good order and seemed to be in no special fear of their pursuers. The federals hoped to cut off a part of the rear guard, but were unable to do so. The trees, and rugged nature of the ground, hampered the pursuing cavalry, so that their progress was slow.

About the middle of the afternoon, General Stoneman's advanced guard, emerging from the woods, caught sight of the confederate rear guard near Fort Magruder. The fort at once opened fire, and the cavalry made a determined effort to capture the position, but were obliged to retire. The infantry division lost its way, and did not arrive soon enough to take part in the fight.

The federals camped that night in the woods. The rain fell in such torrents that the roads could be passed only by laying down planks. This delay, of course, aided the confederates to the same extent that it delayed their pursuers. The withdrawing columns halted at the narrowest part of the peninsula between the James and York rivers, and began to fortify themselves at the city of Williamsburg.

The shipping and gun-boats had come up to Yorktown, where the federal depots were established. General Franklin's division was sent by water to the neighborhood of West Point, and ordered to head off the retreating army. At noon on the 5th of May, McClellan learned that a serious engagement was going on at Williamsburg. He instantly mounted his horse and started to the front to take command.

Longstreet, commanding the rear of the confederate retreat, saw on reaching Williamsburg that it was necessary to check the pursuit of the federals until the trains and artillery could get beyond reach. The action began between seven and eight in the morning, when Hooker's division of Heintzelman's corps with infantry and artillery attacked the confederates. The forts opened on these advancing columns and drove them back with the loss of five guns. Retreating to the shelter of the woods, they held their ground until other divisions could go to their assistance; but the muddy roads delayed the arrival of the supports. Sumner, misunderstanding the situation, sent Hancock in the wrong direction, but that good soldier, nevertheless, gained a decided advantage.

McClellan had to ride twelve miles to reach the battle ground, and the route was difficult. Enormous bodies of artillery, cavalry and infantry, with their baggage, crowded the forest paths, and the rain poured in torrents on the men, who floundered through the mud, until, utterly worn out, they flung themselves on the ground and slept.

Guided by the sound of the cannon in front, McClellan threaded his way through these masses of men until, at half past five, he arrived on the scene. "Little Mac" was greeted with ringing cheers as he was recognized, and he went to work at once. The confederates were attacked with the bayonet and driven back. Just as it was growing dark the battle ended, and the federals bivouacked in the woods.

It may be said that the latter gained a victory, but, if so, it was a barren one. Longstreet had held them in check as long as he wished, and when he resumed his retreat, McClellan made no attempt to follow him. The cavalry captured a few stragglers and some abandoned guns.

The confederates were on their way to Richmond, about fifty miles distant, and the federals followed at a slow pace. Franklin's division, with those of Sedgwick, Porter and Richardson that were not in the fight at Williamsburg, went by water to West Point, opposite to which, on the 7th of May, Franklin's advanced brigades landed on the right bank of the Pamunkey. At this point, they were attacked by General Whiting, but with the help of the gun-boats, they held their ground. The rest of the federal army came along during the following three days.

The severe check given the federals enabled the confederates to enter Richmond with their baggage and supply train. They abandoned the Yorktown peninsula, and evacuated Norfolk, which was occupied by General Wool the next day, the confederate force marching into Richmond on the 10th of May.

CHAPTER XI.

EVENTS OF 1862. PENINSULAR CAMPAIGN AGAINST RICHMOND,—CONTINUED.

I MUST remind you once more that the events described in several of the preceding chapters took place during the early part of 1862. It was just one week after the fight between the *Merrimac* and *Monitor*, that the divisions of the army of the Potomac were massed in new positions near Alexandria, ready to embark for Fortress Monroe, preparatory to the campaign against Richmond. The naval fight just mentioned took place on the day after the battle of Pea Ridge in Arkansas.

At the close of the preceding chapter, it was stated that the confederate army of General Johnston, with baggage and supply-train, had entered Richmond on the 10th of May, and that General Wool of Fortress Monroe had occupied Norfolk. Both shores of the James were thus in the possession of the union forces. Commodore Tatnall, who succeeded Commodore Buchanan in the command of the *Merrimac* when the latter was wounded, was determined to take the iron-clad up the James beyond reach of the federals, but the pilot assured him that owing to the prevalence of westerly winds, the depth of the water had so decreased that she could not pass beyond Jamestown Flats, where she would be within reach of the union guns. Convinced that the craft could not be saved, Tatnall ordered her to be run ashore near Craney Island. This was done on the evening of May 11th, and she was set on fire and blown up.

The loss of the *Merrimac* caused much indignation in the South, and a court of inquiry investigated the matter. Tatnall's defense was that he had been deceived by the pilot, who wished to avoid a battle. Her destruction relieved the federals of a great danger, and their gun-boats pushed up the James to within twelve miles of Richmond. The confederate batteries were engaged on the 15th of May. These stood so high on Drury's Bluff, that it was hard to bring the guns of the boats to bear upon them, while the plunging shots of the batteries were so effective that the vessels were compelled to withdraw.

McClellan's forces were moving on the confederate capital by the line of the Pamunkey. On the 21st of May the advance guard reached the Chickahominy. They were now in sight of the spires and steeples of Richmond, and many believed that the city could not hold out much longer.

It was about this time that General Banks in the Shenandoah Valley became involved in a series of operations that were not creditable to him. He advanced along the north fork of the Shenandoah River and established his head-quarters at Newmarket, beyond the end of the railway that passes through the valley. On his right was General Fremont at Franklin, in the mountains of West Virginia, and to his left was

110 LIEUTENANT CALDWELL SLIPPING THE CHAIN. (*See page* 88.)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

General McDowell at Fredericksburg, which he had occupied on the 17th of April on its evacuation by the enemy.

The confederate army in that section was under Stonewall Jackson. He had fewer men than the federals, but his superior knowledge and his military ability gave him great advantage. General Banks advanced some distance up the Shenandoah, and Jackson fell back. The federal commander was so sure of capturing the famous confederate leader that he telegraphed to the government that Jackson was in a dangerous position where he would be speedily crushed. There would seem to have been some grounds for this belief, for the confederate force was between that of Banks coming from the east, and the advance guard of Fremont's army approaching from the west. By swift marches, however, the wily Jackson got safely away from Banks and hurried to the relief of a confederate detachment threatened by Milroy's division. Utterly routing the latter, Jackson whirled about and assailed Banks, while he was conducting his troops over difficult mountain paths.

With the suddenness of a cyclone, Jackson appeared before Colonel Kenly at the head of 1,200 federals at Front Royal, near one of the passes in the Blue Ridge mountains, where the Shenandoah divides into the North and South Forks. Kenly tried to retreat, but he was killed and most of his command destroyed or captured. Banks sent re-enforcements to Front Royal, but hastily recalled them when he saw his own danger. He was likely to be cut off, and he began a precipitate retreat to Winchester.

This was on the morning of the 24th of May. The escort of his baggage-train, being fired upon by the enemy's pickets, were thrown into a panic, and, cutting the traces of the horses and mules, fled in disorder to the main body. The panic was causeless, for the confederates were only a detachment, through which Banks forced his way, reaching Winchester on the evening of the same day.

Banks was in as great danger at Winchester, and he concluded that the only safe place for him was on the Maryland side of the Potomac. His men were almost in despair, and when attacked on the 25th, just outside of Winchester, they were defeated and driven as far as Martinsburg, from which point they made all haste to the Potomac. So great indeed was their hurry, that they marched thirty-five miles in one day. Had the pursuit been kept up by Jackson little would have been left of Banks and his division.

There was so much alarm indeed that Secretary Stanton issued orders calling upon the militia of the loyal states to defend the national capital, and for a time the fear was general that it was doomed to fall. But Jackson's force was less than was supposed, and he made no attempt to cross the Potomac. There was some hope of cutting off Jackson by the combined operations of McDowell and Fremont, but the result of the effort was simply a weakening of McClellan's army before Richmond without the least danger to Jackson.

President Lincoln urged McClellan to attack the confederate capital at once or else give up his plan. McClellan felt no wish to abandon his scheme, and he ordered a reconnoissance in force to be pushed toward Hanover Court House. Fitz John Porter, at the head of the Fifth Corps, marched from his camp on the right of McClellan's

position at daylight on the morning of the 27th. When fire was opened on the confederates they fell back, followed by the federal cavalry and a part of the infantry, but most of the enemy reached Richmond. They had lost about 200 killed, and 730 prisoners, the union loss amounting to 53 killed, and 344 wounded and missing.

General Johnston, the confederate commander, was quick to perceive the faulty disposition of the union army. Two of the corps, forming the left wing of the army, were on one side of the Chickahominy, while the rest were on the other side of the swollen stream. Johnston believed that only Keyes' corps was on the same side with him, but enough of Heintzelman's was there to swell the force to 30,000. The four divisions of the southern army at that time under command of Johnston were those of Longstreet, Huger, Smith and D. H. Hill,—all of whom were graduates of West Point, and had formerly served in the United States army. The combined force amounted to nearly 50,000.

Johnston determined to hurl this large force upon the left wing posted on the southern side of the Chickahominy. The time of the assault was fixed for the 31st of May. On the preceding afternoon, a furious storm raged, which delayed matters, and Huger's division lost its way, so that the assaulting force numbered about 40,000.

The attack was to be made at daybreak, but a couple of hours passed before Longstreet and Hill were in position, and then they waited until noon for Huger to strike the federal left. Tired of waiting, Longstreet at two in the afternoon ordered Hill's division to open the assault.

General Casey's division was the first to receive the shock. Some of the troops fell back and the camp was captured, including the hospital and baggage-wagons. A stand was finally made, and Casey sent urgent word across the Chickahominy for help. Couch's division followed a road to the right and was soon engaged in what is known as the battle of White Oaks, that of Casey being called the battle of Seven Pines. At dusk, Heintzelman and Keyes, with the fragments of their forces, formed a new line which checked the confederates, after which the unionists fell back.

It was some time before Sumner was able to cross the river, but by means of two hastily constructed bridges, he finally placed Sedgwick's division on the other side, and marched in the direction of the firing. He met Couch at Fair Oaks station on the railway, and was told by him that in falling back from Seven Pines, his division had become separated from the rest of the corps. Before Sumner could bring his men into line, he was attacked. The battle was sharp and lasted for nearly three hours. The federals held their position until dark, and then by a charge drove back the confederates. The two armies bivouacked so near each other that their sentinels were within speaking distance.

The battle of Seven Pines was a confederate victory: that of Fair Oaks was a union success, yet both were without decisive results: all depended on the morrow.

General Johnston personally directed the attack on the right. Just at sunset he was hurled from his horse by a piece of shell and two of his ribs broken. When borne away, it was believed as usual that he was mortally wounded. The command devolved on G.

W. Smith, by right of seniority, and he held it three days, giving way to General R. E. Lee, of whom you have learned something in another place.

Had Huger's division reached the field in time, the union army on the Richmond side of the Chickahominy must have been crushed. As it was, it had been forced back two miles, had lost nine guns and a great amount of camp equipage and stores, including those of the medical department.

During the entire fight, the federal right wing had stayed on the right bank of the Chickahominy, and it was not until evening that McClellan learned of the severe check his army had received. He was suffering from chronic dysentery, but he mounted his

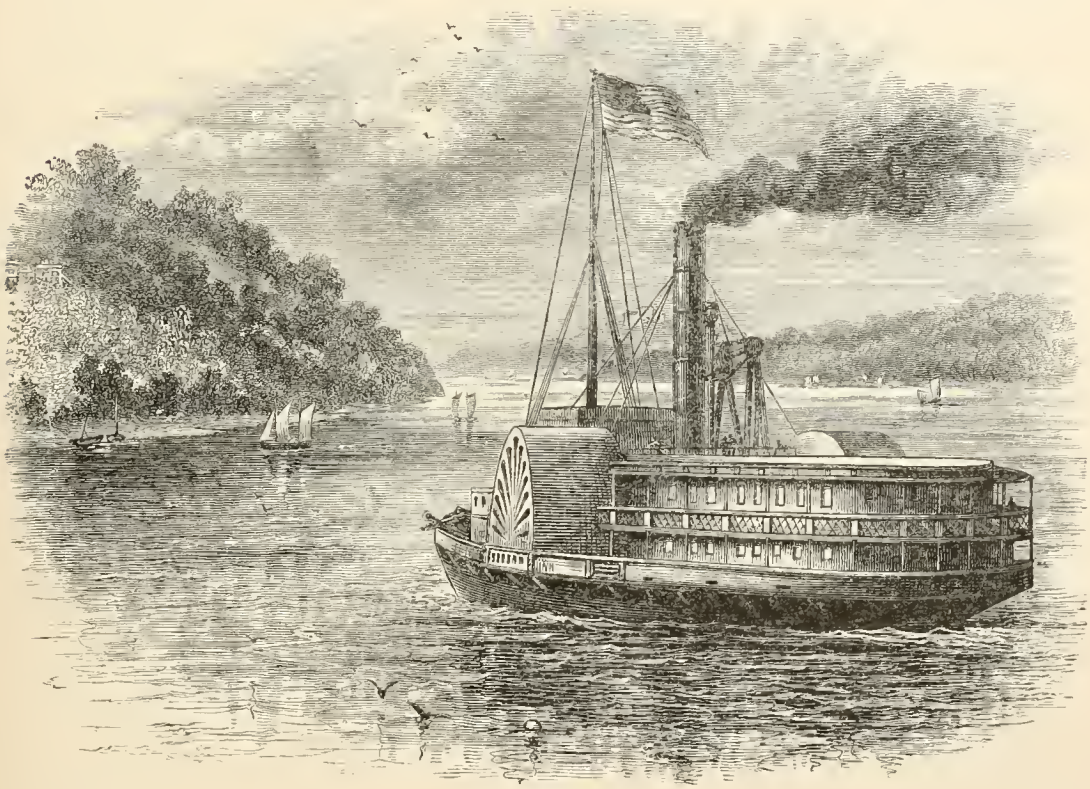
FAIRFAX COURT HOUSE.

horse and rode to Despatch station, on the Richmond and Westport Railway, where he found trains loaded with the wounded and piles of stores blocking up the station. The night was of inky darkness, and he had no certain knowledge of the position of the confederates. The morrow might bring a total rout of the whole union army.

During the night Huger arrived with his division that had gone astray, while Sumner's was strengthened by Hooker's division of Heintzelman's corps. The battle was renewed the next morning — the first day of summer. It was the federals that attacked this time. The confederates were soon driven back along the entire line, the federals regained the ground from which they had been forced the day before, and recaptured one of the guns lost by Casey's division. McClellan came over about noon. The

federal loss in the double battles was 890 killed, 3,627 wounded, and 1,222 missing. The confederate loss was probably about the same.

It was the judgment of the corps commanders that if the pursuit had been pressed, Richmond must have fallen, but McClellan spent a month in building bridges across the Chickahominy. When eleven were finished he concluded there were enough. The weather was bad, rain falling continually, as it does after the atmospheric disturbances caused by a great battle. The health of the men suffered from their horrible surroundings. During the flaming weather, the swamps became doubly pestiferous from the putrefying bodies, and the only streams from which the poor fellows could slake their



ON THE POTOMAC.

thirst were poisoned by the abominations draining into them. Both armies had intrenched themselves in their positions, and it looked as if they would stay there until they perished.

President Lincoln was blamed by many for taking McDowell's corps from McClellan, who insisted that if it had been left with him he would have captured Richmond; but the president felt that the gain of the confederate capital would not pay for the loss of his own. There was a feeling among the southern leaders that it might be best to let Richmond go, and concentrate all their energies in wresting Washington from the federal government. General Lee himself grimly remarked that it might be a good plan to "swap queens."

President Lincoln had no choice but to do as he did. McClellan had an army large enough to do the work given to him, but his timidity kept him from striking the blow which almost any other leader would have struck. It was proved that he had a much larger force than he claimed. Wearied with his importunities and complainings the president visited the army several times to look into matters for himself. On one of his visits, he called in the corps commanders, and took down from them the actual number of men in their respective commands. As they were called off, he set them down on a piece of paper and added them together. Making sure that his work was right, he handed the slip to McClellan without speaking a word. The total was just 36,000 more than that given by the commander.

The alarm concerning Washington having passed, President Lincoln decided to employ McDowell in a series of operations intended mainly to protect Washington against any sudden irruption, but at the same time to aid McClellan in his campaign against Richmond. On the 24th of May, McDowell was ordered to put 20,000 men in motion for operations in the Shenandoah Valley. You have already been told about the severe defeat of Banks by Stonewall Jackson. The latter in pursuing Banks had put his army in some danger, for he had afforded McDowell and Fremont a chance to combine and to cut off his retreat, while Banks would be in a position to take him in the rear.

Jackson, however, was warranted in his faith in himself and men. He made a feint against Harper's Ferry on the 30th of May, and retreated the next day up the valley, followed by Banks as far as Martinsburg. Fremont had left Franklin six days before, and had reached Petersburg, within thirty miles of Jackson. Determined to run down the wily confederate, Fremont's men left behind them their tents, baggage and knapsacks, that they might march with the greatest possible celerity. On the night of the 31st, Fremont halted at the intersection of the Strasburg and Winchester roads.

The march was resumed at an early hour the next morning. Just as the advance guard was crossing the last of the hills forming the eastern spurs of the Shenandoah chain, Jackson's rear guard was discovered moving south. Fremont made all haste forward, certain of overhauling the army, but the confederates could move as fast as he, and Colonel Ashby with his cavalry gave the best protection possible. Jackson took the road leading south from Strasburg; his movements were encumbered by a lengthy train loaded with the spoils of Banks' army, beside which he had two thousand prisoners. Yet he marched rapidly, burned the bridges behind him and on the 2d of June was safe beyond Woodstock.

The next day, Fremont crossed Stony Creek, and on the 4th discovered the army of Jackson drawn up at Mount Jackson. A mile in the rear of that position the road is crossed by the north fork of the Shenandoah, and it was necessary for Jackson to cover the passage of his infantry and long train over the wooden bridge by which the other bank was to be reached. This was successfully done by the artillery and cavalry, after which the bridge was burned.

The stream was too deep to be forded by Fremont, who took a day in which to rebuild the bridge, and it was not until noon that he was again under way. Harrison

burg was reached by the 6th, and in the evening a sharp skirmish took place between an advanced body of union cavalry and infantry and the confederate rear guard. The federals were repulsed, but on the confederate side the famous cavalry leader Colonel Ashby was killed.

Fremont's check was so serious that his pursuit was stopped for another day. Early on the morning of June 8th, he advanced from Harrisonburg, and, shortly after, came up with half of Jackson's army, in a strong position under General Ewell. Fremont had received a number of re-enforcements, and Shields had been pursuing Jackson by a road parallel to that taken by Fremont, while Colonel Carroll with a federal brigade was not far away.

Fremont's entire line advanced at eleven o'clock, and the fighting that followed was prolonged and desperate. At four o'clock, the federals retreated. This battle, because of a small hamlet near at hand, is known as that of Cross Keys. At the close of the engagement, Jackson's triumph was such that Fremont could not prevent him from falling on Shields' division, whose advanced brigade, under Carroll, was at Port Republic, a short distance south-east of Harrisonburg, where General Ewell had defeated Fremont.

On the 8th, Jackson, with half his force on the other side of a fork of the Shenandoah, engaged in an artillery duel with Carroll's brigade, and compelled it to retire. Despite his advantage, the confederate leader was still in a perilous situation. During the same afternoon, General Tyler of Shields' division arrived to help Carroll, so that Jackson now had Fremont's army in his rear, while Tyler and Carroll disputed his advance over the only road he could take.

On the morning of the 9th, Jackson sent most of his army across the stream by means of planks laid on wagons pushed into the water. The battle soon became general on an open plain crossed by the main highway. Most of the federal artillery was posted on a small knoll and was doing good execution, when a fierce charge of a Louisiana brigade captured the principal guns. The union line now gave way and the troops fled to the adjoining woods for shelter.

The partial destruction of the bridge over the river prevented Fremont from going to the help of Shields' division, and the men that tried to repair the structure were driven off by the confederate artillery. The same cause kept the union commander from pursuing his opponent, who withdrew at his leisure to Brown's Gap, in the Blue Ridge mountains. There he gained possession of the Gordonsville and Staunton railway, which put him in direct communication with Richmond. Re-enforcements had reached Jackson, so that Fremont felt that his own safety called for retreat. Accordingly, he hastened to Harrisonburg, reaching it during a violent rain storm on the afternoon of June 10th. The retreat was continued and Shields was also ordered to fall back. Thus Stonewall Jackson disentangled himself from a most dangerous position, and Fremont and his army were worsted. Jackson, by his brilliant movements, had diverted a strong column from supporting McClellan, and he now returned to Richmond to take part in the defense of that city.

During the latter part of June, the armies of McDowell, Fremont and Banks were

united under the name of the army of Virginia, and the command was conferred on Major-general John Pope, of whose work in the west you have already learned. Fremont was offended by the supposed slight, and resigned. General Sigel succeeded him. Several of the regiments were sent to re-enforce McClellan on the Peninsula.

Pope's army of Virginia was 40,000 strong and was widely scattered. Some were at Fredericksburg on the Rappahannock, some at Manassas Junction, and some in the Shenandoah Valley. His purpose was to threaten Richmond and thereby compel Lee to detach a part of his army with which he confronted McClellan. He therefore posted the combined detachments along a line of forty miles, extending in a north-west direction from Fredericksburg.

Pope was hated in the South, where he was called a coward and braggart. He certainly showed bad taste when, on the 14th of July, he issued an address to the officers and soldiers of the army of Virginia, which contained the following language:

"Let us understand each other: I have come to you from the west, where we have always seen the backs of our enemies—from an army whose business it has been to seek an adversary, and beat him when found; whose policy has been attack and not defense. I presume I have been called here to pursue the same system and to lead you against the enemy. It is my purpose to do so and that speedily."

These are boastful words, and yet General Pope afterward said, "I took the field in Virginia with grave forebodings of the result, but with a determination to carry out the plans of the government with all the energy and skill of which I was master."

During this time, the army of the Potomac remained idle on the Chickahominy. The only event to cause any stir was a daring exploit by the confederate cavalry leader, General J. E. B. Stuart, which took place about the middle of June. Not believing any attack would be made on his rear, McClellan had left unguarded the railway line running from his camp to the White House, on the Pamunkey, where was the depot for his immense supply of stores. At the head of a cavalry force, all of whom were ignorant of their destination, General Stuart left Richmond on June 13, and moved along the railway to Fredericksburg. At Kilby's Station he turned eastward, and bivouacked near Hanover Court House, twenty-two miles north of Richmond.

The expedition moved swiftly with the greatest possible secrecy, and favored by the woods and a knowledge of the country, it was undiscovered by the federal pickets. At daybreak, on the 14th, a small force of cavalry at Hanover Court House was driven in and a larger body of mounted troops defeated. The camp was burned, and Stuart kept along the south-western bank of the Pamunkey, toward Turnstall's Station, on the Richmond and Westport railway. At Garlick's Landing, he sent a detachment to burn the stores, including the vessels near by, while he with the rest of his command, galloped to Turnstall's Station, cut the telegraph wires and surprised the guard.

Colonel Ingalls, commanding at the White House, learned what was going on from a train of troops that was fired into by the confederates. He prepared as best he could to defend the stores and the shipping in the river, and made ready to escape to Yorktown, should it prove necessary. You will bear in mind that Stuart was now in the rear of the army of the Potomac.

A train of forty wagons, and a number of prisoners were captured by the main body of Stuart's cavalry, which, after burning a railroad bridge, started at midnight for the Chickahominy on their return. They were obliged to throw a temporary bridge across that river before they could be safe, but they did this without difficulty, and after an absence of two days were safe in Richmond. They had inflicted no special damage upon

ARRIVAL OF McCLELLAN AT WILLIAMSBURG.

the federals, except to give them a scare. The raid was carried through by Stuart with the loss of only one man.

McClellan was uneasy about Stonewall Jackson. That fiery leader was to be dreaded wherever he might be, and the union commander did not know when or where he would strike the next blow. He believed, however, that he was concentrating a force at Gor-

donsville, on the railway to Richmond, to attack the rear of the federal army. McClellan determined to anticipate any such movement by advancing along the Williamsburg road near Seven Pines. He did this on the 25th of June, by which time the bridges over the Chickahominy were finished and the lines of intrenchment completed. After a sharp engagement, the federals at nightfall found themselves a half mile in advance of the position they had left in the morning.

McClellan decided to make the grand attack the next morning, but that night he learned that Jackson was approaching Hanover Court House. He sent a dispatch to the secretary of war saying that the enemy was believed to be 200,000 in number, including Jackson and Beauregard, and that the union army (if these reports were true) would have to contend against vastly superior numbers. "I will do all that a general can do," he wrote, "with the splendid army I have the honor to command, and, if it is destroyed by overwhelming numbers, I can at least die with it, and share its fate. But if the result of the action is a disaster, the responsibility can not be thrown on my shoulders; it must rest where it belongs."

It was true, as has been stated, that Jackson was at or near Hanover Court House, but Beauregard was hundreds of miles away in Alabama, and the confederate army was scarcely equal to the union in point of numbers.

Both McClellan and Lee had fixed upon the next day—June 26—for an offensive movement. The union commander was so alarmed for the safety of his position that he determined to change the base of his operations from the Pamunkey to the James. The plan of Lee was to leave Magruder and Huger in front of Richmond, with Holmes at Fort Darling, ready to cross when wanted. He had 33,000 men, including cavalry, on one side of the Chickahominy, while McClellan with 70,000 or more was on the other side. The divisions of D. H. Hill, Longstreet and A. P. Hill, 34,000 in all, were to cross the stream above the right wing of the union army, and uniting with Jackson, assail Fitz John Porter, whose corps, with McCall's division of 6,000, numbered 30,000, including cavalry. The force of the confederates making this attack was about 60,000.

Lee was the first to move. Longstreet and the Hills began to march during the night of the 25th, and, reaching the river at daylight, waited till afternoon for the coming of Jackson. About four o' clock A. P. Hill crossed over and attacked the extreme federal right,—thus opening the terrible series of struggles known as the Seven Days' Fight.

The federal position was a strong one, Beaver Dam Creek, nearly twenty feet wide and four feet deep, being in front. Its banks were steep and the confederates were obliged to cross an open field beyond before reaching the creek, during which they were exposed to the fire of the 12,000 men who held the position. The attack was made by the Hills with an equal force, but though pressed with the greatest bravery, the confederates were foiled, having lost 1,500 men, that of the defenders being about one-fifth as many.

Although the enemy had been repulsed, McClellan still felt insecure, and, during the night, withdrew his troops to a point two miles lower down the Chickahominy. Previous to this, he had telegraphed to Colonel Ingalls, at the White House, to load the railway

cars with ammunition and provisions, to fill all the wagons he had with stores and to send them by way of Bottom's Bridge to Savage's Station. Should he be forced to abandon the White House, he was to burn every thing he could not take away, and the depots were to be fixed without delay on the James. These orders were promptly carried out by Colonel Ingalls.

On the night of the 26th, McCall, commanding the extreme right of the federal position, was ordered to fall back on the bridges crossing the Chickahominy near Gaines' Mill, to join the rest of Porter's troops, and then to make a stand, so as to give the main army the time needed to effect its important change of position. Porter was to hold his ground until night and then cross the Chickahominy, burning the bridges behind him.

Early the next morning, General D. H. Hill's division opened a heavy artillery fire on General McCall, who withdrew further down stream. Other confederate troops crossed the Chickahominy near Mechanicsville, and before long their whole line, except the right wing under General Magruder, was ordered to advance. Porter's corps near the bridges was assailed, but the confederates were repelled. They were speedily re-enforced and renewed the attack, but with the same result. Toward the close of the day, the confederates brought up their reserves and launched them against the federals, who were outnumbered and exhausted from their prolonged fighting. They fell back in confusion, until supported by fresh brigades under generals Meagher and French. The pursuit of the confederates was checked and night closed over the scene.

At daylight the next morning the union forces were safe across the Chickahominy. They had lost in killed and wounded about 4,000, besides 2,000 prisoners and twenty-two guns. The confederates made so many of their attacks under heavy fire that their loss was much greater, probably reaching in killed and wounded 9,000.

On the preceding midnight, McClellan held a council of war, at which it was decided to make the change of base from the Chickahominy to the James. Probably the bitterest letter ever written by the union commander was penned after this council broke up. Addressing the secretary of war, he said that his men had done all that men could do, but had been repulsed by overwhelming numbers. If he had 20,000 or even 10,000 fresh troops he could enter Richmond on the morrow, but he had not a man in reserve and he would be glad to retreat and save the men and material. "And now," he added in conclusion, "if I save this army, I can tell you plainly, that I owe no thanks to you or to any other persons in Washington. You have done your best to sacrifice this army." President Lincoln in his reply said, "Save your army at all events; you are ungenerous in assuming that re-enforcements have not been sent as fast as possible. Your repulse is the price we pay for the safety of Washington."

Magruder says: "Had McClellan massed his whole force in column and advanced it against any point of our line of battle, though the head of the column would have suffered greatly, its momentum would have insured him success, and the occupation of our works about Richmond, and consequently of the city, might have been his reward."

CHAPTER XII.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE WAR IN THE SOUTH-WEST.

I HAVE dwelt so long on the operations of the army of the Potomac, in its attempt to capture Richmond, that I am afraid you have forgotten the important battles and movements in the West. Let us now return to that field and try to understand what took place during the remaining months of 1862.

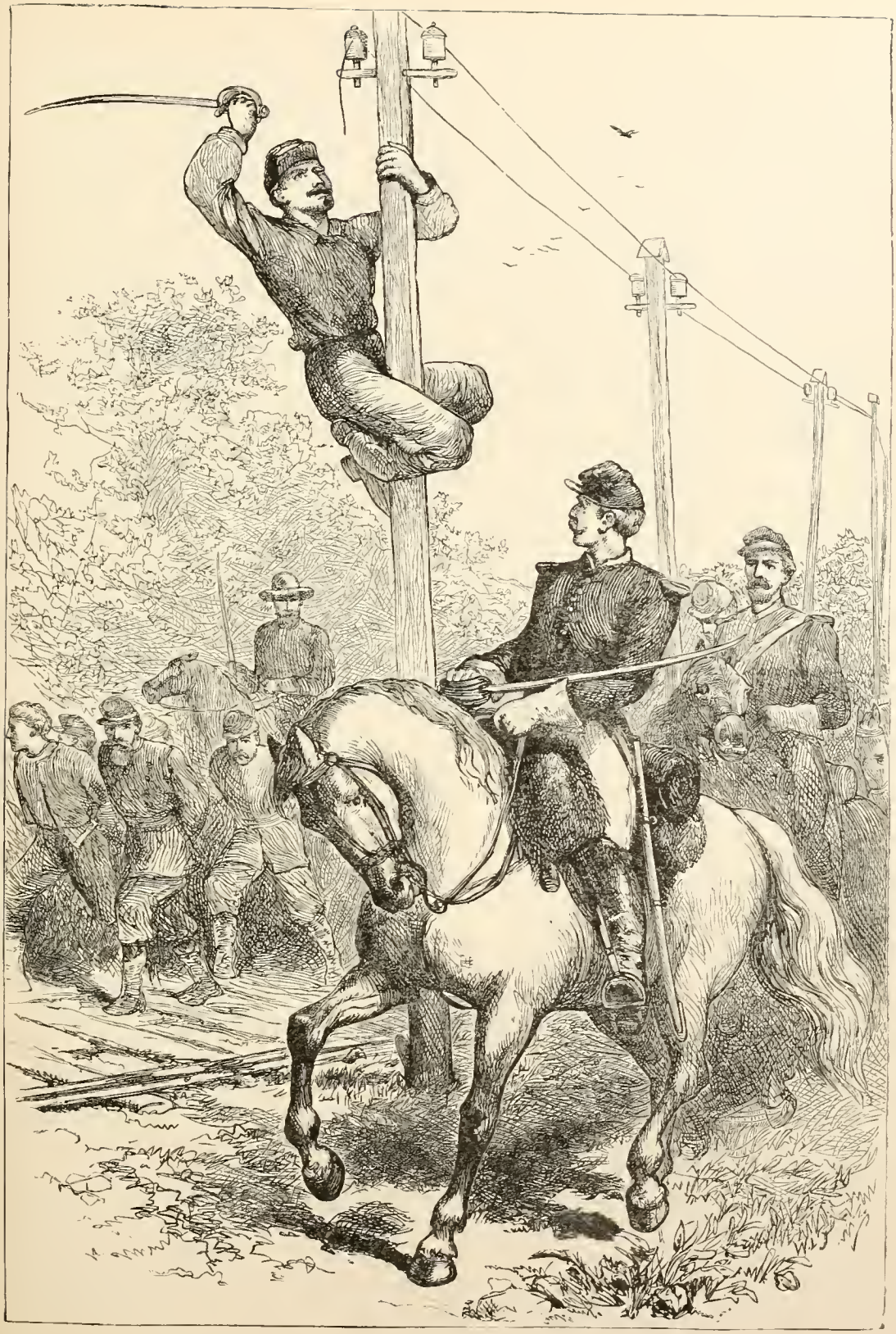
After the battle of Pittsburg Landing, the capture of Island Number Ten and the fall of New Orleans, the position of General Beauregard at Corinth became insecure. The capture of Island Number Ten, one hundred miles below Memphis, opened the Mississippi to Fort Pillow, forty miles above that city. Memphis was the center of two railway systems and therefore an important point. The confederates were so confident in its strength that they did not fortify the city. It was not believed that any union force could reach it from below, and that Fort Pillow was strong enough to protect it from any force descending the river.

This fortification mounted forty heavy guns and was garrisoned by 6,000 men, besides which nine iron-clads lay in the river ready to help in the defense of the place. General Pope appeared before Memphis on the 13th of April, and four days later, was ready to make his attack. At that juncture, he was recalled to take part in a movement that Halleck was preparing against Corinth.

On the 10th of May, the confederate gun-boats came out from the protection of Fort Pillow and attacked the federal fleet, which was so much the stronger that half of the assailants were soon destroyed and the rest disabled. The confederates held the fort until July 4, when they abandoned it. The next day, Commodore Davis, the successor of Foote, steamed down to Memphis, his fleet increased by four rams. The thousands of spectators who had gathered on the bluffs looked upon a strange battle. They were confident that the rams of the confederate fleet would destroy every union vessel.

The fight was a butting contest. The opposing vessels rushed at each other like mad bulls, meeting with a shock that unsettled their engines and threatened to smash each boat to splinters. The *Queen of the West* struck and sank the confederate vessel *General Lovell*, but before the *Queen* could get herself together for another charge, she was disabled by a blow from a confederate ram. This ram in turn was run into a few minutes later by the *Monarch* and sent to the bottom of the Mississippi.

Thus the battle went on, the rams dashing into each other at full speed, and firing their guns as the chance presented. The swarms on the bluff witnessing the fight, saw seven confederate craft destroyed one after the other, and another captured; the only



STUART'S CAVALRY CUTTING TELEGRAPH WIRES. (*See page* 112.)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

one left turned about and fled with such speed that she escaped. The city of Memphis surrendered the next day.

As soon as Halleck, who was in St. Louis, learned of the battle of Pittsburg Landing, he set out for the union army. He was in ill-humor, for nothing had gone to suit him. He meant to take charge of matters himself and show General Grant and the other officers how to win battles. He was kind enough to Grant to allow him to stay second in command, which, under the circumstances, amounted to little.

The army at Pittsburg Landing was rapidly re-enforced. Pope, as you have been told, came from before Memphis. He brought with him 25,000 men, and by the opening of May the federal army amounted to 100,000 men. Feeling himself strong enough, Halleck now began to advance by slow approaches upon Beauregard at Corinth. By the 21st, he was within three miles of the town. Beauregard, seeing how much inferior his force was, evacuated Corinth, destroying every thing of value before doing so. Halleck entered the city on the 30th, as he might have done weeks before. Beauregard suffered some losses on his retreat, but he substantially saved his army and established himself at Tupelo, about fifty miles south of Corinth.

The Mississippi was now open to the union forces except at Vicksburg. If that were captured, the great river would be free from obstructions from its source to the gulf, and the Confederacy would be cut in two. But it would require long, desperate fighting and the loss of many lives before this unusually strong post could be made to succumb.

Vicksburg is on a sharp bend of the Mississippi, in the state of Mississippi, and it was apparently impregnable, not alone because of its vast fortifications, but because of the swamps and forests and the many creeks and streams in the midst of which it is situated.

After the surrender of New Orleans, Commodore Farragut sailed up the river, and on the 24th of June came in sight of Commodore Davis and his fleet coming down from Memphis. Siege was laid to Vicksburg, and the bombardment opened on the 25th. An enormous amount of shot and shell was thrown into the place during the month that followed, yet without apparent effect. With the help of a thousand negroes, a canal was then dug across the narrow peninsula, formed by the bend of the river in front of the town. The hope was that by this means a channel would be opened, through which the ships could pass up and down without hurt from the confederate batteries. The work, however, was a failure.

On the 15th of July, the small confederate steamer *Arkansas*, which had been hurriedly armored with iron, rushed from its hiding-place in the Yazoo, drove away three federal gun-boats that were out on a reconnoissance, and steaming into the Mississippi, passed clear through the fleet of Commodore Davis, causing much damage, and finally anchoring under the guns of Vicksburg. The *Arkansas* received in the exploit a good deal of injury, but an attempt to destroy her failed.

The siege of Vicksburg was so hopeless that on the 24th of July it was given up for a time, and Farragut's vessels went back to Baton Rouge. In the following month, General Breckinridge, the confederate commander, made an attempt to regain possession

of Baton Rouge. It was his design that the land operations should be helped by the iron-clad *Arkansas*, which had been repaired after her injuries before Vicksburg. The *Arkansas*, however, broke down fifteen miles above Baton Rouge. The forces of Breckinridge suffered from heat and scarcity of water, and the federals also were much prostrated.

Early on the 5th of August, the confederates attacked the first of the federal lines and captured the camps. Advancing against the second line, they were checked by a heavy fire from the batteries, but rallying, they charged again, and drove the federals into the town. General Williams, the federal commander, was killed at the head of his troops, and many others fell. Had the *Arkansas* been able to help, the post must have fallen, but the absence of the iron-clad was fatal to the hopes of the confederates. The federal gun-boats poured a hot fire into their ranks, beside which a fusillade was kept up from the houses; and after firing the federal camp Breckinridge ordered a retreat.

Meanwhile the *Arkansas* was attacked by the union gun-boats. Crippled as she was she could not fight with effect, and was therefore run ashore and blown up. Admiral Farragut on the 10th of August bombarded and partially destroyed Donaldsonville, between Baton Rouge and New Orleans. The confederates, however, fortified themselves at Port Hudson, closer to Vicksburg, and thus prevented the unionists securing control of the Mississippi.

By the beginning of September General Bragg had 60,000 men. The corps of Kirby Smith was at Knoxville, and the troops of Hardee and Polk were with Bragg at Chattanooga. They were ordered to march through Kentucky, threatening Cincinnati, though their destination was Louisville.

Kirby Smith advanced almost across Kentucky, and as you can well believe, gave Cincinnati a great scare. Hasty preparations were made to defend the city, but, at Cynthiana, not far away, Smith turned to the south-west and joined Bragg at Frankfort. The union general Buell, who was near Nashville, saw the danger of Louisville and hastened thither.

The two armies now ran a race for that city: whichever got there first would gain the prize. The chances were about even, and the contest was exciting, but fortune favored the federals. When Bragg reached Salt River at Bardstown, he found the bridge in flames. The few hours of delay decided the race. Buell reached Louisville on the 25th of September, where re-enforcements soon swelled his army to 100,000 men.

Bragg made his way to Frankfort, where he inaugurated a provisional governor of Kentucky. "Kentuckians," said he in a proclamation, "we have come with joyful hopes. Let us not depart in sorrow, as we shall if we find you wedded to your present lot. If you prefer federal rule, show it by your frowns, and we shall return whence we came. If you choose rather to come within the folds of our brotherhood, then cheer us with the smiles of your women, and lend your willing hands to secure yourselves in your heritage of liberty."

Having assumed that Kentucky was now a member of the Confederacy, and having installed Thomas Hawes as provisional governor, Bragg put in force the conscription

law, but he did not get many new troops. The majority of the Kentuckians were not willing to support the Confederacy.

Though Bragg had failed to secure the great prize of Louisville, he met with success in another direction. Northern Kentucky was rich in supplies of all kinds, and to the confederate hordes it was like an entrance upon the promised land. They foraged right and left, and it was claimed that the confederate wagon train was forty miles

GENERAL LONGSTREET.

long. Bragg secured myriads of hogs, 8,000 beeves, 1,500 mules, 6,000 barrels of pork, 200 wagon loads of bacon, a million yards of jeans, and a vast amount of clothing. He certainly reaped a rich harvest.

But Buell found his army strong enough to take the offensive, and Bragg saw he should have to withdraw through the Cumberland Mountains into Tennessee. He began his retreat, and Buell on the 1st of October started in pursuit. He came up with

the larger part of the confederate army, and on the road from Lebanon to Harrodsburg Bragg divided his forces into two parts and posted them on separate roads twenty miles apart. He fixed his headquarters at Harrodsburg, where the two roads join. General Polk, who with three divisions was posted on the road from Lebanon to Bardstown, was ordered to offer the federals battle at Perryville.

COMMODORE A. H. FOOTE.

The latter, who were marching from the west, were surprised, not suspecting they were so close to the enemy. Bragg had sent orders also to the other divisions of his army on the Louisville and Lawrenceburg road to make all haste to Harrodsburg, so that he had little fear of his pursuers.

As soon as Polk caught sight of the advancing federals, he launched his infantry against them. Buell's front line, composed of raw troops, gave way, but the other regi-

ments held their ground. Re-enforcements were hurried forward, so that the opposing forces were nearly equal in point of numbers. Polk attacked again with great fury, and the federals were driven back with severe loss. Fortunately for the latter, night was at hand and averted what might have been a serious reverse.

More re-enforcements reached the federals that night, and Bragg thought best to continue his retreat. He had lost about 2,500 men in killed and wounded, while the loss of the federals was more than one half greater. Buell had managed his campaign so ill, that, on the 30th of October, he was removed, and General Rosecrans took his place. Some weeks before, an order had been issued superseding him by General George H. Thomas, but on the urgent request of Thomas, the order was revoked. While this was creditable to Thomas, it was bad for the union cause, for that general, as you know, was one of the best military leaders in the service. The confederates gained the safer regions of Tennessee, suffering no harm on the way.

There were some important events in Mississippi during the latter part of the year. Sherman commanded at Memphis and Rosecrans (who had not yet succeeded Buell in Kentucky), was at Corinth with orders to stop the confederate army of the Mississippi, should it attempt to cross the Tennessee and molest Buell.

The confederate General Price brought his forces together at Iuka, thirty miles to the south of Corinth, where he was attacked by Rosecrans and driven out. Rosecrans then fortified himself at Corinth, and Price waited until joined by Van Dorn and Lovell, when he attacked the union position. The federal pickets were driven in on the 2d of October, and the next day the confederate army was in sight. The union forces were assaulted with great impetuosity and forced back. Van Dorn felt so certain of a great triumph that he telegraphed to Richmond that a victory had already been gained. During the night however Rosecrans made such skillful disposition of his forces that he was prepared the next morning for attack. The confederates had come up from the south, but believing the northern part of the town was most exposed, they marched round to that side, only to find the position made as strong as possible. The confederates attacked on the morning of the 4th of October.

The union artillery was handled with such precision that in a few hours the confederate batteries were silenced. Then the assailants tried to storm the defenses. Price's troops in their furious rush captured several redoubts and drove the defenders back into the town. Price's division was not supported by that of Van Dorn (which was delayed by the rugged character of the country), and the federals drove them out. Van Dorn's columns came up after a while, but they were too late: the federals had regained their batteries and breast-works.

Van Dorn, however, was unwilling to give up the effort to take some of the defenses. No men could have shown greater courage than did his in advancing up a rugged ravine in the face of a fearful fire. At every step the assailants dropped, but the columns closed up and the charge was unchecked. Nothing was able to stop that heroic advance until it reached the edge of the ditch. There the fire became so dreadful that the line reeled. At that moment, the federals dashed down upon them, and they gave way.

Corinth was safe once more, but the losses were frightful on both sides. Van Dorn,

fearing an attack by his enemy, withdrew behind the lagoons and marshes, followed for many miles by Rosecrans, who finally came back to his former position. The military situation was about the same as before, and all the terrible loss of life was of no avail.

In the north-western part of Arkansas a union army under generals Blunt and Herron was confronted by General Hindman. After a number of unimportant skirmishes in the latter part of November, a serious collision took place. Hindman with a superior force had threatened Blunt, who, seeing his peril, telegraphed to Herron at Wilson's Creek to hasten to his help, but before help came, Blunt, on the 6th of December, was attacked ten miles to the south of Fayetteville. General Hindman turned the left flank of the federals, and made for their depots. The next morning he assailed Herron's advance guard, but failed to drive the unionists from their position. General Blunt, who had followed the enemy, reached the ground early in the afternoon. The battle lasted till dark, without either side gaining an advantage. On the 8th, the confederates withdrew to Van Buren, and the war in that section became simply guerrilla fighting.

You have already learned that most of the Mississippi was in the possession of the federals, who captured or destroyed a great deal of cotton. Admiral Farragut, on the 8th of October, took, with little trouble, the city of Galveston, Texas. Combined naval and military expeditions were sent up the rivers of Florida, where a number of unimportant positions were seized.

In North Carolina, General Forster left Newburn on the 11th of December, for the purpose of destroying the line of railway between Wilmington and Richmond. His force was a strong one, numbering 15,000 infantry, a regiment of cavalry and three batteries of artillery. He followed the railway track to Kingston, and on the 14th, drove the enemy over the Neuse. Seizing Kingston, he sent out various expeditions to do what injury they could. The confederates were soon re-enforced, and on the 17th of December, turned upon Forster with such vigor that he was forced to withdraw. He returned to his head-quarters, and the country was re-occupied by the confederates.

The Confederacy placed great hopes on the defense of Port Hudson and Vicksburg. The supreme command in the West was given to General Joseph E. Johnston, who was so severely wounded at Fair Oaks. The Mississippi army, which embraced the garrisons of Vicksburg and Port Hudson, was in charge of General Pemberton, he of course being under Johnston.

There were two strong union armies in the West—one commanded by General Grant, and the other by General Rosecrans. Most of Grant's force was engaged late in the autumn in an expedition from western Tennessee into Mississippi, and a part was made ready to attack Vicksburg. The army of Rosecrans was posted partly at Nashville and partly along the line of the Cumberland River, where it was closely watched by Bragg.

Rosecrans not only did not feel strong enough to assume the offensive, but found it was as much as he could do to defend himself against the frequent assaults of his enemies. The famous partisans, Forrest and Morgan, gave great help to the confederates. On December 7, Morgan, after a march of forty miles through snow and ice, took the

small town of Hartsville on the right bank of the Cumberland. Eighteen hundred prisoners were captured, sent to Murfreesborough, and paroled and allowed to go to Nashville. Soon afterward, Morgan was ordered to seize the railway between Nashville and Louisville, thus cutting off some of the federal detachments, while Forrest, at the same time, threatened Grant's communications with Columbus.

On the 26th of December, Rosecrans, with a large and well-equipped army, took the offensive. The distance between Nashville and Murfreesborough was less than forty miles, but the deep woods on both sides of the road swarmed with sharp-shooters, who so delayed the progress of Rosecrans that he did not come in sight of Murfreesborough until the 30th of December. There was some fighting on that day and Polk's pickets were driven in.

We have now reached the end of the year 1862. At the very close began one of the greatest battles of the war, but as it extended into the year that followed, it will be well to defer our account until we take up the history of that period.

General Forrest was not successful in his attempts to cut Grant's communications. In the latter part of December he did much damage to the bridges and railway lines, and secured a number of prisoners. On his way back to his lines, he was attacked on two sides and utterly routed, his men with difficulty escaping across the Tennessee River. Morgan was more successful in his raids, but, after all, the exploits of these guerrilla leaders produced no material effect.

General Grant's headquarters were at Oxford, Mississippi. While preparing to advance on Granada, the junction of the Memphis and Mobile and the Corinth and Mobile railways, his depot at Holly Springs was attacked, on the 19th of December, by General Van Dorn and some Texan cavalry. The town was surprised, and after a weak resistance the federals surrendered. The vast stores of cotton, flour and other supplies were burned; the station and rolling stock were also fired and the magazine exploded, destroying a large part of the town. Van Dorn, finding nothing more to destroy, withdrew, and Grant gave up his advance into Mississippi.

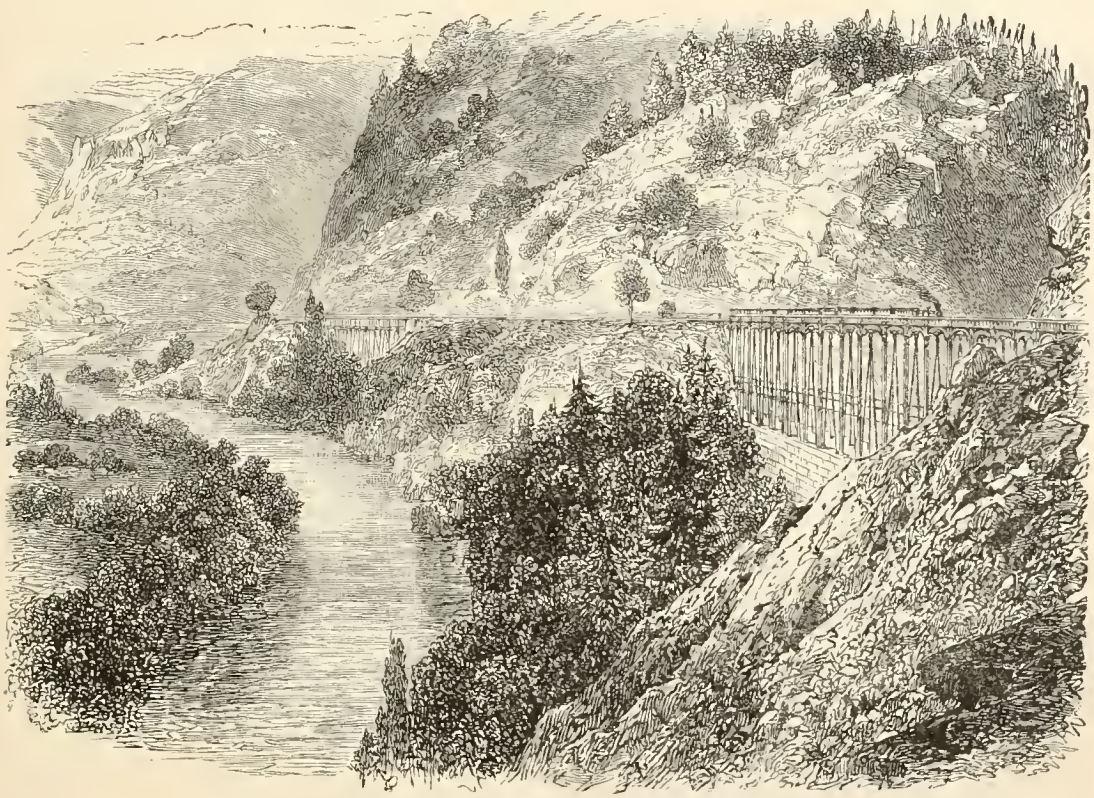
General Sherman embarked at Memphis on the 20th of December for the purpose of moving against Vicksburg. He had four divisions, commanded by generals Steele, Morgan, M. L. Smith and A. J. Smith. The day after the embarkation, Sherman was joined by Admiral Porter in his flag-ship, with two gun-boats to act as convoy. The fleet itself was at the mouth of the Yazoo, a river that flows into the Mississippi a short distance above Vicksburg.

Sherman at this time knew nothing about Van Dorn's destructive raid upon Holly Springs. The expedition passed down the Mississippi, exposed to a sharp fire from the sharp-shooters along the banks. On the night of the 24th and the morning of the 25th—Christmas day—the expedition reached the mouth of the Yazoo. The fleet included more than sixty transports, with several iron-clads, other gun-boats and mortar-boats. Moving up the Yazoo, the troops were, on the 26th, landed along shore for a distance of three miles.

Sherman was eight miles from Vicksburg, which he intended to attack on the north-east side, or in the rear. The confederates, however, had made full preparation.

One of their batteries on Haines' Bluff stopped the federal gun-boats from going up the Yazoo; and, between that point and Vicksburg, a strong force was posted on a line of low hills, extending along Chickasaw Bayou, which just above Vicksburg joins the lower part of the Yazoo with a bend of the Mississippi.

General Steele was sent with his division to a point above Chickasaw Bayou to attack the battery that enfiladed that point, from the right of the confederate line. Sharp fighting took place on the 27th, but the battery was not taken nor silenced. The attack was renewed the next day, but failed. Meanwhile, the confederates receiving hourly re-enforcements, their position grew constantly stronger.



ON THE BALTIMORE AND OHIO RAILWAY.

The federals were determined to prevail, and on the 29th, two companies got across on some weak bridges, and set out to undermine the bank on which the confederate fortress stood. The division on the right assailed the bluffs beyond the bayou. It was meant that an advance should be made at that time over the middle bridge, but through a mistake the order was not given. As a consequence, the right division, not being supported, was driven back with great loss. The rain falling in torrents, the marshy ground became a water-soaked swamp, and hundreds of wounded perished in the icy ooze. The federals, having lost 3,000 men, re-embarked the same night and went up the Mississippi. Soon after Sherman was superseded by General McClernand, and the force was separated into two corps, under Sherman and Morgan.

CHAPTER XIII.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE PENINSULAR CAMPAIGN AGAINST RICHMOND,—CONCLUDED.

YOU will recall that the corps of Sumner and Franklin were left by McClellan at Fair Oaks. They left that position on the 29th of June and were attacked by the confederates. The fight began at two o'clock in the afternoon and lasted until dark. In the end the confederates were driven back with severe loss, and the federals continued their retreat toward the James. The corps named acted as a rear guard, covering the retreat of the main army.

Up to this time General Lee was uncertain of General McClellan's plans, but the next morning when he looked southward through the sultry air, he saw vast clouds of dust rolling upward: he then knew that the union army was retreating to the James.

The confederate commander had hoped and still hoped not only to defeat the union army, but to destroy it. He now saw that it was slipping from his grasp and he decided on a desperate scheme to prevent its escape. Jackson was to cross the Chickahominy by the New Bridge, which had been repaired, and assail the rear of the union army; Longstreet and A. P. Hill were to cross the stream by Sumner's Grapevine Bridge, make a long detour, and then, joined by Magruder, Holmes and Huger, attack the flank.

Sumner was quick to learn that the confederates were re-crossing the Chickahominy and advancing on Savage Station. He therefore moved his corps thither and was joined by part of Franklin's corps. Heintzelman, on Sumner's left, fell back from the Williamsburg road and crossed White Oak Swamp, while Sumner advanced to Savage Station. It thus happened that when Magruder moved along the Williamsburg road, he found no federals to fight, while Sumner, not knowing that Heintzelman had withdrawn from the Williamsburg road, was surprised to find the enemy in his front at Savage Station. It was under such circumstances that the battle took place on the afternoon of the 29th of June.

The confederates came along the Williamsburg road, following the railway track, and preceded by an engine that drew an iron plated car, on which was mounted a heavy gun. The engine would steam slowly along and stop until the gunners could fire the land-monitor. The big ball was sent crashing through the woods, but it did no effective work.

The attack was made by the confederates with great impetuosity, and the battle was one of the most furious that had yet been fought. It raged until night closed in, when the combatants stopped from exhaustion. The confederates were checked, and although the federals held their ground they were still in great danger.

It was fortunate for the federals that Stonewall Jackson was unable to cross the Chickahominy and take part. With the sound of the battle in his ears, he worked desperately to rebuild the bridge over the stream, but could not finish it until dark, when it was too late.

Sumner wanted to hold his ground, but McClellan was in dread that the enemy would cut his communications with the James and he ordered the withdrawal of the force. Early the next day, the last brigade passed over, and the bridge was destroyed behind it.

McClellan having decided to retreat showed skill in doing so. He succeeded in placing the White Oak Swamp between him and the confederate army, brought off his cannon, and his rear guard escaped rout. Let us try to understand the peril of the union army.

From the passage out of the White Oak Swamp, the road runs south to the James River, less than ten miles distant. The union army was strung along this highway on its way to Haxall's Landing, to seek the protection of the gun-boats. The White Oak pass, crossing a branch of the Chickahominy, was the terminus of the famous White Oak Swamp, through which McClellan had forced his way. Through this pass was the only way of direct pursuit of the union army. You can see therefore that the fate of the latter depended on holding this pass against the enemy.

The next place where the union army could be attacked was at Glendale, some three miles down the road toward the James. At that spot the highways from Richmond converge, like the spokes of a wagon wheel. It was necessary, therefore, to prepare at that point against an attack by the confederates.

Going further down the road, the next exposed place was at Malvern Hill, just north of Haxall's Landing, where the unionists would be safe, provided they could get there. Over this less than ten miles of road, therefore, there were three points where the retreating federal army was sure to be assailed—at the extreme northern end, where the road debouched from the White Oak Swamp; at Glendale, a few miles further south, and at Malvern on the James.

McClellan visited each of these places and directed the preparations. Keyes occupied the space between the James at Turkey Bend on one side and Malvern Hill on the other, Fitz John Porter holding a strong position on the same hill. Franklin was stationed at the passage out of the White Oak Swamp, near Frazier's farm, while the rest of the troops were at Glendale.

The desperate scheme which I said was adopted by Lee to prevent the escape of McClellan was that of dividing his army into several divisions and attacking at the points named. You must bear in mind that Lee knew no more about the White Oak Swamp than did the federals. That dismal section had not been surveyed since the Revolution, and there was not even a county map to be had by which to be guided.

After breaking up his army, Lee could not communicate with them nor could they communicate with each other or form a junction after defeating the federals. But Jackson, with four divisions, hurried through the White Oak Swamp on the heels of the flying army; Hill and Longstreet hastened down from Richmond along the highways that

converged at Glendale, Magruder being directly behind them, while Wise's Legion and other troops posted on the James moved rapidly down the banks of that river with the hope of seizing and fortifying Malvern Hill before it could be reached by the federals. A success in any one of these three movements, except possibly the second, would result in a disastrous defeat of the union army: success in all three would blot it out of existence.

A little before noon of the hot summer day, Stonewall Jackson, rushing through the White Oak Swamp, emerged at the pass where Franklin grimly awaited him. This

UNITED STATES MILITARY TELEGRAPH WAGON.

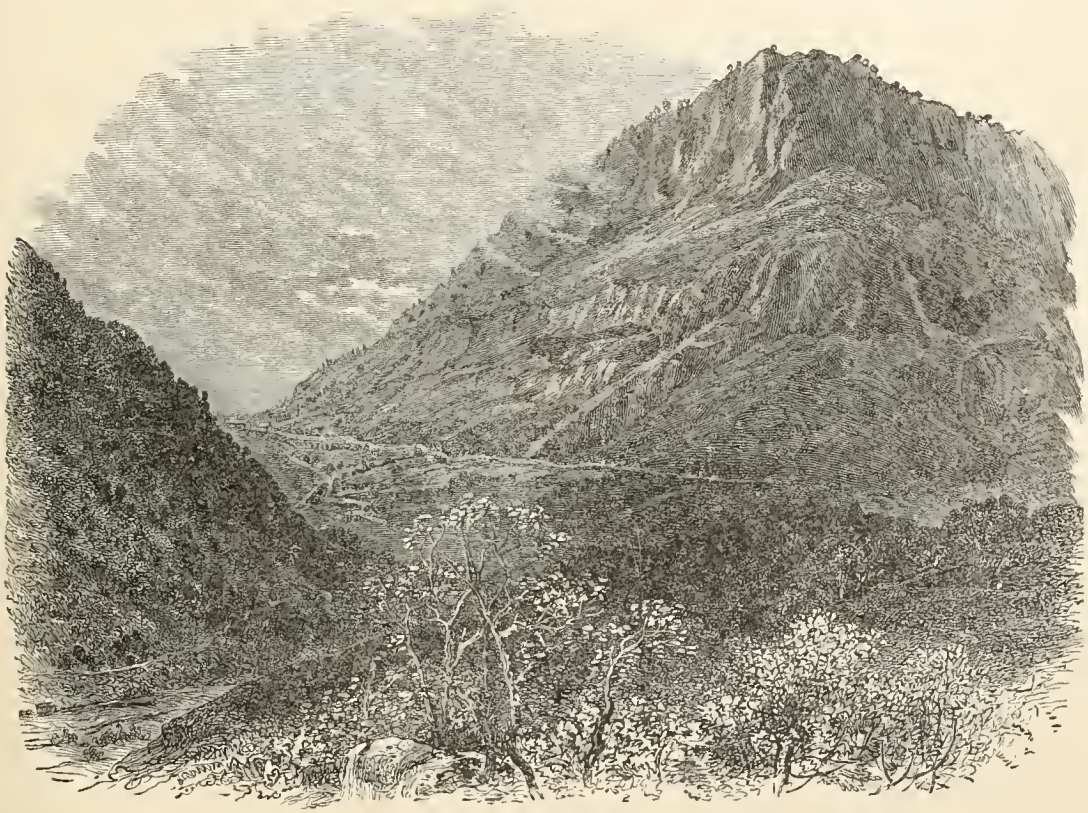
position, as you know, was of the highest value to both armies. McClellan had told Franklin that he must defend it to the last extremity, for if Stonewall Jackson should succeed in passing, he would destroy the union army.

No need of telling Franklin that, for he and every soldier under him knew it. The union commander improved his time well. He posted a number of batteries to cover the passage, while his nine brigades of infantry were drawn up in line of battle.

Stonewall Jackson had half of the confederate army at his back, including twenty batteries, but he found himself checked as if by a mountain wall. There was only the single defile, the swamp on his right and left being impassable, and any effort to advance along the narrow path would expose him to the converging fire of Franklin's guns,—a fire that would sweep every man into eternity.

Jackson chafed, for he knew that to delay where he was meant the escape of the union army. The hours were precious beyond estimate. He drew up several of his batteries with the view of silencing those on the other side, preparatory to the charge of his infantry. So hot was the confederate fire that two of the union batteries were silenced; but, when every thing looked hopeful for Jackson, Franklin opened with great effect with his rifled ten-pounders, which stood so far back from the stream that they were scarcely within range of the confederate guns.

Meanwhile the infantry on both sides were under arms, glaring at each other, and



CUMBERLAND GAP.

expecting every moment to have the battle open. But it did not. The hours passed, and all through the flaming afternoon the guns roared and crashed, but not a single charge was made by the confederates. Franklin held the powerful left wing of the confederate army—fully one-half—paralyzed, when its presence at Glendale would have insured the destruction of the union hosts.

A short time after the arrival of Jackson in front of Franklin, Longstreet and A. P. Hill reached Glendale, the second point exposed to attack by the confederates. They had almost twenty thousand men. They dropped a number of shells among the unionists, and then charged. Huger had again lost his way and took no part in the attack. The fight opened at four o'clock and lasted until night. Each side in turn gained and lost

ground and at dark the confederates held the field. The unionists had been re-enforced by men from Franklin's division, he having more than he needed to hold Stonewall Jackson at bay. Hill and Longstreet, believing that other re-enforcements would soon reach the enemy, gave up the field they had won, and the federals resumed their retreat toward Malvern.

The confederates were checked at the pass from the White Oak Swamp and did nothing at Glendale. Let us now see what was done at the remaining point,—Malvern on the James.

I told you that Wise's Legion started down the river in the hope of reaching Malvern ahead of the federals, but, great as was their haste, they were too late. While pushing forward, they ran against Porter's division posted on the hill, and were repulsed.

A number of gun-boats were waiting at Haxall's Landing. McClellan went on board the *Galena* with a view of making a reconnoissance up the river. A few of the Parrott hundred-pound shells were sent into the woods, and while they did little damage, they cheered the weary federals tramping toward the stream.

None of those who took part in that retreat and lived, will ever forget it. Hour after hour the men dragged themselves along, their single hope being that of reaching the river and gaining the protection of the gun-boats. Every cabin and hovel by the wayside was turned into a hospital. The surgeons, with coats off and sleeves rolled up, toiled through the stifling heat until ready to drop from exhaustion. Men flung themselves on the ground and slept, caring little whether they ever opened their eyes again.

Before sunset on the 30th of June, the last wagon of the train reached Malvern Hill, and preparations were made to resist the attack that all knew would soon be made. There being no necessity for holding the other positions at Glendale and the outlet of White Oak Swamp, the troops began to withdraw in the evening. The movement continued all night and at daylight the next morning the entire union army was gathered around Malvern Hill.

This is an elevated plateau, three-fourths of a mile wide and twice as long. McClellan's left and center were posted on the hill, the right curving backward through the woods toward a point on the river below Haxall's Landing. Convinced that Lee's attack would be aimed mainly against his left, McClellan massed a large force of infantry and artillery on Malvern Hill. Porter's corps held the left, the artillery, including the reserve, amounting to sixty guns. The entire union force was nearly 90,000, and both its flanks rested on the James where the gun-boats sheltered them.

Lee resolved to make one final assault upon the union army before it got beyond his reach. You can see how much greater was McClellan's advantage than before, but the confederate leader could not allow him to get away until another effort was made to destroy him.

The massing of the union army at Malvern gave Lee the chance to bring his own forces together. As soon as Franklin withdrew, Jackson followed, and his corps formed the left wing of the assaulting force, while those of Magruder and Hill formed the right. Longstreet and A. P. Hill were the reserve on the left, and took no part in the battle.

Lee had decided to assault the union position at Malvern Hill. He massed the

Battle of Malvern Hill

BATTLE OF MALVERNE HILL

troops of Huger, Jackson and Magruder on his right. Before this, he had issued an order saying that he had selected his positions so that his artillery could silence that of the federals, and that as soon as it was done, Armistead's brigade of Huger's division should charge with a yell and carry the battery directly in front. Certain that this "rebel yell" would be heard by every one on his right, he made known that it would be the signal for an advance along the whole line. The moment it was sounded all the troops were to rush forward with fixed bayonets.

It was about six o'clock, when General D. H. Hill, who was talking with his brigade commanders, heard a tremendous shout. "That's the signal!" exclaimed the leader, and the others agreed with him.

The advance was ordered at once, but there was some mistake, or the other divisions did not hear the shout, for when Hill charged he did so alone. His men pushed forward with great heroism, but they were mowed down by the union artillery and driven back. Magruder and Huger afterward went forward to the help of Hill, but they did so in such a disjointed way that they gave no real aid. General Hill said, "Instead of ordering up one or two hundred pieces to play on the Yankees, a single battery was ordered up, and knocked to pieces in a few minutes; one or two others shared the same fate of being beaten in detail. The firing from our batteries was of the most farcical character."

This extract refers to the firing that was meant to silence the union batteries before Hill's charge. Magruder says of the engagement, "The battle-field was enveloped in smoke, relieved only by flashes from the contending troops. Round shot and grape crashed through the woods; shells of enormous size, which reached far beyond the headquarters of the commander-in-chief, burst amid the artillery in the rear. Belgian missiles and minie-balls lent their aid to this scene of stupendous grandeur and sublimity."

The fire continued for some time after dark, but finally died out. The last attack of the confederates was ill-managed, and the union army was safe. General Lee withdrew to the defenses of Richmond, while McClellan took up a position at Harrison's Landing. By the night of July 3, all the union army was there, and McClellan believed he had gained a new base from which to organize another advance against Richmond.

In this tremendous campaign against the capital of the Confederacy, there had been severe fighting, and the sacrifice of life was fearful. The entire loss of the union army during the six days is officially given as 15,249, of whom 1,542 were killed, 7,709 wounded and 5,598 missing. The confederate loss is estimated to have been about 19,000.

On the 7th of July, the steamer from Fortress Monroe stopped at Harrison's Landing and a single passenger stepped ashore. It was President Lincoln, who had come down to that point to consult with General McClellan about the movements to be made in the alarming crisis that had come upon the country.

The union commander repeated the same story and the same arguments that he had used so many times before. He insisted that all the resources of the government should be used to forward him re-enforcements and munitions of war. The James River being open to him as a line of supplies, he favored the plan of moving

his army to the south bank of the river and destroying the communication of Richmond by way of Petersburg. The president was much impressed by McClellan's plan, but when he went back to Washington, Halleck, who became commander-in-chief of the army on the 11th of the same month, would not consent. A few days later, orders were sent to McClellan to withdraw the army of the Potomac from the Peninsula. McClellan urged the rescinding of the order, and Hooker advised his chief to pay no heed to it. For a time, McClellan showed a purpose of doing so, but he changed his mind.

Halleck telegraphed a peremptory order for the withdrawal of the army. The sick and the stores were embarked on the 16th of August, and the rest of the troops crossed the Chickahominy two days later, for the purpose of uniting with General Pope, southeast of Washington, and of acting under his command.

You have been told in another place something about General Pope and his movements on coming east to take charge of the army of Virginia, as it was then called. The main part of Pope's army was partly at Culpeper Court House (about seventy miles from Washington, and as far from Richmond), and partly at Fredericksburg. His duty was to cover Washington, while he diverted, so far as he could, Lee's army, which threatened McClellan. His line reached from the Blue Ridge Mountains on the right, to the lower fords of the Rappahannock on his left.

On the 14th of July, Pope pushed his cavalry toward Gordonsville and sent a force to make a reconnoissance along the Richmond and Fredericksburg railway. These movements amounted to little, but about the same time Lee dispatched Jackson with his own division and that of Ewell to Gordonsville. They went by railway, reaching their destination on the 19th. It did not take Jackson long to learn that Pope had advanced to the Rapidan and was threatening the railway connections. He learned further that Pope's force was so much larger than his own that it would be folly to attack it: he therefore sent for re-enforcements. Lee forwarded A. P. Hill's division.

You can understand how it was that Lee at Richmond was uncertain what to do until he knew the intention of the union army. He learned in August that Burnside had arrived at Hampton Roads from the southern coast with a large force. The course taken by the flotilla would answer the all-important question: if it should sail up the James, then the advance against Richmond would be by that route; if General Pope was to make the real movement, then General Burnside would move in that direction.

One afternoon early in August, a small steamer with a flag of truce flying, went up the James to Aiken's Landing, often used as a place for the exchange of prisoners. Among the passengers who landed was one who made all haste to General Lee. He was the famous partisan leader John S. Mosby, bearing important news. He told the confederate leader that at the very moment he was leaving Hampton Roads that morning the whole of Burnside's corps was embarking for Acquia Creek. Lee's course was now clear. He must strike Pope before Burnside could join him. The news was sent to Jackson, who started on the 7th of August to attack Pope at Culpeper. He crossed the river on the 8th and took position near the main road from Gordonsville to Culpeper. The battle of Cedar Mountain occurred the next day.

CHARGE OF THE FEDERALS AT CORINTH. (*See page* 122.)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

Cedar Mountain is twenty miles north of Gordonsville, where Banks was stationed with a force of 8,000 men. He was attacked by Ewell and after a time driven back. Pope, who was a short distance off with most of the army, hurried up and checked the stampede of Banks' troops. The forces confronted each other for a couple of days, when Jackson, learning that the federals had been re-enforced, withdrew across the Rapidan.

This exploit of Jackson alarmed the federal government, which saw again the same old danger: Washington was once more in peril. It was clear that as soon as Lee could relieve himself of the threatening presence of McClellan's army, he would take charge of the campaign in northern Virginia. Pope was so far advanced on the Rapidan that he was liable to be crushed before help could reach him. McClellan was urged to hasten the embarkation of his army at Harrison's Landing so as to give Pope all the help possible.

Pope decided to occupy the line of the Rapidan from Robertson's River on the right, across Cedar Mountain as the center, to Raccoon Ford on the south. He would thus be in a position not only to protect Washington, but to receive at the earliest moment the expected re-enforcements from McClellan. He soon learned, however, that Lee was rapidly moving his army to Gordonsville, which was a little south of his own line. Thereupon, Pope withdrew to the further side of the Rappahannock, north of his vacated position. This change was made on the night of August 18th, and on the 21st he was joined by the divisions of Kearny and Reynolds from the army of the Potomac.

On the succeeding night a strange incident took place. J. E. B. Stuart crossed the river with 1500 cavalry in the midst of a drenching rain storm, while the darkness was like that of Egypt. He was under the guidance of a negro, who led him straight to Catlett's Station, ten miles in the rear of the center of the union line. It was there Pope had his headquarters, guarded by 1500 infantry and a few companies of horse. By a sudden dash, Stuart captured some of Pope's staff and got away with the loss of only two men.

But his most important capture was the dispatch-book of Pope. The information thus obtained, as you can readily see, was of the highest value to Lee. When the latter came to read it, the first item that attracted his notice was the correspondence in which Pope confessed he could not hold the Rappahannock, and begged for re-enforcements. Beside this, General Lee read an official account of the strength and disposition of the union forces; he learned, too, that a part of McClellan's army was on the way to join Pope, that the rest were following, that the union army was withdrawing from the Kanawha Valley, and that when all these re-enforcements should reach Pope, he would have an army of 200,000 men.

The clear lesson to be learned from this unexpected news was that Lee should act promptly, and he did so. He resolved to throw the whole confederate army upon the rear of Pope, cut off his communications and crush him before re-enforcements could reach him. To do this compelled Lee to divide his force for several days, in the face of an enemy much stronger than either division; but he assumed the risk, which would have been

fatal had the union army been handled by any one of a score of other commanders who might be named.

Jackson was given the duty of opening the drama. He was directed to cross the river above Pope's right, pass around his flank and cut his communications with Washington. While Jackson was executing this movement, Longstreet was to occupy Pope's attention by threatening him in front. As soon as Jackson got far enough, Longstreet was to follow him with all haste.

Now, it is easy to see that in order to cut off Pope from Washington, Jackson would have to put himself in exactly the same peril, for Pope would be between him and Lee, and the confederate division was liable to be overwhelmed before aid could reach him. But Jackson did not hesitate. He began his march on the morning of August 25, taking nothing except his artillery. He went quickly through the narrow valley on the east side of the Bull Run Mountains, and at midnight reached the head of Thoroughfare Gap. This was the gate through which the mountains must be passed, and a few hundred men might have held an army at bay. Not a single union soldier was in sight.

Jackson marched through the opening early on the morning of the 27th, and made for Bristoe Station, an important point on the railway forming the main source of Pope's supply. Ewell was left there and Jackson hastened northward to Manassas Junction, where the federals had an enormous amount of stores. They were captured, and such as could not be taken away burned.

Pope knew that some movement was going on, but he did not understand its meaning. He became bewildered, sent dispatches here and there, and marched his men back and forth until it looked as if he would never be able to extricate them. He, however, sent Hooker toward Bristoe, where he had a sharp fight with Ewell and worsted him.

No better chance could have been given Pope for destroying Stonewall Jackson, for, though Longstreet had begun his supporting movement, he was still two days' march distant. Jackson decided to retreat toward Thoroughfare Gap and to take up a position which he could hold until Longstreet reached him. He made a feint of advancing to Centreville, but turned and took position on the old battlefield of Bull Run. Ewell's corps, repulsed by Hooker at Bristoe, had joined him.

The second battle of Bull Run or Manassas, as it is generally called, opened on the morning of August 29 and lasted until nightfall. Jackson stood mainly on the defensive, and, during the night withdrew his left so as to connect with Longstreet, who was coming through Thoroughfare Gap. Pope saw in this movement a forced retreat and he sent a dispatch to Washington: "We fought a terrific battle here yesterday with the combined forces of the enemy, which lasted from daylight till dark, by which time the enemy was driven from the field, which I now occupy. The news has just reached us from the front that the enemy is retreating to the mountains. I go forward to see."

Longstreet's soldiers kept coming through the night, so that by daylight Jackson was very strong. Longstreet took the right of the line, which was five miles in length. Porter's corps was in position and opened the battle on the second day, by attacking Longstreet. The battle soon became general and lasted until nightfall, the loss being

fearful on both sides. Toward night General Lee arrived and took command. He immediately ordered an advance. The federals retreated, and, during the night, crossed Bull Run and took refuge behind the field works at Centreville. There they were supported by Sumner and Franklin's corps which had arrived from Alexandria and the lines around Washington.

Lee hesitated about attacking the army in its strong position, but on the 1st of

GEN. W. F. SHERMAN.

September he made a demonstration against Pope's right flank. The federal commander, finding the confederates on the road to Fairfax Court House, and threatening Washington, began a tumultuous retreat toward the capital.

A violent thunder-storm broke over the armies and the condition of the union soldiers was as pitiful as when dragging themselves through the dismal White Oak Swamp. The confederates harassed them continually and the losses were great.

Finally on the morning of September 2, the entire army, including the divisions of Fredericksburg and Acquia Creek, took refuge behind the fortifications of Washington. The disastrous campaign was ended.

In studying the movements of General Pope, it is clear that he showed poorer generalship than General Lee. Pope fought hard, and did his best, but he had undertaken a task beyond his ability. By his egotism, he drove away the sympathy that

"STONEWALL" JACKSON

otherwise would have been felt for him. It was humiliating, after such vaunting, to be forced to acknowledge that he had been soundly whipped.

But on the other hand, justice must be done Pope. Some of his generals were unfriendly toward him and yielded only a half-hearted support. Fitz John Porter was dismissed the army for his failure to carry out Pope's orders. During the past few years he tried to obtain a reversal of this sentence, and succeeded in convincing many of

the best military authorities (among them the lamented General Grant) that he took the wisest step possible in failing to carry out the orders of General Pope. No doubt in the excitement of war times injustice is done to worthy officers. The impatience of those who are far from the battlefield leads them to make harsh criticism, without knowing the difficulties and sometimes impossibilities that confront the commanders whom they thus criticise. The dissatisfaction with General Porter was so intense in some parts of the north, that a demand was made that he should be shot as a warning to others who were suspected of a lukewarmness in the struggle to subdue the rebellion.

General Porter's appeal was before Congress a long time before a final decision was reached. President Lincoln having become convinced that injustice had been done the commander, promised that the case should be re-opened, but in the pressure of duties he never found time to do so, and it drifted through the following administrations without action. General Grant when president neglected it, though he afterward wrote strongly in favor of Porter. In 1878, a board of army officers was named to examine the case, and, in March, 1879, generals Schofield, Terry and Getty gave it as their opinion that the president should restore General Porter to his rank, from which the sentence of the court deposed him. A bill passed Congress, but President Arthur vetoed the measure.

On the 26th of June, 1886, an act directing his restoration to the army went through the senate, having previously passed the house. Its final passage you may notice was on the anniversary of the battle of Mechanicsville,—the first victory gained by General Porter in the war for the Union. On July 1, President Cleveland appointed him colonel in the army of the United States.

STANTON CHASE LINCOLN WELLES SEWARD SMITH CAMERON BATES

FIRST READING OF THE EMANCIPATION PROCLAMATION.

Painting by F. B. Carpenter.

CHAPTER XIV.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE WAR ON THE OCEAN.

LOOKING back over the events of the year 1862, little but gloom for the union cause is to be seen. While there had been important successes in the south and west, the campaign against Richmond was an appalling disaster. Thousands of lives had been lost on both sides, and the prospect of conquering the Confederacy seemed almost hopeless. But the North had boundless resources and there was no thought of giving up the terrific struggle.

The great and good President Lincoln never lost hope. On the 2d of July, he called for 300,000 volunteers, and on the 4th of August he summoned 300,000 more, to serve for nine months unless sooner discharged. It was also decreed that if any state on the 15th of August had failed to furnish its quota, the deficiency would be made up by special draft.

At the opening of the war there were many abolitionists in the North,—that is, men who were in favor of passing laws that would wipe out slavery. These men naturally thought the time had come when the president should take such a step, and they used every argument to persuade him to do so. But he was cautious, and, while personally opposed to the institution, took every step with the utmost care. On the 22d of August, he replied in a letter to some remarks made by the New York *Tribune*, in which he said that his whole policy was to save the Union. He would do that if he could, either by saving or by destroying slavery. He considered the question of slavery subordinate to that of the Union, and if its abolishment would preserve the Union, he would declare it abolished; otherwise he would make no such declaration.

But this remarkable man studied events closely, and read their meaning with clearer vision than did those around him, and realizing that a deadly blow struck at human slavery would be an equally deadly blow against the rebellion, he struck the blow.

On the 22d of September he issued the Emancipation Proclamation,—one of the most important documents in the history of civilization. It in brief declared human slavery at an end in every state that did not return to its allegiance before the 1st of the following January. Naturally there were some in the North who considered the step unconstitutional, but they were in the minority. Few there were who did not see that the institution which had existed for nearly two centuries and a half had passed away forever.

The emancipation proclamation was ridiculed in the South as a measure that never could have any effect. But many of the leaders were alarmed and infuriated. One of the principal papers in the confederate capital spoke of it as ordaining a servile insurrection throughout the South, with the promise of aid from the whole military and naval power of the United States.

President Lincoln, however, had no intention to provoke a rising among the blacks. The latter were content to await for their liberty the coming of the union armies; and, with the whole South in arms, they were too wise to bring down the wrath of their masters by any attempt to free themselves. But from what I have told you, it is easy to see how deep was the passion that stirred both sides.

Now, while a people may plunge with great enthusiasm into a war, the struggle can not be kept up very long without plenty of money. You know how the colonies suffered during the Revolution, because of the lack of what has been well called "the sinews of war." The expenses of the war for the Union were very great, the debt of the United States before the close of the year being certain to amount to a billion of dollars, for the expenses were three millions of dollars a day. Gold ran up rapidly, so that at the close of the year, a gold dollar was worth one dollar and thirty-four cents in paper money, and in July, 1864, it was worth two dollars and eighty-five cents; in other words, a paper dollar was worth less than thirty-five cents in gold.

Small coins became so scarce that Congress authorized the issue of $25,000,000 of paper money in sums of one, two and three dollars each. These were a part of the general issue of $150,000,000 of treasury notes already authorized. The demand for small change was not met by this course. In those days, gold and silver disappeared. If you went to a store to buy any thing, you received your change in written orders or postage stamps. Shopkeepers signed and issued printed orders on themselves; these bits of papers often resembled the old continental notes, and were sorry substitutes for money.

The resources of the South being so much less than those of the North, the financial stress was far greater within than outside of the Confederacy. Its currency ran down in value until it was said that the man who went to market was obliged to carry his money in his basket and bring back his purchases in his vest pocket.

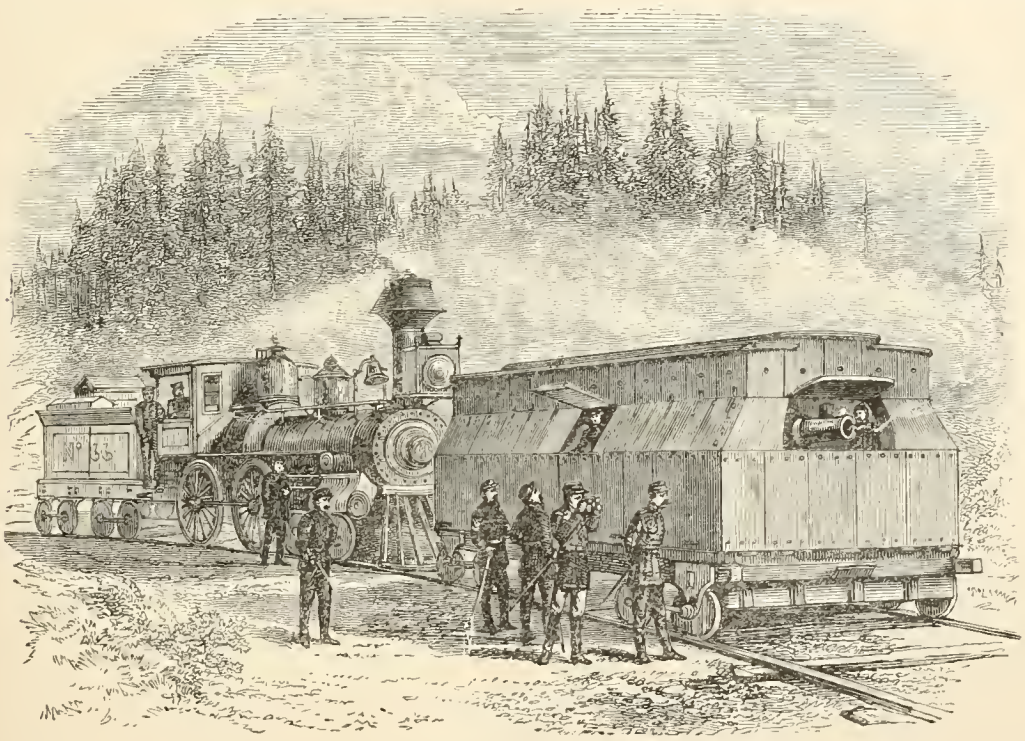
President Davis met his congress on the 18th of August, when he delivered a message on the events of the time. He had good reason to express his pride and gratitude over the successes of the confederate arms, though, as you have learned, there had been disasters in the south and west. Of course, he denounced the policy of the North, and had many bitter things to say about the government that was trying hard to subjugate the South.

I must not forget to add something about the confederate privateers. The southerners, as you know, had the best of friends in England, who gave them great help, though it must not be forgotten that the Union numbered some warm supporters also in Great Britain.

In the early days of 1862, Charles Francis Adams, our minister in London, learned that several ships were in process of construction at the Liverpool ship-yards, and that there was good reason to believe they were meant to be confederate privateers. In the month of April, Mr. Adams wrote Earl Russell concerning a steam corvette called the *Oreto*, afterward known as the *Florida*. The ship was nearly done, and the British government assumed to look into the matter.

When finished, the *Oreto* sailed for Nassau, in the Bahamas, where she was seized

by the British steamer *Greyhound*, but soon released. This was done several times, but the *Oreto* was soon set free for good, and, early in September, appeared off Mobile harbor, which was blockaded by Commander Preble. The *Oreto* flew the British flag, and, as Preble had been warned against giving offense to foreign nations, he hesitated to fire until sure of the character of the craft. She was fired into by other vessels, but not injured, and she entered Mobile Bay with her valuable freight. Preble was afterward dismissed the service without a hearing. The privateer received her armament, and came forth on the 27th of December to begin her depredations upon northern commerce. She was commanded by J. N. Maffitt, an Irishman by birth, who had lived in



A RAILROAD BATTERY.

the United States since his youth and had been connected with the navy for thirty years.

Another of the confederate privateers was the *Sumter*. She was chased into Gibraltar by the *Tuscarora* the year before, and watched so closely that she could not get away. She was therefore sold, and Captain Semmes, her commander, went to England to have another ship made for him. The result was the building of the *Alabama*, the most famous privateer ever in the service of the Confederacy.

As in the case of the *Oreto*, the British authorities, while making a pretense of doing what was right toward the federal government, took the utmost pains to help the South. It was known to every body that the *Alabama* was fitting out as a privateer. So notorious were the facts that the British government could not avoid taking action

when complaint was made that the neutrality laws were violated. A long inquiry was entered into, with the result that orders were sent to prevent the sailing of the privateer. These orders were held back until July 29, when they were forwarded to Birkenhead. The privateer had sailed the day before, as the authorities well knew.

The *Alabama* was a steamer of 900 tons burden, with engines of 300 horse-power. She was launched on the 15th of May, sailing, as I have said, more than two months later. The British authorities could have stopped her had they wished to do so, but they had no such wish.

The *Tuscarora* was waiting outside for the appearance of the *Alabama*, which, in order to avoid her, headed for the Azores. A little while before a bark loaded with arms sailed to the same place, and was there awaiting the coming of the *Alabama*, which thus received her entire cargo. The following day the British screw steamer *Bahama* arrived, with Captain Semmes, the officers, twenty of the crew and the rest of the armament of the privateer. In a short time the *Alabama* started on her career of destruction.

It can not be said that there was any glory earned by the *Alabama*, for she made war upon merchantmen and unarmed vessels. Since the Confederacy was not recognized by other nations, it was against international law that the prizes of the *Alabama* should be taken into any port and condemned. She therefore made it a rule to burn all federal vessels captured. The crews were often put in irons and sometimes roughly treated. When one of the captains of a burning vessel protested to Captain Semmes, he replied that the North was destroying property of the South, and offering large bounties for volunteers. It was his intention to retaliate to the utmost extent in his power.

This retaliation assumed such an enormous scale that the leading northern merchants became alarmed. The insurance companies increased their rates, and many got British consular certificates for their goods, but the device was not always successful. After a time the goods were placed in British bottoms — that is, shipped directly in vessels belonging to Great Britain. This was a great blow to the American carrying trade, from which it has never entirely recovered.

The national government strained every nerve to capture the *Alabama*. War vessels were sent out to hunt for her, in addition to the flying squadron of Commodore Wilkes in the West Indies and other ships on the European coast. The hunt was a long one, and it was nearly two years before she was destroyed.

CHAPTER XV.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE FIRST CONFEDERATE INVASION.

THE number of killed and wounded on both sides during the second Bull Run campaign was great. The confederate loss after the 27th of August was 1,341 killed and 7,069 wounded. The union loss was more than 12,000. There was so much straggling that the federal force was decreased by fully 20,000.

The union dead included two of the most brilliant officers in the service — Stevens and Kearny. Pope was glad enough to be relieved of his command, and the army of Virginia went out of existence. It was united with the army of the Potomac, by which name the forces fighting directly against Richmond were known during the rest of the war. General McClellan was restored to the command. He was highly popular with the soldiers, and the demand for "our old commander" was so loud that the government was forced to comply.

It is not likely that when General Lee marched northward from Richmond to drive back the union army he had any thought of doing more. Lee himself never made it clear why he decided on the startling course of invading the North. Thus far the war had been fought entirely on southern soil, where the suffering had been great, and doubtless Lee wished to force the invaders to drink of the same bitter cup. Then, as you have learned, the Confederacy had many strong friends in Great Britain and France who wanted to intervene, but they did not dare do so until the South should gain some decisive triumph, which would warrant the intervention of those powers.

If Lee, therefore, should capture Baltimore or Philadelphia, thus cutting off Washington from the North, the triumph would probably secure the independence of the Confederacy. Furthermore, the belief was general through the South that since Maryland was a slave state, it naturally belonged to the Confederacy, and that if the citizens were given a chance to rise, they would do so. You know that the secession feeling was so strong in Baltimore that the union troops were attacked, and President Lincoln when on his way to Washington was in danger of his life in the same city. Maryland had sent a good many soldiers into the southern army, some of the leading officers coming from that state. So it would seem that there was reason for believing she would be glad of a chance to join the Confederacy.

Again, there was an abundance of food, clothing and supplies in that country,

"Fair as the garden of the Lord."

The confederate army was in sore need of such stores, and the chance to get them was tempting indeed. Finally, nothing could be more effectual in driving the union army away from its threatening position before Richmond than an invasion of the North. General Lee, therefore, with the consent of President Davis, decided to make such an invasion.

The river below Washington was guarded by gun-boats, so that Lee was obliged to make his crossing at a point above. The divisions of the confederate army rapidly came together, and it became a compact whole under Lee's immediate control. D. H. Hill's division was given the advance, and it marched to the Potomac at a point nearly opposite the Monocacy. The federals guarding the river were scattered, and the force crossed without difficulty. The rest of the day and the following night were spent in destroying the locks and embankments of the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal, one of the principal means by which Washington was supplied with fuel. Jackson, who had joined Hill, crossed the river on the 5th at White's Ford, near Leesburg. All the bands struck up the popular air, "Maryland, my Maryland," and the exultant confederates joined in the chorus with a volume and energy that made the earth fairly tremble. The eyes of Stonewall Jackson kindled with joy. No man ever believed more fervently than did he in the righteousness of his cause, and he felt that his legions now treading for the first time the soil of Maryland had come as liberators of the captives.

The march was resumed on the 6th, General D. H. Hill in charge for the time, Jackson having been hurt by a fall from his horse. A few hours later, Frederick City was reached and the whole army was north of the Potomac. The discipline was excellent, and though the soldiers were almost famished, they were so well-behaved that the citizens who had not fled were soon relieved of all fear.

But Lee and his comrades were grievously disappointed by their reception. The citizens scowled with distrust at the ragged hosts: clearly they were not welcome. The recruiting offices that were opened were visited by hardly a dozen persons wishing to serve in the cause of the Confederacy.

It was under such circumstances that Lee issued the following address to the people of Maryland:

"HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA,
NEAR FREDERICKTON, SEPTEMBER 8, 1862.

"TO THE PEOPLE OF MARYLAND:

"It is right that you should know the purpose that has brought the army under my command within the limits of your state, so far as that purpose concerns yourselves.

"The people of the Confederate States have long watched with the deepest sympathy the wrongs and outrages that have been inflicted on the citizens of a commonwealth allied to the states of the South by the strongest social, political and commercial ties.

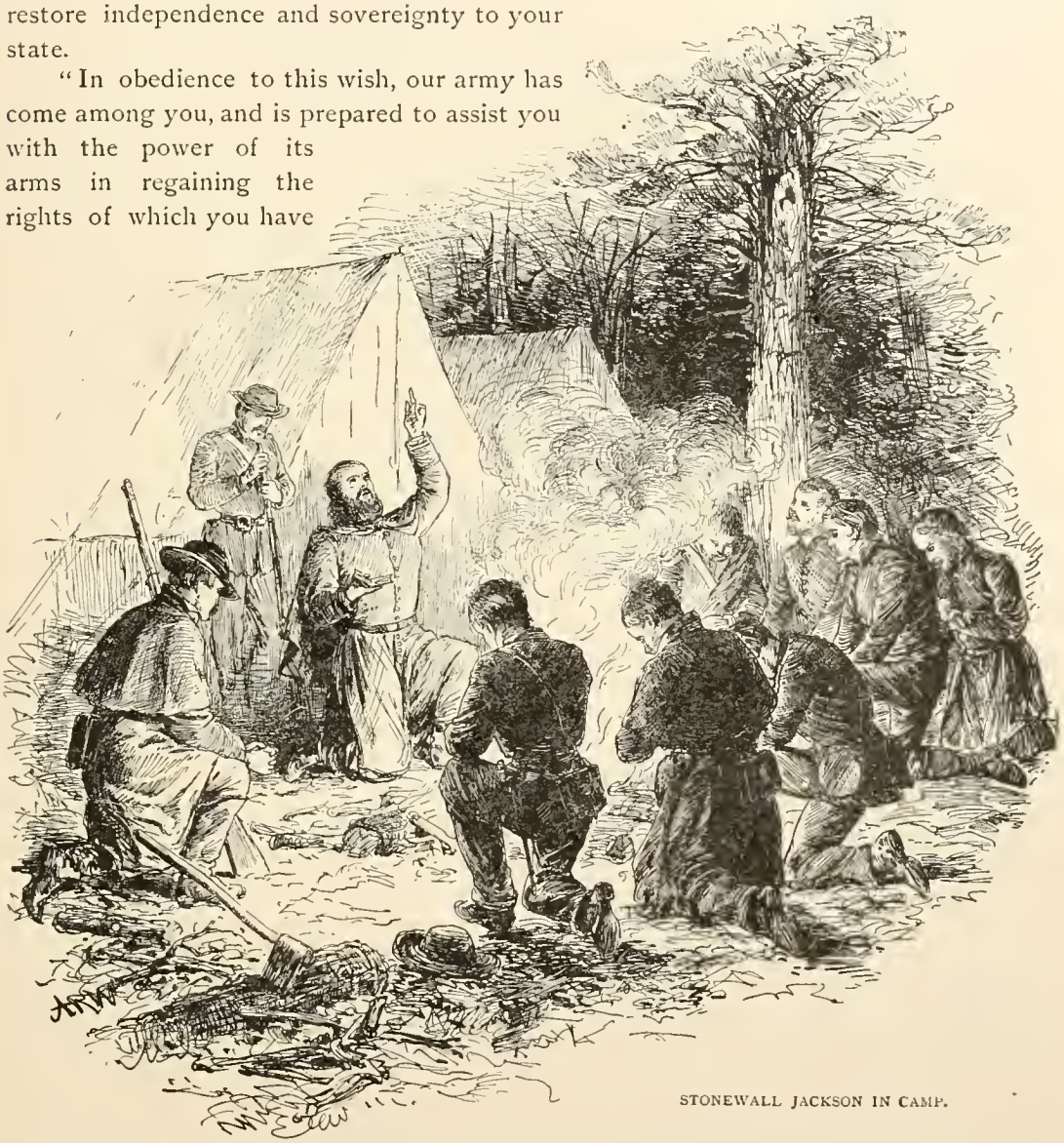
"They have seen with profound indignation their sister deprived of every right and reduced to the condition of a conquered province.

"Under the pretense of supporting the Constitution, but in violation of its most valuable provisions, your citizens have been arrested and imprisoned upon no charge and contrary to all forms of law. The faithful and manly protest against this outrage made by the venerable and illustrious Marylander to whom in better days no citizen appealed for right in vain was treated with scorn and contempt. The government of your chief city has been usurped by armed strangers; your legislature has been dissolved by the unlawful arrest of its members; freedom of the press and of speech have been suppressed; words have been declared offenses by an arbitrary decree of the federal execu-

tive and citizens ordered to be tried by a military commission for what they may dare to speak.

"Believing that the people of Maryland possessed a spirit too lofty to submit to such a government, the people of the South have long wished to aid you in throwing off this foreign yoke, to enable you again to enjoy the inalienable rights of freemen and restore independence and sovereignty to your state.

"In obedience to this wish, our army has come among you, and is prepared to assist you with the power of its arms in regaining the rights of which you have



STONEWALL JACKSON IN CAMP.

been despoiled. This, citizens of Maryland, is our mission, so far as you are concerned. No constraint upon your free will is intended; no intimidation will be allowed. We know no enemies among you, and will protect all, of every opinion. It is for you to decide your destiny freely and without constraint. This army will respect your choice, whatever it may be; and while the southern people will rejoice to welcome you to your

natural position amongst them, they will only welcome you when you come of your own free will.

"R. E. LEE,

"*Gen. Commanding.*"

The response to this appeal, as I have already told you, was discouraging, but of course it could have no influence on the policy of the confederate campaign.

During the second battle of Manassas, the northern end of the Shenandoah Valley was occupied by twelve thousand union troops. Four thousand were under General White at Winchester and the rest at Harper's Ferry under Colonel Miles. When White learned of the advance of Lee to the Potomac, he fell back from Winchester to Martinsburg, while Miles was cut off from Washington by Stonewall Jackson, who, had crossed the river near Leesburg. The federals could have withdrawn into Maryland and joined the troops that were organizing to resist the confederate advance.

General Halleck, who was still acting as commander-in-chief, sent orders that Harper's Ferry should be held to the last. While at Frederick, Lee learned that Colonel Miles was still at Harper's Ferry and he determined to capture the whole force. On the 10th of September, the confederate army turned its face from Washington and marched toward the Upper Potomac, entering the mountainous section of Maryland. Jackson with three divisions was detached to capture Harper's Ferry. Each of these divisions took a different route, the purpose being to unite three days later opposite the position of Colonel Miles and compel the surrender of the federal force. The orders of Jackson were to make all haste immediately after the surrender and join Lee at Boonsboro' or Hagerstown.

Now we can readily see the mistake of General Halleck in ordering that Harper's Ferry should be held at all hazards, for nothing could be gained by success, while there was every reason to believe the defense would fail. General McClellan says his protest against this attempt to retain Harper's Ferry was received with ill-disguised contempt by Halleck. General Lee only followed the policy that any ordinary officer would have adopted, by detaching a force large enough to capture the place; but it is a curious fact that, after all, the blunder of Halleck resulted in great benefit to the union cause.

McClellan pursued the confederate army with all the troops not needed to defend Washington. He had about 100,000 men, besides the garrisons at Washington and Harper's Ferry, while Lee's army was hardly more than three-fourths as numerous. McClellan, as was to be expected, rated the force of the enemy as greatly superior to his own. He followed it cautiously, his advance reaching Frederick on the 12th of September.

On the following day, a union officer picked up a piece of paper in the house that had served as the head-quarters of General D. H. Hill. Unfolding the letter he observed the heading, "Headquarters Army of Northern Virginia, Special Orders No. 191."

It is said that D. H. Hill was impatient with the duties assigned him, and, after reading "Special Orders No. 191," he flung it angrily aside, and it lay unnoticed on the

floor until picked up by the union officer a few days later. The document was of such importance that I give it in full:

"HEAD-QUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA,
SEPTEMBER 9, 1862.

"Special Orders No. 191.

"The army will resume its march to-morrow, taking the Hagerstown road. General Jackson's command will form the advance, and after passing Middleton, with such portion as he may select, will take the route toward Sharpsburg, cross the Potomac at the most convenient point, and by Friday night take possession of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, capture such of the enemy as may be at Martinsburg, and intercept such as may attempt to escape from Harper's Ferry.

"General Longstreet's command will pursue the same road as far as Boonsboro', where it will halt with the reserve, supply and baggage trains of the army.

"General McLaws, with his own division and that of General R. H. Anderson, will follow General Longstreet. On reaching Middleton he will take the route to Harper's Ferry, and by Friday morning possess himself of the Maryland Heights and endeavor to capture the enemy at Harper's Ferry and vicinity.

"General Walker with his division, after accomplishing the object in which he is now engaged, will cross the Potomac at Cheek's Ford and ascend its right bank to Lovettsville, take possession of Loudon Heights if practicable by Friday morning, Key's Ford on his left, and the road between the end of the mountain and the Potomac on his right. He will, as far as practicable, co-operate with General McLaws and General Jackson in intercepting the retreat of the enemy.

General D. H. Hill's division will form the rear-guard of the army, pursuing the road taken by the main body. The reserve, artillery, ordnance and supply trains, etc., will precede General Hill.

"General Stuart will detach a squadron of cavalry to accompany the commands of generals Longstreet, Jackson and McLaws, and with the main body of the cavalry will cover the route of the army and bring up all stragglers that may have been left behind.

"The commands of generals Jackson, McLaws and Walker, after accomplishing the objects for which they were detached, will join the main body of the army at Boonsboro' or Hagerstown."

You remember how General Pope's dispatch book fell into the hands of General Lee a short time before. Now the same misfortune had come to General Lee, whose entire plan of campaign was laid bare to McClellan. I need not tell you that the union commander used the important knowledge thus obtained. Let us see how Stonewall Jackson carried out the duty assigned to him.

On the morning of September 12, he entered Martinsburg and captured a large amount of stores. Pressing on, he reached next morning the outer union line on Bolivar Heights, in the rear of Harper's Ferry. Hill with the advance encamped near Halltown, two miles from Bolivar Heights, the rest of his force being near by. Jackson set out to learn whether McLaws and Walker had arrived. His signals were answered from the opposite mountain, and he then sent couriers to Maryland and

Loudon Heights to find whether the two divisions were in position to join in the attack.

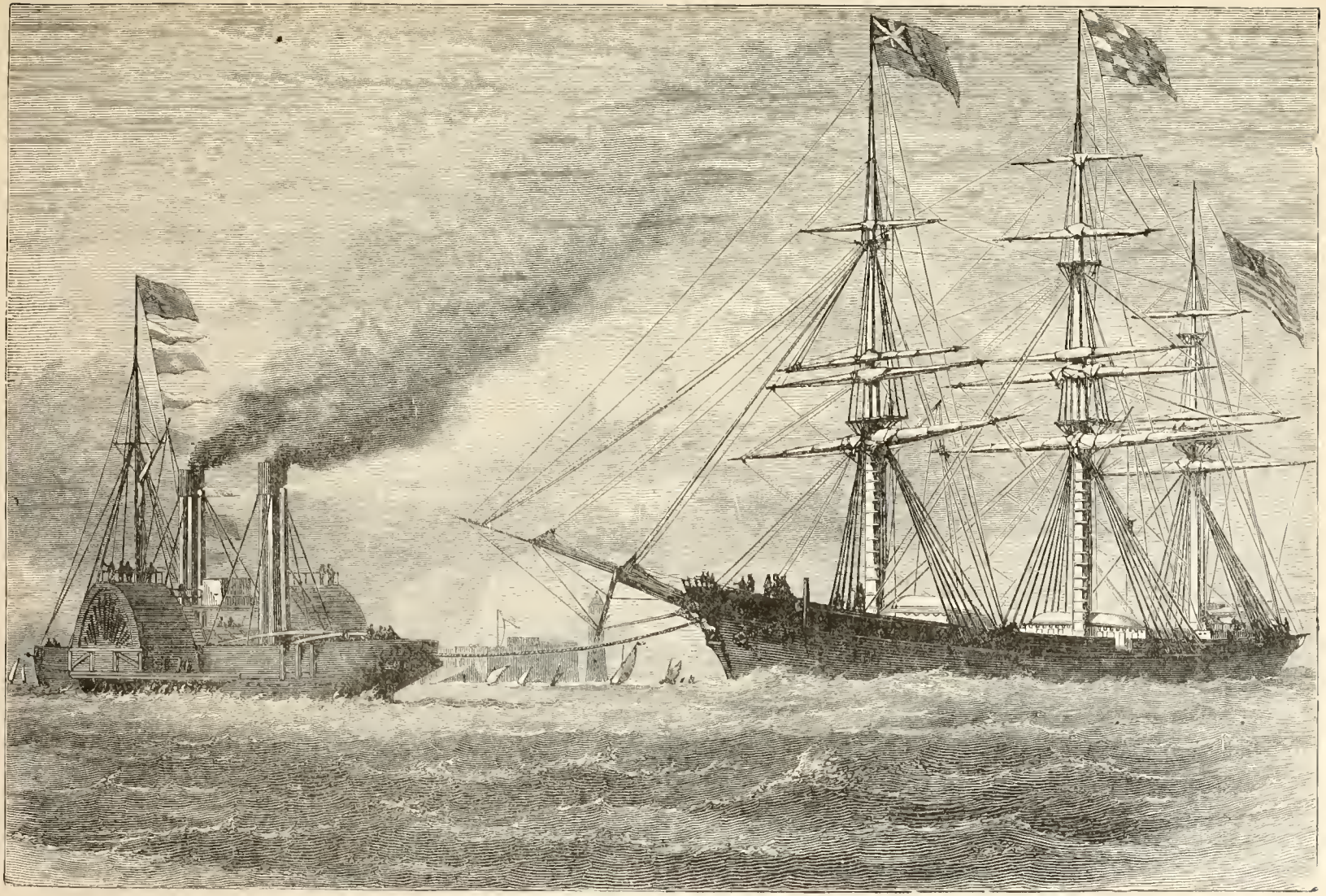
Walker had crossed the Potomac on the night of the 10th, at Point of Rocks, and hurrying to Loudon Heights, occupied them three days later. Jackson's courier arrived shortly after, and galloped back to Jackson with the news that Walker was in position. It was so late in the day, however, that the attack was put off until the morrow. McLaws at that time was working his way up Maryland Heights. As soon as the crest should be reached, Harper's Ferry would be at the mercy of the confederates, as you will see from the following description:

The Elk River Mountains, running north and south across parts of Maryland and Virginia, are cut in two by the Potomac. The rocky wall on the north bank is Maryland Heights and the one on the south is Loudon Heights. Between the latter and Harper's Ferry, the Shenandoah sweeps into the Potomac. Behind the river is a smaller ridge known as Bolivar Heights, which slopes to the southward into the Shenandoah Valley. A small basin is thus formed by the three mountain walls and in it nestles Harper's Ferry.

The mountain peaks are about two miles apart, and a strong body on any one of the heights commands the town below. Colonel Miles posted a force on Maryland Heights, the highest of the mountain peaks, but most of his men were in the valley. Had he moved his entire command to the elevation named, he could have held it until the arrival of McClellan with re-enforcements. The federals ought to have heard the deep boom of Franklin's signal guns. He was hastening to the help of the garrison and took this means to let Colonel Miles know he was coming.

But the union defense of Harper's Ferry was disgraceful, if indeed it can be called a defense. When Colonel Ford on the Maryland Heights learned of the coming of Jackson, he made a feeble show of resistance, then spiked his guns, tumbled them over the rocks and hurried down to Colonel Miles at Harper's Ferry. Finding Maryland Heights vacated, the confederate General McLaws with great toil dragged a number of his cannon to the top and took possession. When he looked across to the other mountain peaks, he saw the confederate flag fluttering in the breeze, while the crests were swarming with gray-coated legions.

Thus each of the three mountain heights commanding Harper's Ferry was occupied by a powerful confederate force, while the union army was huddled in the death-trap below. The investment was complete, and at daylight on the morning of September 15, a terrific plunging cross-fire was opened on the union garrison. It lasted only an hour, when Colonel Miles called his officers together and told them it was useless to try to defend themselves longer. His batteries were unequal to those of the enemy, while his position, directly under the combined forces, forbade all hope. The officers agreed with him, and the white flag was run up through the smoke. Several artillerymen did not catch sight of the token for a few minutes. It thus happened that one or two shots were fired after the signal of submission was made. The last one mortally wounded Colonel Miles. It was fortunate for him that he was killed, for had he survived, his disgrace would have been worse than death.



THE "GEORGE GRISWOLD" ENTERING THE MERSEY.

Harper's Ferry having surrendered, 11,500 men laid down their arms and were at once paroled. The confederates secured 72 guns, 13,000 small arms and a large amount of military stores. When the surrender was made, Stonewall Jackson was leaning against a tree asleep. General A. P. Hill placed his hand on his shoulder, and, as the drowsy lids opened, introduced the federal Colonel White who had come to arrange the terms. Like Grant at Fort Donelson, the commander spoke the word "Unconditional," after which his weary eyelids closed again.

Jackson had slept but a few minutes more, when a courier arrived in hot haste from General Lee, with orders for Jackson to join him at once. Leaving A. P. Hill to receive the surrender and complete the removal of the stores, and ordering McLaws and Walker to follow without delay, Jackson hurried off with his tired men to join his chief.

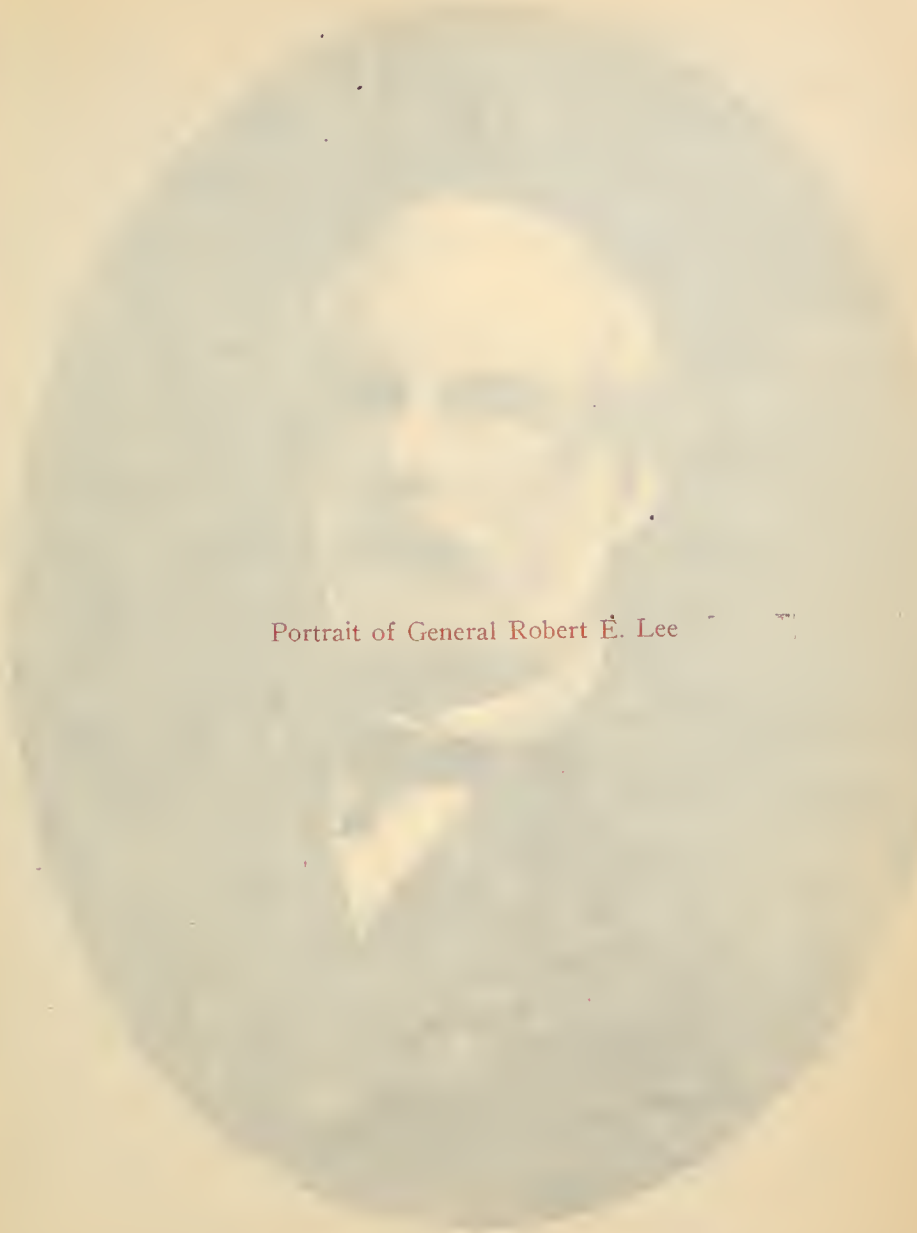
Meanwhile, Lee had been maneuvering to draw McClellan away from Washington and Baltimore, with a view of falling upon them before he could return to their defense. Lee, as you have been told, left Frederick on the 10th, after Jackson had gone, and marching by South Mountain, headed toward Boonsboro'. Stuart, with his cavalry, stayed east of the mountains to watch McClellan, who was carefully advancing. Learning that the federals were approaching from the direction of Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, Longstreet was sent to Hagerstown to check them, while D. H. Hill stopped near Boonsboro', so as to cut off the escape of the garrison at Harper's Ferry and to give such support to Stuart as might be needed.

Lee had no doubt that Harper's Ferry would fall on the 13th, but it did not surrender until two days later. McClellan marched to Frederick City to attack Lee, arriving there on the 12th, and driving out Stuart's cavalry, which was watching him. On the next day Lee's "Special Orders No. 191" fell into McClellan's hands, revealing every thing about the plans of the confederate leader. The knowledge ought to have insured the destruction of Lee and his army.

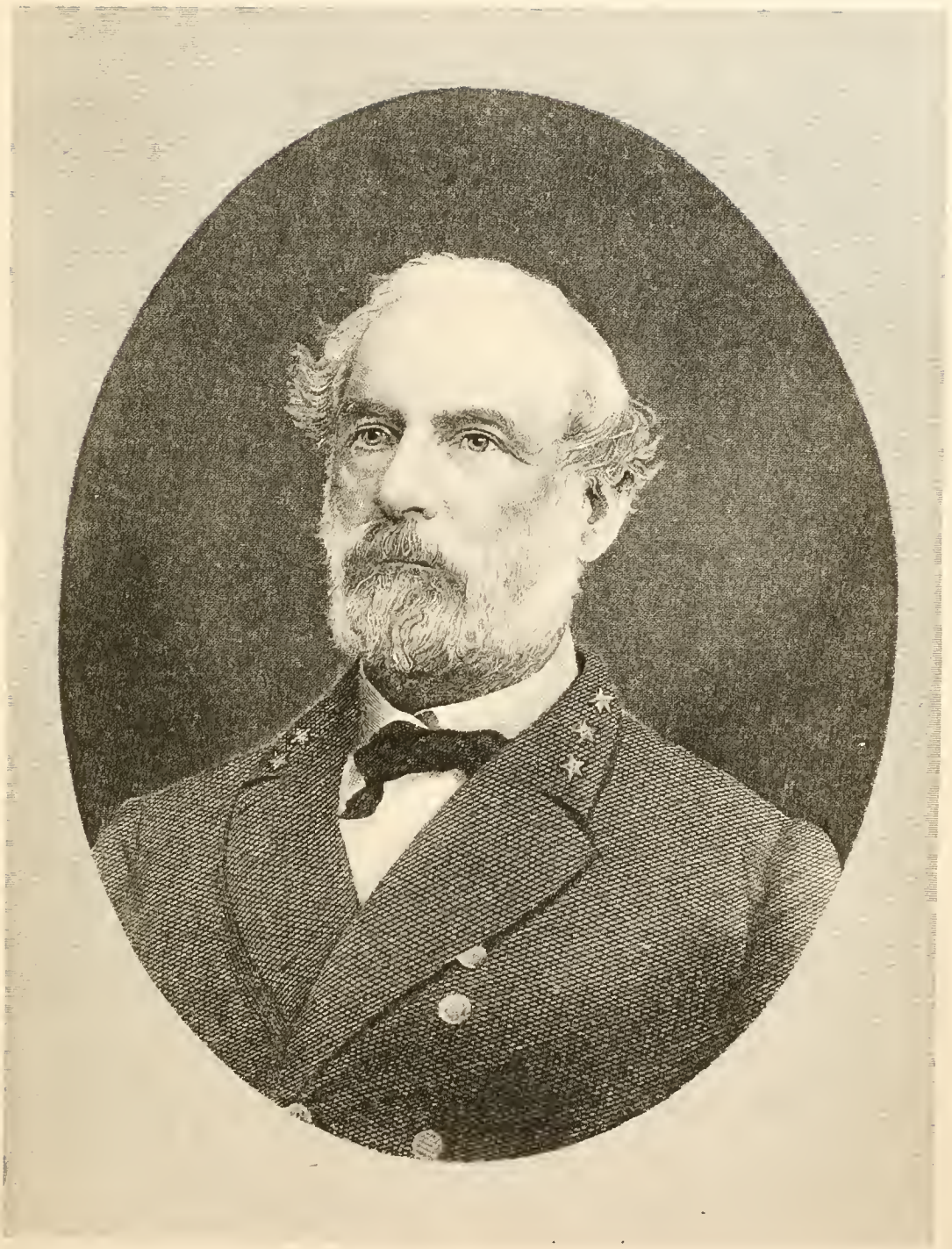
McClellan decided to take advantage of this division of the enemy, by securing the passes of South Mountain, occupying Pleasant Valley, defeating the confederate forces in detail and rescuing Colonel Miles at Harper's Ferry. The union leader marched fast, and on the afternoon of the 13th, was in front of the passes of South Mountain. At that hour the confederate forces were taking position at Harper's Ferry.

The confederate cavalry defending the passes of South Mountain strove to stop McClellan, but he easily brushed them aside. He then decided to throw his center and right against the pass leading to Boonsboro', while Franklin's corps was to force its way through Crampton's gap, attack McLaws in the rear and rescue the garrison at Harper's Ferry.

Soon after McClellan reached South Mountain, Lee learned of his presence there. He knew that the union commander by some unknown means had learned his plans, and that he was placed in great peril. He ordered D. H. Hill to occupy Turner's Gap and to prevent McClellan from forcing his way through. Lee did not know what was going on at Harper's Ferry, but as you know he was confident that it would fall two days before it really did capitulate. He expected that Jackson would rejoin him before



Portrait of General Robert E. Lee



General Robert E. Lee

McClellan could strike him. This plan would have been carried through without break, but for McClellan's accidental finding of "Special Orders No. 191."

General D. H. Hill saw the danger. He occupied Turner's Gap on the morning of the 14th, just as the federal army approached from the other side. The battle opened and lasted through most of the afternoon. Hill was slowly pressed back. Longstreet arrived too late to turn the tide. The union General Reno had been killed, and the loss on both sides was large, but much the greater on the part of the confederates. They had succeeded, however, in delaying the union advance.

The confederate position was untenable, and Lee withdrew from South Mountain in the direction of Sharpsburg, near Antietam Creek. He was thus on the flank of any federal force marching against the confederate detachment before Harper's Ferry. He held also the fords of the Potomac, so that in case of reverse, his line of retreat was open to Virginia.

Still Lee's position was perilous, for his forces were separated not only by the Potomac, but by McClellan's army, which ought to have conquered them in detail. Lee's new position was on a range of hills extending in a semi-circle from the lower part of Antietam Creek to an angle of the Potomac. While making the movement, there was some skirmishing with the federals, but nothing like a general action. Lee was established on the western side of Antietam Creek, whose lower part, near its junction with the Potomac, protected the right of his line. His back was toward a bend of the Potomac, and he faced north-east.

Lee, on learning of McClellan's presence before the passes of South Mountain, had sent for Stonewall Jackson, and, as you were told in another place, that famous officer, who declared that he would follow Lee blindfold, made all haste to join his chief. Lee knew he would be assailed by the powerful army of McClellan, and his purpose was to concentrate his forces and await the shock of battle.

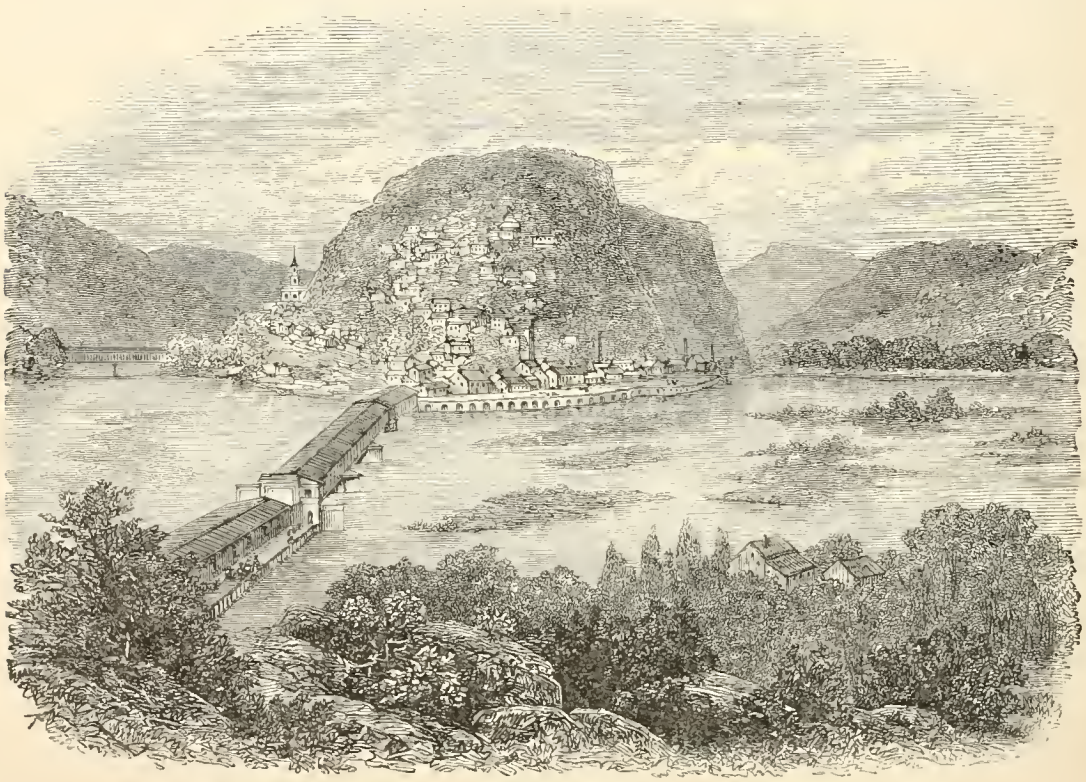
Jackson's division was so worn out that hundreds fell out by the wayside, so that only a part joined Lee on the 16th. Indeed the straggling was so great that Lee was alarmed. His men had been pushed beyond their power of endurance, and he was forced to stop and wait for them to come up. His force at Antietam, when about to give battle, was less than forty thousand muskets.

McClellan reached the other bank of the Antietam in the afternoon. He had 70,000 men; besides, Franklin's corps, that had vainly tried to relieve Harper's Ferry, was near at hand. But McClellan was so tardy in his movements that he gave the enemy much advantage. Instead of attacking at once, he decided to wait till next day, and when the next day came, he thought best to wait until all his divisions had come up. This delay gave Lee time to gather in his numerous stragglers and to secure the rest of which his men stood in such sore need.

McClellan waited until he had let slip the valuable hours and Lee had gained every advantage. Then he prepared to attack him. The battle opened on the morning of the 17th of September. Antietam Creek, which is fordable in many places, was crossed by three stone bridges. These were in front of McClellan, but they were covered by the enemy's batteries.

Hooker began the attack on the confederate left, where Jackson was driven back, after being re-enforced by Hood. The federals pushed on, cleared the woods of the enemy, and took possession of Dunker Church, just north of Sharpsburg. The confederates made a stand a short distance beyond, and succeeded in breaking the union line and driving a part of it back. Confederate re-enforcements soon arrived, and most of the ground that had been lost was regained. General Mansfield (who kept up such a hot fire on the *Merrimac*, when it was fighting the *Monitor* six months before), was killed, and Hooker, suffering intensely from a wound in the foot, was carried from the field.

Hooker's and Mansfield's corps fled in panic, when Sumner's corps arrived and



HARPER'S FERRY.

wrought a change. Lee now brought every available man to the point, until he left only 2,500 in front of Burnside with his 14,000. Burnside lay idle with this large force, a long time after he had been repeatedly ordered by McClellan to advance across the bridge in his front and attack the confederate left. Finally at one o'clock in the afternoon he crossed the Antietam. Another long delay followed, and it was four o'clock before the fight began. The heights opposite Sharpsburg were taken and a position gained from which to enfilade the confederate lines. About this time A. P. Hill arrived from Harper's Ferry with 4,000 men, and vehemently assailed Burnside. His corps fled in panic to the creek, before Hill could bring more than half his force into action.

The fighting ended shortly after, both sides being too much exhausted to continue

it. Each held substantially the same position that was held before Sumner took part. Although McClellan's army outnumbered that of Lee almost two to one, he had not brought all into action. Porter's corps and most of that of Franklin — fully 25,000 — had taken no part at all.

There was great disorganization in both armies. McClellan thought it unsafe to renew the struggle the next morning, for, as he said, he was sure of the arrival of re-enforcements before night. They came to the number of 14,000, and he made ready to resume the battle the next day — that is, on the 19th. But when about to do so, he found there was no enemy in front of him.

You must not think that the retreat of Lee was hurried. Not at all : the 18th was taken up with making his preparations, but he did not move until the morning of the next day. Then he crossed the Potomac under cover of batteries on the other shore. This was at Shepherdstown on the Virginia side. He made his headquarters between Martinsburg and Shepherdstown, and drove back a federal reconnoissance that was pushed forward on the 20th.

McClellan was urged by his government to press Lee, but he was too cautious, and preferred to take measures against a renewed invasion by the enemy — a danger which at that time had no existence.

Both sides claimed Antietam as a victory, and yet neither was fully justified in doing so. It was more like a drawn battle; for, though Lee was compelled to withdraw into Virginia, it was rather because he was so far from his base of supplies and because of his disappointment in securing the recruits in Maryland. His army, however, was intact, and as defiant as ever. McClellan had failed to take advantage of the grandest opportunity of his life : no such chance ever came to him again. Since he was authorized to command only the defenses of Washington, he stated afterward that he fought the battle with a halter around his neck, for if he had failed, he claimed that he would have been executed therefor. No claim could be more absurd.

The North had ground for calling Antietam a victory, for the confederate invasion of the North was ended, and the great fear of the capture of Washington was over. In the battle of Antietam, as you have been told, Lee had about 40,000 men, while McClellan had 82,000, of whom 57,000 were engaged. His loss was 2,010 killed, 9,416 wounded and 1,043 missing. Including those at Crampton's and Turner's Gaps, it amounted to the awful total of 14,970. There is no exact account of the confederate loss. Lee made it 1,567 killed and 8,274 wounded, but other reports make it greater.

CHAPTER XVI.

EVENTS OF 1862. THE FREDERICKSBURG CAMPAIGN.

PRESIDENT LINCOLN was anxious that McClellan should take the offensive against Lee, but the early part of autumn passed in doubt and hesitation, and it was not until the rainy season set in that a definite plan was fixed upon. It was then decided to cross the Blue Ridge Mountains from Harper's Ferry, passing along the south-eastern side of the range, and placing detachments in all the passes, threaten the confederate communications in the Shenandoah Valley.

The army of the Potomac faced once more toward Richmond on the 25th of October, and early in November, it occupied the whole region south-west of the Blue Ridge, the right resting on Harper's Ferry, the center at Snickersville, and the left reaching almost to Paris. It secured Snicker's Gap in the Blue Ridge and was thus brought close to the forces of General Lee. These were drawn up on the further side of the Shenandoah, their line reaching on the left from Charlestown to Front Royal on the right, the greater part being massed between Berryville and Winchester. As soon as the federals occupied the mountain passes, however, Lee fell back, and on the 6th of November, McClellan made his headquarters near Rectortown on the Manassas Gap railway. As the confederates withdrew, he advanced, taking care not to get too close to the enemy.

It was late on the night of November 7, that Burnside and McClellan sat in the tent of the latter talking together. It had been a cold day, and the fine particles of snow sifted against the canvas, like driving sand. These two officers were warm friends, and they had talked a long while, when General Buckingham appeared at the tent as the bearer of dispatches from Washington. Saluting the two officers, he handed a letter to McClellan. The latter broke the seal and read:

"WAR DEPARTMENT, ADJUTANT-GENERAL'S OFFICE,
WASHINGTON, November 5, 1862.

"General Orders, No. 182.

"By direction of the president of the United States, it is ordered that Major-general McClellan be relieved from the command of the army of the Potomac, and that Major-general Burnside take the command of that army.

"By Order of the Secretary of War,
"E. D. TOWNSEND,
"*Assistant Adjutant-General.*"

Without the least agitation, McClellan handed the dispatch to Burnside with the quiet remark,

"Well, general, you are now the commander of the army."

The most creditable fact about the assumption of the command of the army of the Potomac by Burnside is his consciousness of his unfitness for such a responsibility.

He had refused it twice before, but he was now forced to take it by a peremptory order. McClellan turned over the command to him, and, as directed, repaired to Trenton, N. J., to await further orders.

On assuming charge of the splendid host, Burnside spent several days in making himself familiar with his new and vastly enlarged duties. One important step was that of consolidating the six corps of his army into three grand divisions of two corps each, the right being under General Sumner, the center under General Hooker, and the left under General Franklin. A body of reserve was formed under General Sigel.

On the 11th of November, General Halleck, the commander-in-chief of all the armies of the United States, visited Burnside and talked over the plan of campaign which the latter had sent to Washington two days before. It was decided to march swiftly down the Rappahannock, cross by means of ponton-bridges at Fredericksburg, and then to march upon Richmond by way of Hanover Court House.

This movement was begun on the 15th. General Sumner was ordered to advance on Fredericksburg, followed by Franklin and Hooker. The right rear of the army was to be protected by General Pleasanton and his cavalry, while Sigel was to guard the upper Potomac and to occupy the direct route between Gordonsville and Washington.

The success of this plan depended largely on its being carried out before discovery by Lee. The latter had meant to hold the union army at bay by a series of maneuvers and counter movements until the season should be too far advanced for an offensive campaign against Richmond.

Burnside had hardly made his first move when Lee penetrated its purpose. A part of his army marched on a line parallel with that of Sumner, so that when the latter arrived opposite Fredericksburg, they found the confederates ahead of them. The force was weak, and Sumner wished to cross at once, but Burnside would not permit him to do so. Once more delay had destroyed the golden chance for the union arms. Had Sumner been allowed to cross as he desired, he could have overcome the feeble force before him. Burnside held him until the rapidly increasing hosts in front had rendered their position impregnable. The entire confederate army by the 25th of November was concentrated on the heights overlooking Fredericksburg.

Lee had neglected no opportunity to strengthen his position. A strong battery was posted on the river bank four miles below the city to prevent any federal gun-boats coming up the Rappahannock, and the fords were also closely watched by cavalry.

Fredericksburg is on the south bank of the Rappahannock, and directly opposite is a range of hills completely commanding the city. On the southern shore the land is lower, but the channel is deep, and a line of bluffs afford good intrenchments to a force after crossing. The offset to this advantage is a range of hills inclosing the level ground. They begin on the west of Fredericksburg—where it is called Marye's Hill—gradually sloping away from the city, until at the distance of a mile from the river, it becomes a level plain.

Burnside hesitated to attack this confederate Gibraltar, but the impatience of the North was too great to be disregarded. He determined to cross as soon as he could

complete the building of his pontoon bridges. On the night of December 10th, his chief of artillery posted one hundred and forty-seven cannon so as to command the city, to protect the crossing of the river and to engage the attention of the confederate batteries beyond. His plan was to cross at five different points by means of pontoon bridges, three of which were to span the river opposite Fredericksburg and two a couple of miles below. Sumner's and Hooker's divisions were to go over by the upper and Franklin's division by the lower bridge.

Lee could not stop the federals, and all his dispositions were with the view of attacking them after they got across. He placed several regiments, however, so as to harass them while making their way over.

At two o'clock, on the morning of December 11, the working parties moved carefully down to the edge of the river and began launching boats and building the bridges. The heavy fog hanging over the stream gave ground for hope that they would not be discovered, but the confederates were on the alert, and were not long in finding out what was going on. Two cannon were fired as a signal that the federals had begun laying the bridges.

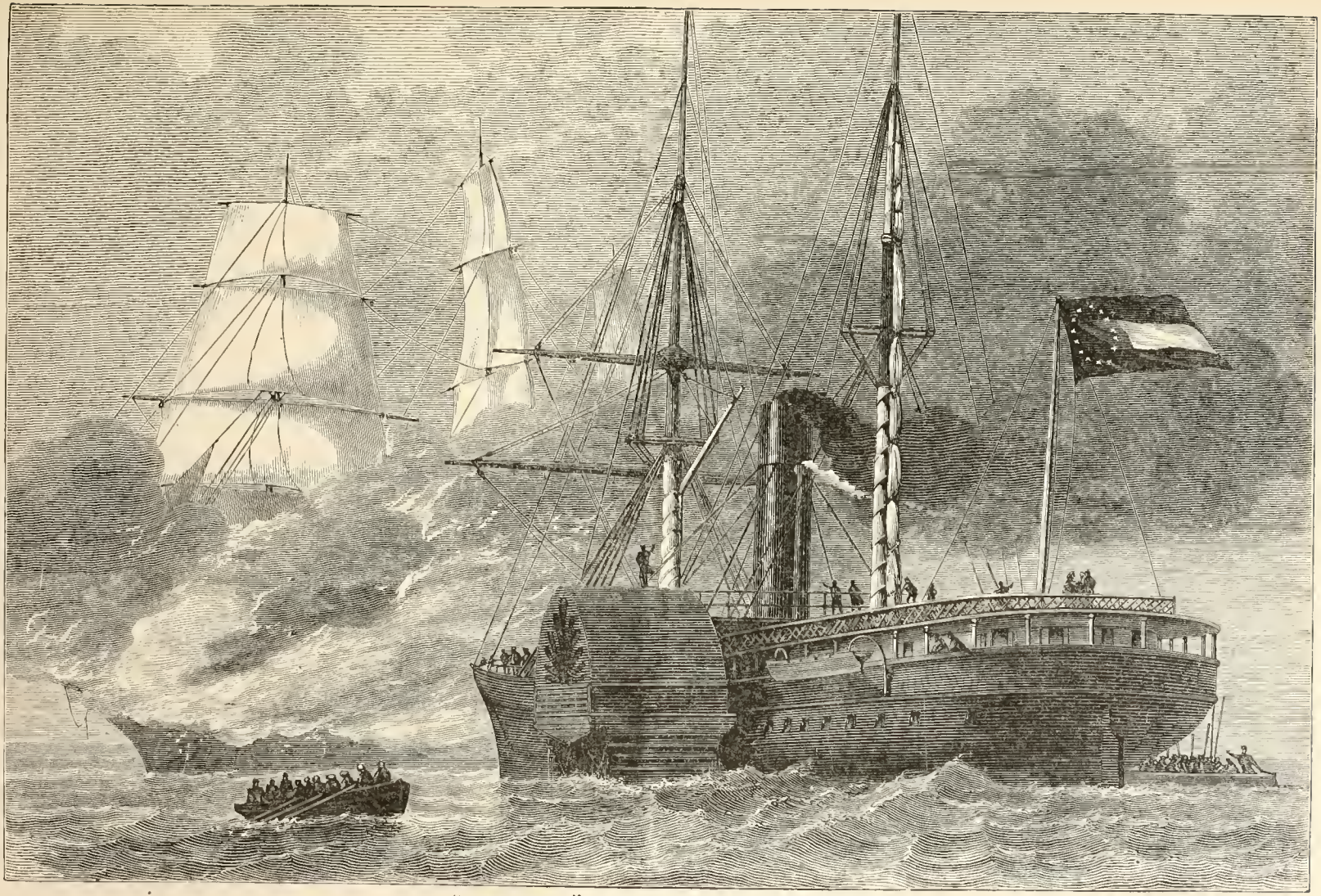
As soon as it was light, the sharpshooters, in Fredericksburg opened on the bridge-builders with such effect that they were driven from their work. The attempt was repeated several times, but the fire was too hot to be faced. Finally Burnside's one hundred and forty-seven cannon opened on the city and drove out not only the sharpshooters but the inhabitants that had come back after their flight a few days before.

There were other sharpshooters however, so close to the edge of the river that the cannon could not be depressed enough to reach them. Three regiments were therefore thrown across in boats and they succeeded in driving out the troublesome marksmen. The bridges were then finished and a force crossed and occupied the town. Two miles below, Franklin laid his bridges and went over without trouble.

The fog and mist served the federals well, and all through the chilly night of December 11, the following day and a part of the next night, the union legions tramped over the pontoon bridges that spanned the Rappahannock. By daylight, on the 13th, the army of the Potomac was on the southern shore, and at the same hour the army of Northern Virginia was gathered on the heights behind Fredericksburg.

About ten o'clock the fog lifted and the combatants gained a clear view of each other. The column of General Franklin was seen advancing to attack the confederate right. There was a misunderstanding of Burnside's order to him, and instead of making a vigorous assault, he only executed a feint. The fighting which soon opened lasted through the day. Here and there the federals won a little ground, but they could not hold it long. General Meade made a gallant charge against Stonewall Jackson on the right, and opened a gap in the confederate line. But no re-enforcements were sent him, and he was driven back with a loss of three thousand seven hundred men, the loss of Jackson being nearly as great.

As the attack on the enemy's right was repulsed, Sumner assailed Lee's left. It was about noon when the desperate attempt was made to seize Marye's Hill. From the moment the federals emerged from the city they were exposed to a murderous fire.



THE "NASHVILLE" DESTROYING THE MERCHANTMAN.

They were mowed down and gaps opened in their ranks which Longstreet said could be seen a mile distant. But the brave men pressed forward with a courage that has never been surpassed, until the torrent of musketry swept them down as a scythe levels the swath of grass. The shattered columns reeled and fled, leaving one half of their number dead and dying on the ground.

Directly behind came the dauntless Hancock, who gathered up the fragments of the first line, and took them with him into the maelstrom of death. He led five thousand on the charge, and at the end of fifteen minutes two thousand were dead or helpless on the ground. Others pressed forward to their aid, and with the ranks melting like snow-flakes in the flame, they held their ground until, when it was clear to all that not a man could live, the survivors fell back.

This was not fighting — it was slaughter. When Burnside saw his fierce charges repulsed a second and third time, he became desperate. Walking excitedly back and forth on the bank of the Rappahannock, he exclaimed again and again, "That crest *must* be carried to-night!"

Hooker remained to be sacrificed and he was now ordered forward. He crossed with his three divisions, reconnoitered the ground and then saw that he had been told to do what mortal man could not do. He went back to Burnside and begged him to withdraw his order, but the commander refused. Night was coming, and Hooker was ordered forward. He opened with a tremendous artillery fire, hoping to make "a hole sufficiently large for a forlorn hope to enter." The fire made not the slightest impression.

At sunset 4,000 men were ordered to charge with empty muskets, for there was no time to load and fire. The federals went forward with the same sublime courage as before, and had nearly reached the stone wall near the base of the hill, when the confederates opened upon them. In a few minutes seventeen hundred were stretched upon the ground and the rest broke and fled.

There is reason to believe that but for the approaching night, Burnside would have ordered another "charge," as he called the wholesale slaughter of his brave men. Fortunately the gathering gloom prevented that crime.

No pen can picture the horrors of the darkness that followed. The army of the Potomac had suffered the bloodiest repulse in its history. Of the brave host that had marched up the heights of Fredericksburg, in obedience to the command of their leader, nearly twelve hundred were dead, almost ten thousand wounded, and a third as many missing. The confederate loss was about half as much.

In the gloom of that wintry night, the different commanders gathered around Burnside and begged him to order the army back across the Rappahannock, while it was possible for it to escape; but Burnside compressed his lips and shook his head. He had determined that another charge should be made on the morrow. It is only just to believe that he was thrown off his mental balance by the awful disaster that had overtaken his army, and that he did not realize the meaning of what he said. He was induced, however, to heed the counsel of his wiser lieutenants, and, at the last moment, he gave over the wild scheme.

The army of the Potomac had received a well nigh mortal hurt The soldiers lay

on their arms all day, unspeakably depressed, for they expected every moment that Lee would attack them. It was in his power to capture or destroy them, but the confederate leader could not have known the frightful condition of the union army. He had the cannon-balls heated with which to bombard Fredericksburg, where the federals were huddled, but his ammunition was low and he saved it against a renewal of the union attack.

During two days and nights the dead and wounded lay on the frozen ground where they had fallen. What a fearful picture of war were those agonized men begging for the help that was denied them! Those who heard the cries that night, and are living to-day, shudder at the recollection. Finally Burnside asked for and obtained a few hours in which to carry off the wounded.

The night of December 15 was accompanied by violent wind and rain. Amid the cold and tempest and darkness the miserable army of the Potomac made its way back across the river, which it should never have left under such leadership.

While General Lee was awaiting attack, he discovered that the enemy had gone. It had escaped him, just as he had escaped McClellan a short time before. A few days were enough to show Lee that nothing more was to be feared from the army of the Potomac until the opening of spring. The confederate army, therefore, established itself in winter quarters along the Rappahannock from Fredericksburg to Port Royal. There it remained as comfortable as was possible in rude huts until the winter was over.

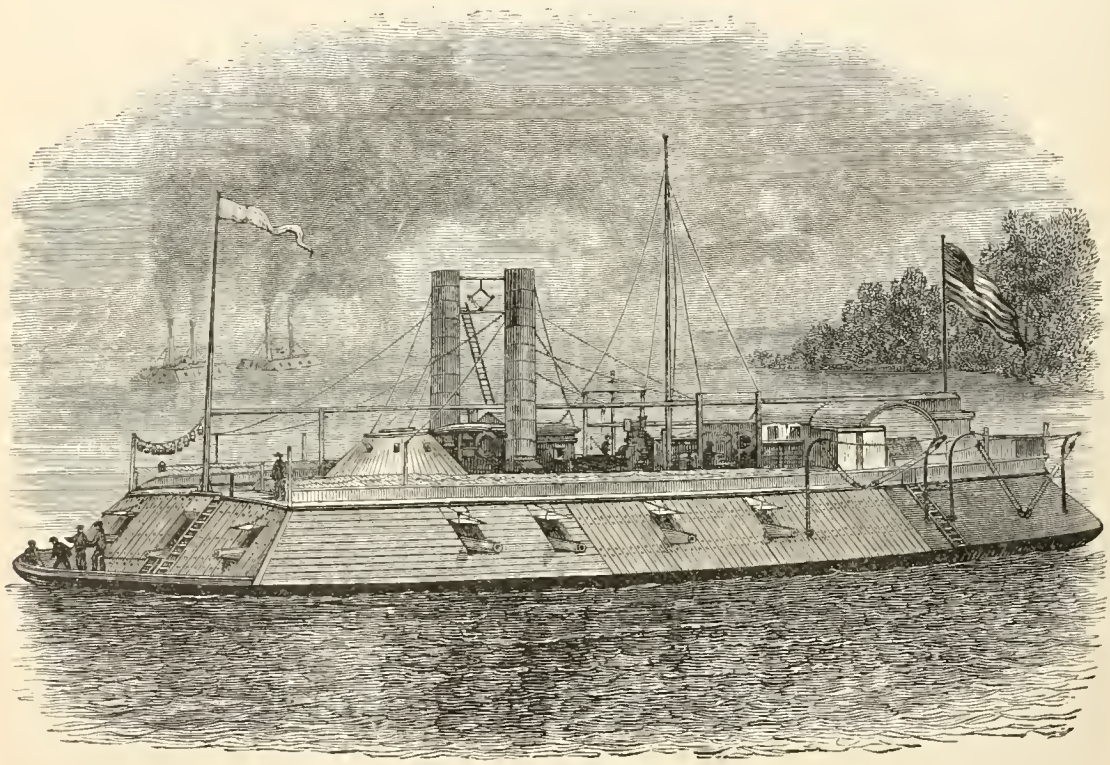
We have now reached the close of 1862, the "year of battles," as it has been called. It marks an eventful period in the history of our country. In the south and west the union cause had made marked progress, but everything had gone wrong with the grand army in the east that had striven so long and heroically to capture Richmond. McClellan had brought the union hosts close enough for them to see the steeples and spires of the confederate capital, but they had been hurled back with such wrathful force that the wonder is that any escaped. The confederates had been compelled in turn to withdraw from their invasion of the North, but in their retreat they delivered the most fearful blow against the union army that it had ever received.

Both sides felt the exhaustion of the war. As early as April 16, the Confederacy had passed a conscription act which made all men under the age of thirty-five years and over eighteen years soldiers for the war, or until the age of thirty-five. Every male citizen within the prescribed ages was removed from the control of the state of which he was a citizen, and placed at the disposal of President Davis until the close of the war.

The contracts previously made with privates were annulled, and those under eighteen, or more than thirty-five, were required to stay in the service for ninety days after the passage of the act, without regard to their term of enlistment. This provision was interpreted by those whom it affected as granting them a discharge on the 16th of July, but before that date, the war department issued an order requiring them to remain in the service. Even those fifty years old were compelled to stay in the ranks. The government not only held on to all whom it had in service but gained many recruits by calling upon every class, including physicians.

These rigorous measures caused much dissatisfaction, and Governor Brown of Georgia protested strongly; but, severe as they were, they were soon followed by still more severe ones.

The North was humiliated by the disasters that had befallen the army of the Potomac under its incompetent leadership, but its resolution to push the war for the Union to the end was unshaken. Every one now realized that we were engaged in one of the most stupendous wars of modern times. The losses on each side had been



FEDERAL IRON-CLAD RIVER GUNBOAT.

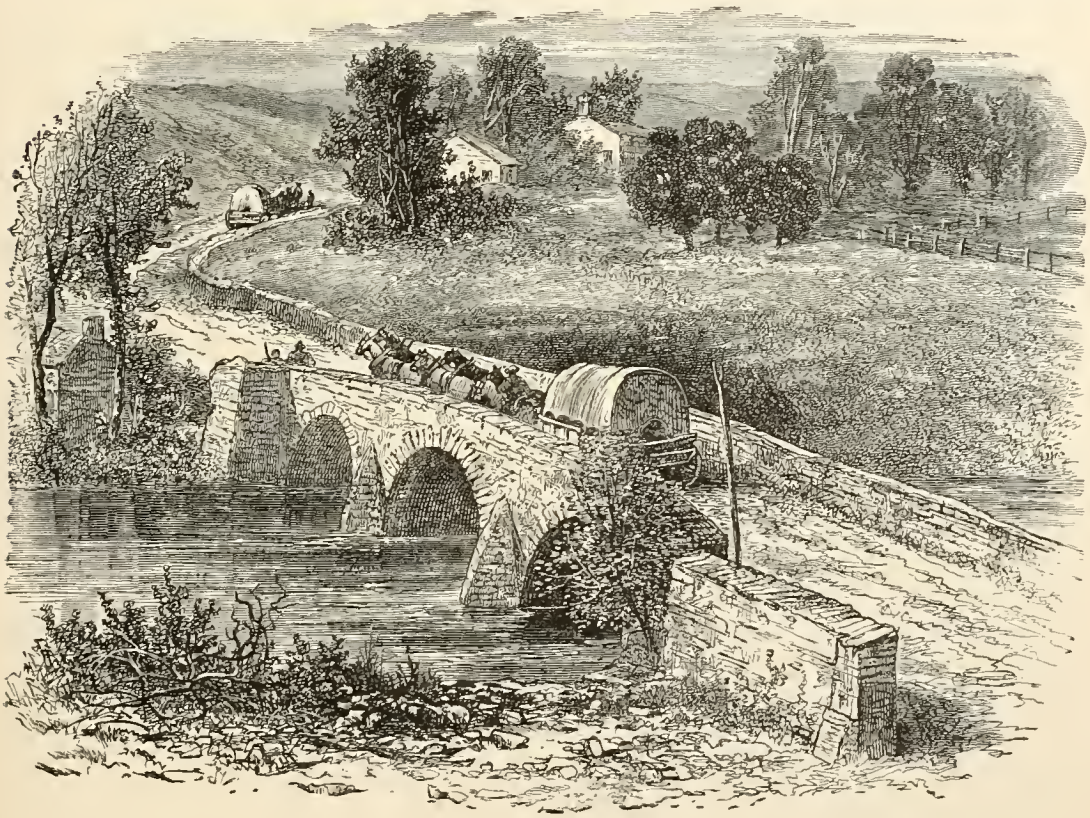
enormous, and hundreds of thousands of brave men, skillfully led, still confronted each other. There were no signs of yielding on the part of the South, whose success was such that most of her people believed that the independence of the Confederacy must be secured very soon.

But the North, despite its reverses, was as determined as ever to press the war until the Union should be fully restored. With its boundless resources it was sure of final triumph, and the determination to conquer the Confederacy was as strong as ever.

CHAPTER XVII.

EVENTS OF 1863. THE WAR IN THE SOUTH-WEST.

THE year 1862 went out with one of the great battles of the war in progress. The army under Rosecrans was posted part at Nashville and part along the line of the Cumberland River. It was watched by Bragg and his guerrilla leaders, Morgan



ANTIETAM BRIDGE.

and Forrest. On the 26th of December, Rosecrans advanced against the enemy. Less than forty miles from Nashville, at Murfreesboro', the confederate army awaited him. The skirmishers of the latter swarmed in the woods along the roads, so that the union advance was slow. On the 30th, Rosecrans was close to Murfreesboro', and considerable fighting took place. The pickets of General Polk were driven in, and when the two armies bivouacked for the night, their camp fires were within sight of each other. The face of the country was very uneven, being broken into a number of low hills,

which hid the divisions of the enemy, while the density of the forest so shut out the divisions of the federal army from one another that thorough direction was impossible.

The opposing armies faced each other on the banks of the Stone River, a short distance north-west of Murfreesboro', and portions of each were on both sides of the stream. During the night, a confederate brigade passed around the federal rear and assailed the wagon trains, capturing a large amount of stores. In this daring attack, the cavalry passed entirely around the union army, joining their comrades on the flank opposite to that which they left.

Rosecrans' plan of attack was to mass his forces on the left in such numbers as to crush the confederate right wing under General Breckinridge, before help could be sent to him from the west side of the river. Bragg's plan of attack was precisely the same and he was the first to move.

A dense fog hung over the banks of the river, when at daylight Bragg fell with great fury on the federal right. The attack was a surprise, the two divisions of Johnson and Davis being swept away in such confusion that a number of guns and prisoners fell into the hands of the enemy, and aides-de-camp were sent to General Rosecrans with tidings of the disaster. The next division to receive the assault was that of Sheridan, which fought desperately and held its ground, though assailed in front and on one flank. He was finally compelled to yield a little, having lost his train and used up the ammunition of his infantry, but he formed a new line, maintaining his position with the bayonet.

In order to make his proposed attack on the confederate right, Rosecrans had to cross the river, on the opposite side of which was the single division of Breckinridge. To do this was useless, of course, and the union force was concentrated on the endangered right. The skillful movement was hardly completed, when the whole confederate army, with the exception of Breckinridge's division, was hurled against the right. They rushed out from the cedar thickets they had won, but were driven back by a murderous fire. The charge was made four times, when the confederates took shelter among the cedars.

Breckinridge's division of 7,000 men was now brought across the river and the attack was twice renewed and twice repulsed. Night finally settled over the hosts and for a time their struggles ceased. The moon shone brightly, and by its light some of the federal batteries kept up the fire, but that was all. Since the right wing of the union army had been driven in upon the left, the confederates had possession of a large part of the field formerly held by their enemies.

On New Year's day, 1863, there was some cavalry skirmishing, but both armies were too much exhausted to do much more than re-unite their shattered ranks and prepare for the decisive struggle. Confederate detachments were sent out to threaten the federal communications, to capture supplies and to gain information. General Rosecrans withdrew a short distance and intrenched himself, sending his wounded to the rear. He prepared to dispute any attempt to gain possession of the road to Nashville, with which place communication had been cut several times during the progress of the battle.

On the morning of January 2, some demonstrations were made along the federal line, but the battle did not fairly open until three o'clock in the afternoon, when the federal division that had been sent across the river was attacked with great impetuosity and driven back. Receiving re-enforcements, however, they in turn repelled their assailants, who, leaving many dead and wounded on the field, withdrew to their own lines.

Soon afterward, Rosecrans gave the order for the entire line to advance. The confederate right wing was broken and the flank placed in such danger that Bragg decided to withdraw his entire force and darkness once more settled on the bloody field.

A violent storm raged on the 3d, and nothing was done by either army, but Bragg was convinced that to retain Tennessee he must abandon Murfreesboro'. Accordingly, the prisoners and baggage-wagons were sent to the rear, and a little before midnight the army began its retreat. A new position was taken beyond Duck River, about fifty miles to the south of Murfreesboro'. The latter town was occupied by the federals, January 5, and fifteen hundred of the confederate sick and wounded were found there.

It is worthy of statement that the battle of Stone River or Murfreesboro' was one of the few engagements of the war fought in accordance with best military rules. Both Rosecrans and Bragg displayed ability of the highest order. Their entire armies were engaged, each seemed to anticipate the purpose of the other, and each attacked where he was the strongest and where he had reason to believe his adversary was the weakest. Both forces fought with the greatest bravery. The total number engaged was about 90,000, of which more than a quarter was killed or wounded. The killed, wounded and prisoners on each side were about the same. Such a battle ought to have been a turning-point of the war, but it was not.

Galveston was recaptured by the confederates on the first day of the new year. General Magruder collected artillery at Houston, and occupied in force the works erected opposite the island on which Galveston stands. He converted two steam packets into gun-boats, and rendered them shot-proof by bulwarks of cotton bales. These were manned by Texan cavalry and were accompanied by tenders and yachts full of volunteers and spectators. While the troops were crossing the long railway bridge connecting the island with the mainland, the gun-boats steamed up and engaged the union gun-boat *Harriet Lane*. The latter drove off one of the gun-boats, but the other, the *Bayou City*, ran alongside, and under a sharp fire of rifles, the Texans leaped on board the *Harriet Lane*. Her commander, Captain Wainwright, was shot down and most of his men killed. The federal flagship *Westfield* tried to go to the help of the *Harriet Lane*, and was blown up by her commander, who, unable to get off in time, perished with some of his crew. Meanwhile the land troops had got possession of the town, and the union troops, having no artillery, surrendered. The blockade in that section was immediately raised and the port was reopened to commerce. Texas remained in the possession of the confederates to the close of the war.

Our government was still anxious to capture Vicksburg, which was the great obstacle to the navigation of the Mississippi and was in the hands of a strong confed-

erate garrison. General Sherman had been superseded by General McClernand, and it was decided to make a third attempt to reduce Vicksburg. Before doing so, however, two army corps under Morgan and Sherman, subject to the general directions of McClernand, were sent against Arkansas Post, a fortified village on the Arkansas River. On the 9th of January, the troops landed four miles below the fort and at once proceeded to invest it. It was defended by General Churchill with a force numbering between three and four thousand men. The strength of the position was increased by the river marshes around them, and it looked as if they could be held against almost any attacking body.

The federal army and fleet began the attack on the 11th. The fire was so heavy that on the outer line of intrenchments being carried, the garrison surrendered. The fort was blown up and the prisoners sent to Cairo. The federals returned to Young's Point, a few miles below Vicksburg, where they established a permanent camp. General Grant soon joined them and took command.

Grant's plan of campaign against Vicksburg was different from that which Sherman had tried with such poor results. He saw that the defenses toward the Mississippi and the lower part of the Yazoo River were too strong to be taken by storm. He decided, therefore, to turn the rear of the lines, if it could be done, and having secured an entrance into the upper part of the Yazoo, get behind the batteries at Haines' Bluff.

General Grant received great help from Admiral Porter's iron-clads. One of these, the *Queen of the West*, opening communication with the union fleet in the lower part of the Mississippi, attacked a confederate steamer under the guns of Vicksburg, and disabled her; though the *Queen* received no little damage herself. She and the *Indianola* pushed their way up many of the creeks, bayous and streams where no vessel of the kind was expected. They underwent a hot fire from the banks, and in many places were exposed to danger from torpedoes. They secured much cotton and destroyed more, and inflicted such damage that the most strenuous efforts were made by the confederates to capture them. At last both were taken.

During the month of April, a combined naval and military force went through the Yazoo Pass into the Tallahatchee, and southward, almost to the junction of the Tallahatchee with the Yalabusha. By this means, a large quantity of cotton was collected, the gun-boats being finally checked by the guns of Fort Pemberton. An attempt was made to take this fort, but it was unsuccessful, and the expedition with some risk made its way back to the Mississippi.

At the same time, another naval force sailed from the Mississippi with the purpose of penetrating into the Upper Yazoo. It is hard to conceive of the difficulties in the way of such an expedition. These inland waters were so choked with trees, vines and vegetation that it looked impossible to advance. In many cases, the channels had to be widened before the iron-clads could enter at all. For long distances, the creeks were shadowed by forests of giant cypress, sycamore and cottonwood, beneath which twilight always reigned. So little was known about the streams that no one could tell where the windings would take them. The confederates collected bands of negroes and felled trees

McCLELLAN AT THE BATTLE OF ANTIETAM. (*See page* 152.)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

both in front and in the rear of the gun-boats, while the sharp-shooters in the woods picked off many of the sailors.

Admiral Porter soon saw that his vessels were doomed to destruction or capture unless he could have assistance. He, therefore, sent to General Sherman asking for instant help. Sherman with one division of his corps hurried to where the gun-boats were hemmed in up a narrow creek, and drove away the confederates. The fleet then came back to the Mississippi, its venture having proven that a passage could not be forced into the Upper Yazoo. That plan was given up, as was also the scheme of opening a new channel for the Mississippi. The levees along the Yazoo, however, were cut through in several places and a large area of the country in the rear of Vicksburg was overflowed. The object of this was to destroy communication between Vicksburg and Jackson and thus to shut off supplies for the garrison. Some of the banks of the Mississippi were likewise destroyed and much of Arkansas and Louisiana was flooded.

Admiral Farragut now attempted to force his way up the lower part of the Mississippi, past the batteries at Port Hudson and so on to Vicksburg. On the night of March 14, when the darkness was impenetrable, his flag ship *Hartford*, followed by the others, steamed slowly up the river. Just as the leading ship had passed the first line of batteries at Port Hudson it was discovered, and a huge fire which was started on the bank revealed the advancing vessels.

Finding themselves discovered, the fleet opened fire. The mortar-boats threw shells in such numbers, and with such precision, that the defenders were dismayed, but they speedily rallied and opened with their guns. The *Hartford* was struck, but she and the *Albatross* got past the batteries. In the severe fight that followed, a number of the vessels were roughly handled. The darkness and smoke so obscured the aim of the gunners that there was great danger of the vessels firing into each other. The order was therefore given for them to cease firing.

Only the *Hartford* and *Albatross* got past. The remaining thirteen vessels were forced to turn back. In doing so, the *Mississippi* got aground, was set on fire and abandoned. The blazing vessel drifted down stream, blowing up with a concussion that shook the rest of the vessels near her.

You would think that Farragut was now in a position of the utmost peril, for with only his two vessels he had Vicksburg in his front, Port Hudson in his rear and was liable to an attack by the confederate iron-clads. However, he was not molested, but was able to blockade the mouth of the Red River and thus give considerable help to the federal plans.

Farragut, however, had failed to do what he set out to do, and the land force advancing from Baton Rouge to take part in the siege of Vicksburg, he deemed it best to retire. General Grant kept his position before Vicksburg.

CHAPTER XVIII.

EVENTS OF 1863. CHANCELLORSVILLE.

LET us return to a study of the events in the east. Burnside could not retain the command of the army of the Potomac after his dreadful disaster of December, 1862. The officers under him had lost all confidence in his ability to lead the army. In the hope of doing something to regain prestige, Burnside, on the 16th of January, made preparations for renewed operations. At dusk the ponton-trains were brought from Belle Plain and placed in position near the Rappahannock. His purpose was to move his army a few miles further up that river, cross at the fords and attack the left flank of General Lee. The next day the movement was postponed, but began on the 20th. Generals Hooker, Franklin and Sigel marched up the river toward the fords, where they hoped to be able to cross.

The rain fell in torrents, until men and horses were hardly able to flounder through the mud. The tempest continued during the two following days. The condition of the army was pitiful : it looked for a time as if they would perish in the cold, slushy mud, which threatened to overwhelm them. Inasmuch as there was no hope of surprising the confederates, the expedition (often known as Burnside's *Mud March*) was given up, and the troops returned to their quarters.

Burnside was aware that some of his generals had criticised him in severe terms to the government. He sent a list of names to President Lincoln with the demand that they should be removed or his own resignation accepted. The first name on this list was that of General Joseph Hooker. Burnside's resignation was accepted, and on the 26th of January General Hooker was appointed his successor.

We must not forget that on the 1st of January, 1863, President Lincoln's emancipation proclamation went into effect. You know that the war had been begun with no clear purpose of freeing the negroes of the south, but the military necessity of the step was soon seen by all.

Before giving an account of the next campaign in which the army of the Potomac was engaged, it is necessary that some other facts should be made known. On the 3d of March, Congress passed a conscription act, by which, with certain exceptions, all able-bodied male citizens of the United States between the ages of twenty-one and forty-five years, and all persons of foreign birth of the same ages who should have declared on oath their purpose of becoming citizens, were included in the national forces. The persons enrolled were liable to be called into the military service for two years from the 1st of July, to continue in service for three years.

It is estimated that at the beginning of 1863, the army of the United States, including the regular troops and volunteers obtained under various calls made by the president,

numbered almost 700,000 men. About this time the confederate army also was at its strongest.

When General Hooker took command of the army of the Potomac, it was a patriotic rabble, which in the course of the following three months, he trained into a fine army of 133,000 men, of whom more than 12,000 were cavalry. The army of

ADMIRAL PORTER.

Northern Virginia under Lee, lying in Hooker's path to Richmond, had less than one half as many.

It soon became known in the confederate capital that another attempt was to be made against that city. It was threatened by General Foster, operating from North Carolina, by General Peck from south-eastern Virginia, and by General Key from the vicinity of the Pamunkey.

Hooker decided to attack Lee at two different points. He proposed to cross the Rappahannock and Rapidan a short distance west of Fredericksburg, thus assailing the left wing of the confederates, while at the same time his own left wing should occupy the heights and seize the Richmond railway. The cavalry was to help by passing around the confederate position, cutting off the retreat of Lee's army to Richmond, destroying the railways and burning the bridges over the North and South Anna rivers.

GENERAL BURNSIDE.

Hooker began this movement on the morning of April 27. A column of 36,000, composed mainly of the corps of Meade, Howard and Slocum, marched thirty miles up the Rappahannock and crossed at Kelly's Ford, without opposition. Meade now marched down the other side of the Rappahannock, driving away several bodies of confederates, and ten miles below cleared the way so that Couch with 12,000 men passed over. The four corps, numbering 48,000, took different roads to Chancellorsville,

where they had been ordered to rendezvous. Sickles with 18,000 more was but a short distance behind them.

An excellent beginning had been made and General Lee was taken by surprise. He did not know from what point the attack was likely to come, and it was not until the afternoon of the 30th that he was satisfied that the decisive struggle would be at Chancellorsville. Stonewall Jackson, who was twenty miles away, was ordered up at once. He obeyed with his usual celerity, so that within twelve hours his last man had reached the spot. Before noon on May 1, the confederate army was drawn up in battle line in front of the Wilderness.

At this time, the federal cavalry had got possession of the Richmond railway, so that if Lee should be defeated, his retreat would be greatly endangered. Many of his officers had misgivings, but Lee himself was cheerful and confident. He issued his commands with that calm self-reliance which did so much to inspire others with his high courage, and countermanded an order sent to Longstreet to join him with his troops from Suffolk, since the latter position was threatened by the union General Peck.

Hooker showed almost as much boastful confidence as did General Pope the preceding summer. He published a general order, on the 30th of April, in which he said that the operations of the previous three days had shown that the enemy must either ingloriously fly or come out from behind his defenses and give the unionists battle on their own ground, "where," said he, "certain destruction awaits him."

On the 1st of May, Hooker ordered an advance from the neighborhood of Chancellorsville toward Fredericksburg. Learning directly after this that Lee was moving with his whole army against him, he posted himself in a line of felled trees and earthworks, which he hurriedly strengthened during the night. His purpose was to choose his own fighting ground, but Lee was too wary to be drawn into the trap. Hooker was trying to flank Lee, who resolved in turn that Hooker himself should be flanked.

To do this, Lee was compelled to take desperate chances, but he had done so before and he did not hesitate to do so again. He sent Stonewall Jackson with 30,000 men to pass around the right rear of the federal army, while Lee with only 20,000 masked the movement by keeping up a noisy demonstration in front. By thus dividing his inferior army, the confederate chieftain so weakened it that it would have been easy to crush each division in detail.

The country was highly favorable for such a secret movement. From a few miles west of Fredericksburg, to a point fully ten miles south and west of Chancellorsville, it was covered with dense forests of pine and scrub oak, interlocked by matted undergrowth. Jackson set out at daylight, the thick woods hiding him from sight. At one point, in passing over a bare hill, he was seen by the federals, but they had no suspicion of his purpose. A few shells were sent toward him and he was allowed to pass. He was going southward and a good many believed he was retreating. By the middle of the afternoon, Jackson had traveled fifteen miles and had gained the road from Orange to Fredericksburg, south of the Rapidan. When he halted he was within two miles of General Howard's eleventh corps.

That officer did not dream of danger. His weak intrenchments were unguarded and

his men had stacked their arms and were getting their suppers ready. Suddenly the air resounded with yells, and Jackson's men burst from the woods like a cyclone, sweeping every thing before them. The whole corps broke in the wildest panic and fled toward Chancellorsville. At the same time Lee was pounding away in front, and it looked for a time as if the whole union army would be stampeded by a force not one half so numerous. The German division of Howard's corps seemed to be frantic with terror. Its commander was Carl Schurz, whose military ability was very slight.

The reserve under General Sickles, and a body of cavalry under General Pleasanton, fought like heroes to stem the tide. Posting themselves near an opening in a stone wall, through which the masses were tumultuously rushing, they managed to rally some of the artillery, though nothing was able to check the infantry. General Berry, while striving to stop the flight, was killed. Howard did all he could to arrest the panic and Hooker risked his life to save the honor of his army. The turbulent flight and pursuit disorganized the pursuers almost as much as the fugitives. Berry's men poured in an artillery fire which checked the confederates, and night coming on, the fighting soon ceased.

The federal army was now in a contracted position, between Chancellorsville and the fork of the two rivers. Hooker's plans had been so damaged that it was doubtful whether they could be re-arranged. Stonewall Jackson had met with a brilliant success, but it was destined to be his last.

This remarkable man felt that the federal army stood on the brink of ruin, and he longed for daylight in which to complete his work. His heart and soul were wrapped up in the success of his beloved cause, and it seemed to him that the hour of triumph was at hand.

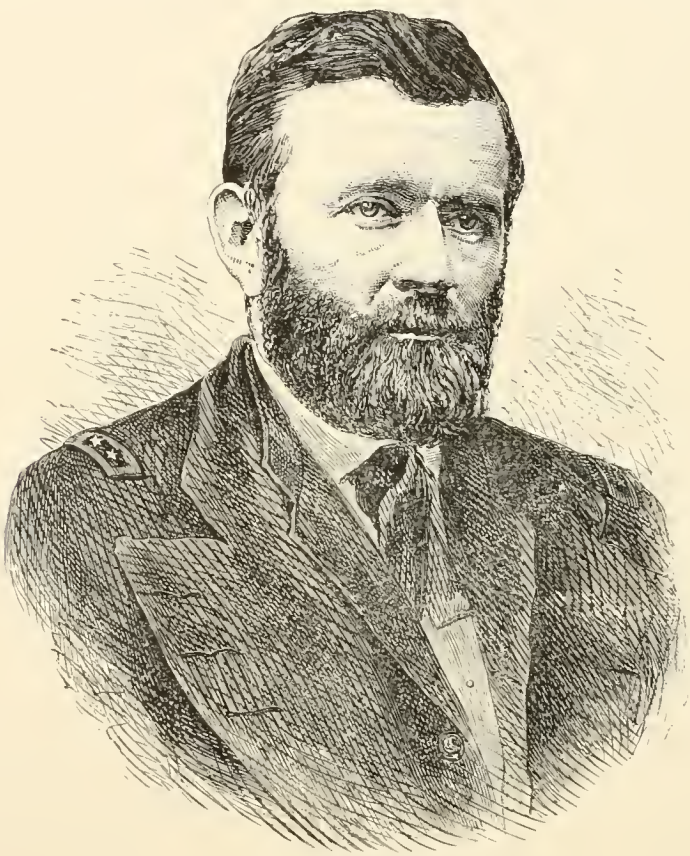
In his anxiety to learn about the federal position, he rode forward early in the evening with several of his staff, along the plank road. They advanced cautiously for a hundred yards or more in front of the outer line of skirmishers, where they peered through the gloom toward the lines of the enemy. The figures of Jackson and his staff were dimly visible to a South Carolina regiment, who took them for federal cavalry and fired into them. One of the staff was killed, two wounded, and Jackson, seeing the danger, wheeled to the left and galloped into the woods to escape another volley. The men fired again, when less than a hundred feet distant. Jackson was struck three times —twice in the left arm, and once in the right hand. He dropped the bridle reins with his left hand but seized them again with his bleeding right. His alarmed horse whirled and plunged toward Chancellorsville, and a limb struck Jackson in the face, knocked off his cap and nearly unseated him. He managed to keep his place until he reached the road, where one of his staff helped him from his steed and laid him at the foot of a tree.

Just then the staff officer saw a horse and rider standing perfectly motionless a few feet away, as if both were looking at the strange scene. The officer called to this man to ride away and find out what soldiers had fired upon them. The horseman wheeled without a word, galloped off and did not come back. Who he was was not known until after the war, when Captain Revere of the federal army said that he was the man.

He had gone somewhat astray while on a reconnoissance, and knowing the group to be confederates, he took care, when ordered away, not to come back.

Jackson was so severely wounded that he was unable to walk, even when supported by friends, and was carried on a litter to the rear. A part of the distance they were exposed to such a hot artillery fire that the bearers had to lower the litter and lie down beside it.

Jackson's wound soon assumed a grave character. His arm was amputated, but



GENERAL GRANT.

pneumonia set in and he died on the following Sunday, May 10. Well might General Lee exclaim, when the news reached him, "I have lost my right arm!"

The battle of Chancellorsville was resumed on the morning of Sunday, May 3, General J. E. B. Stuart succeeding to the command of Jackson's corps. While suffering intensely from his wounds, Jackson sent an urgent message to Lee to renew the attack at daybreak, and Lee was disposed to act upon the advice.

During the night, Reynolds' corps from Fredericksburg had joined Hooker, who had 75,000 men, a force greatly superior to that of Lee. The federals, you must bear in mind, were in one compact body, while the confederate army was divided. The

advantage was overwhelmingly on the side of the union force. All it needed was fair leadership, and unfortunately that was just what it lacked.

At daylight, the federal army occupied the triangle of ground extending from the lower part of the Rapidan to Chancellorsville and thence to the United States Ford on the Rappahannock. Thus it presented two fronts, at right angles to each other, to the enemy. The two lines met in front of Chancellorsville. Lee now undertook to drive out Hooker from this favorable position.

The confederate leader first concentrated a number of guns on the spot and set fire to a large building at the cross roads, which Hooker had used for several days for his head-quarters. Stuart with Jackson's corps began the attack, but the fire from the federal intrenchments was so hot that they wavered. They were quickly rallied by General Rhodes and the federals were driven toward Chancellorsville.

General Slocum, holding a strongly fortified position in another part of the field, was also assailed, and after a brief struggle, driven behind a second line of breastworks in the rear of Chancellorsville. A little before noon the federals had been compelled to withdraw a mile toward the river, and Hooker was forced to form, as best he could, a second line.

General Lee was satisfied for the present with what he had done, and now turned his attention toward Fredericksburg, where important events were going on.

At the time Hooker undertook his movement against Richmond, General Sedgwick's division crossed the Rappahannock below Fredericksburg, so as to divert a part of Lee's army. It did not take him long to find out that the confederates had evacuated the works, except Marye's Heights, and were on their way to fight Hooker at Chancellorsville.

Sedgwick made several balloon reconnoissances and discovered that the garrison was very weak. It would have been an easy task to capture it, but, though he must have known of the great service he could render his chief, he waited four days before trying to do so. Although he had sent off re-enforcements, he still had 25,000 men, which was more than Lee had in front of Hooker at the time Jackson made his flank movement. Had he marched upon the rear of Lee, the latter must surely have been routed.

Sedgwick set out on the evening of May 2, to attack Marye's Heights. He had but four miles to march, but he did not catch sight of the enemy until the middle of the next day. Two Mississippi regiments composed the garrison. They were surrounded and captured, with the loss of about a thousand men in killed and wounded. Early that evening Sedgwick sent a column a few miles along the road toward Chancellorsville.

General Lee having learned what had taken place dispatched General McLaws to check the advance of the federal detachment. Sedgwick found himself in front of a rough breastwork at Salem Church. He attempted to carry it, but suffered repulse with much loss.

The battle was renewed the next morning, but General Early arriving with re-enforcements easily repulsed the federals. Not only that, but the latter were out-

flanked, and lost Marye's Heights as well as a convoy. Fearful now that his communications with Fredericksburg would be cut, Sedgwick hurriedly withdrew to Banks' Ford, leaving behind many mules, horses and supply wagons. The retreat across the river was disorderly, an attack by the confederates adding to the panic.

Having disposed so effectually of Sedgwick, Lee turned his attention again to Hooker. The latter had been outgeneraled and defeated on the 2d and 3d of May, but he still talked of crushing Lee, after allowing him to exhaust himself by a series of scattered attacks. He made no attempt, however, to do any thing when Sedgwick was fighting a part of the army, and when such a tempting opportunity offered. But Lee, as soon as he was done with Sedgwick, followed up the advantage he had gained.

On the morning of the 5th, he planted heavy guns within range of the United States Ford and threw a number of shells among the wagon trains, but no important movement took place that day. A great many trees had been torn to splinters by the tempest of shot, and the woods were parched and dried by the extreme heat. At different points they burst into flames, and a number of the wounded that were unable to help themselves were burned to death. There seemed to be nothing lacking to add to the horrors of the scene.

A violent rain storm set in on the 5th, accompanied by vivid lightning. The Rapidan and Rappahannock rose rapidly and threatened the bridges at the United States Ford, the only means of retreat left open to the federals. Hooker consulted with his leading officers and decided to get back over the Rappahannock, while he was able to do so. Preparations for the retreat were begun at dusk on the evening of the 5th. The storm and crashing thunder helped to conceal the movement, and the layers of pine boughs placed on the bridges muffled the sound of the wheels. While it was under way, General Meade held the lines of intrenchment surrounding the ford; but if the confederates knew what was going on, they were too much exhausted to prevent it, and at daybreak on the morning of the 6th, the whole army of the Potomac was across the Rappahannock and on its way to its old camp at Falmouth.

General Hooker was foolish enough to issue an order on the 6th of May in which he congratulated his army on its achievements. Here is an extract: "The events of the last week may swell with pride the heart of every officer and soldier of the army. We have added new luster to its former renown. We have made long marches, crossed rivers, surprised the enemy in his intrenchments, and, wherever we have fought, have inflicted heavier blows than we have received."

Such boasting could deceive no one. Hooker had lost 17,000 men, of whom 12,000 were reported as killed or wounded, and 5,000 missing, one half of whom were from Howard's corps. The confederate loss was about 13,000, of whom 10,300 were killed or wounded, and 2,700 missing. The disaster was so overshadowing that President Lincoln and General Halleck visited Hooker in camp to learn for themselves the cause. Coming back to Washington, they made a statement to the public to the effect that the demonstration of General Hooker was not a disaster but simply a failure. But even such high authority could not mislead the people: General Hooker had been shamefully beaten, and every body knew it.

"GUILTY"—READING THE SENTENCE OF A COURT-MARTIAL ON BOARD U. S. WARSHIP

CHAPTER XIX.

EVENTS OF 1863. EARLY OPERATIONS IN THE WEST.

WHILE these stirring events were taking place, the Mississippi was still closed at Vicksburg and at Port Hudson. It was open above and below, but so long as Vicksburg held out the great Father of Waters was impassable.

You have been told of the efforts to capture Vicksburg, and have learned that none succeeded. But when General Grant set himself a task, no matter how difficult, he never gave up: he held on with unyielding tenacity. And General Grant had made up his mind that Vicksburg should be taken.

You have learned of the partial success of Farragut in getting by Port Hudson. He went past with only the *Hartford*, his flag-ship, and the *Albatross*, and the enterprise was such a failure that the land forces advancing from Baton Rouge to take part, turned about and went back. Farragut's attempt was made about the middle of March, and it was in the following month that Porter and his gun-boats became so entangled among the streams in the rear of Vicksburg that he had to send to General Sherman to help him out.

General Grant's plan was to cut off confederate communication with the east by turning the defenses of the Mississippi and the Yazoo. On the 29th of March, General McClernand was sent to occupy New Carthage, some distance to the south. At the same time, General Banks advanced from New Orleans, so as to threaten Port Hudson in company with the fleet lying near.

The movements of Banks and the ships were much hindered by the burning of bridges and the placing of obstructions in the river. It was a sugar producing section, and hundreds of families fled with their slaves into the interior. Banks' force was so strong that the confederates could not stop him. He entered the Bayou Teche region to the west of the Mississippi, often skirmishing with the enemy and always driving him before him. Opelousas, a hundred and eighty miles north-west of New Orleans, was reached on the 20th of April, and soon after he established himself at Simmsport, on the Atchafalaya, near its junction with the Mississippi. You will remember that the Red River, which enters the Mississippi between Port Hudson and Natchez, was blockaded by Farragut with the two vessels that got by the river batteries some weeks before.

Admiral Porter, who at this time lay with his fleet above Vicksburg, had made several ineffectual efforts to join Farragut below. The final attempt was on the 16th of April, and it proved to be one of the most exciting events of the war.

Eight gun-boats, three transports and a number of barges laden with supplies got ready to run the gauntlet during the darkness of night. About ten o'clock, when a light mist was rising from the river, these vessels slipped their moorings, while the

thousands of union troops stationed above the town watched the scene with breathless interest. The huge, dim hulls that had stood silent so long in the water, began creeping slowly and noiselessly down the river. As they glided away, they looked like enormous clouds somewhat darker than the enveloping gloom, soon mingling with and disappearing in the night. Not the least sound marked their progress.

The multitude of watchers peered into the darkness and listened for the roar of the batteries that was sure sooner or later to break upon the solemn stillness.

Minute after minute passed until a half hour had gone by and still every thing was as quiet as the grave. Another quarter of an hour passed without the firing of a gun. Could it be that the fleet was to drift past without discovery and harm?

It was nearly eleven o'clock when through the gloom two vivid lines of flame ran the whole length of the heights, and the earth shook with the crash of artillery. The fleet had been detected, and the forts opened with all their guns, throwing shot and shell with such prodigious vigor that it seemed impossible for a vessel to escape.

It was Admiral Porter's plan that his gun-boats when abreast of the batteries should engage them with their broadside guns, and then, if possible, descend the stream under the screen of their own smoke. But the batteries were the first to fire, which they did as soon as they caught sight of the shadowy hulls moving down the river.

The fire was terrible. All the way, even to Warrenton, the confederate guns belched flame and shot and shell, each battery opening as soon as the fleet came within range. Soon a great glare lit up the heavens and many spectators cried out, "Vicksburg is on fire!" It grew in intensity, and it did indeed look as if the place was burning; but the flames were seen to be above the city. It was a vast beacon-fire, kindled by the confederates, so as to show them the gun-boats. Started near the great bend in the stream and burning with little smoke, it lit up the Mississippi as if at noonday.

This beacon-fire not only helped the enemy, but aided the gun-boats in locating the batteries. The vessels kept on down the river, firing as they went. It was a great artillery duel, in which, as you can readily see, the advantage was on the side of the confederates.

The *Forest Queen*, one of the transports, was disabled by a shot in the hull, and by one through the steam drum. The *Henry Clay*, another transport, right behind her, was stopped in order to save her from running into the other. The crew of the *Henry Clay*, finding themselves in full range of the shore batteries, launched the yawl, sprang into it and made for the shore. A few minutes later the abandoned vessel caught fire from the explosion of a shell in the cotton packed around the engines, and, with the flames streaming upward and the volumes of smoke rolling over the river, it drifted down stream.

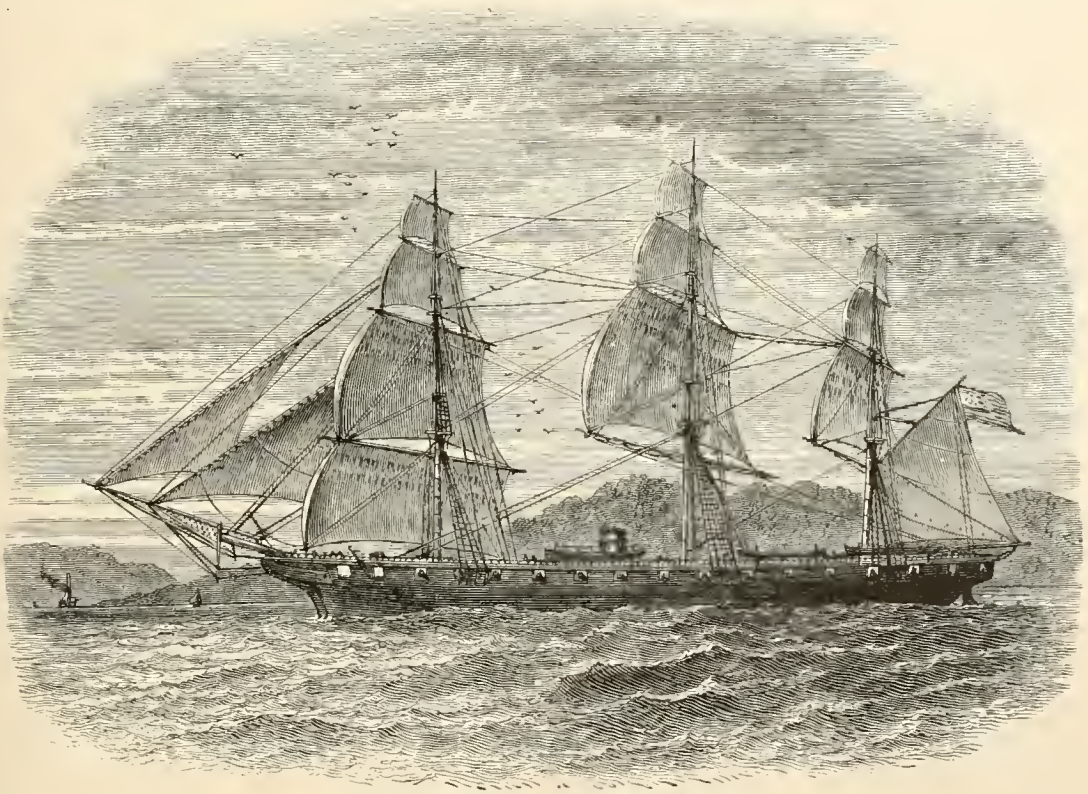
A gun-boat towed the *Forest Queen* out of danger, while the third transport, the *Silver Wave*, got by without any harm. On the *Benton*, Porter's flag-ship, one man was killed and two wounded by the bursting of a shell. This was all the injury done to life. The success was entire, and Porter was safe in the river below Vicksburg.

As you may well suppose, General Grant was highly pleased with the exploit of Porter, and he prepared six more transports to run the flaming gauntlet. He wished to

send supplies to the army with which he hoped soon to attack Vicksburg on the south. Accordingly six vessels, towing twelve barges, made the attempt on the night of April 22, with the result that all got through uninjured except one vessel and six barges.

By this time, Grant himself had reached New Carthage, where Admiral Porter's gun-boats were stationed. Some days later, he moved still further south to Hard Times, on the Louisiana shore of the Mississippi. He was thus posted opposite Grand Gulf, a little below the mouth of the Big Black River.

Grand Gulf was strongly fortified, but it was necessary that it should be captured without delay. Grant had several times ordered General McClernand, when at New



THE "HARTFORD" (ADMIRAL FARRAGUT'S FLAG-SHIP).

Carthage, to make the effort. McClernand made so many excuses and held back so long, that Grant saw the chance slipping by; so he went to the front himself and took command.

On the 29th of April, he embarked a part of his troops on board the transports and barges, and moved to the front of Grand Gulf. His plan was that Porter's gun-boats should silence the fortifications, and that the troops should then land, under cover of the gun-boats, and carry the place by storm.

The attack from the river opened at eight o'clock in the morning and before two o'clock the lower batteries were silenced. The upper battery consisted of guns of

greater caliber, which were so hard to reach that Porter was unable to stop its fire. All this time, Grant was on a tug in the river carefully watching the battle. He felt that so long as the guns of the enemy could not be silenced, the risk to the lives of his men was too great for him to try to storm the works. He decided to land lower down the river and take the position in reverse.

Accordingly, the army was disembarked and ordered to march down the western bank, and prepare to cross the river opposite Bruinsburg. As soon as it was dark, the gun-boats engaged the batteries, under cover of which all the transports got by with little injury. The next morning the soldiers embarked, and the Thirteenth Corps landed on the eastern bank of the river, and hurried toward Port Gibson, near the Bayou Pierre and joined to Grand Gulf by railway. Other troops followed.

By this time, General Pemberton, in Vicksburg, began to feel alarmed. He telegraphed to General Joseph E. Johnston, chief commander of the confederate forces in the west, for instructions. These came back in the shape of an order for him to attack General Grant without delay. Johnston, however, was not able to send any re-enforcements, for he had all he could do to attend to Rosecrans in Tennessee.

In obedience to his orders, General Pemberton directed General Bowen, commanding at Grand Gulf, to cross the Bayou Pierre and do his utmost to check the advance of the federals upon Port Gibson. At two o'clock on the morning of May 1 (just at the time Hooker was confronting Lee at Chancellorsville), the advance of Bowen's division was encountered four miles from Port Gibson. A hot fight opened, and at nightfall the confederates were forced back toward Port Gibson.

Continued re-enforcements arrived for the federals, and shortly after the battle opened, Grant was in personal command. The country was so broken by swamps, marshes, ravines and cane-brakes that there was little room for strategy, but the men fought fiercely and scores of dead bodies were left where they had fallen in the dismal jungles.

The federals advanced in force on the morning of the 2d, and found that the confederates had fallen back across the two forks of the Bayou Pierre, on the road to Grand Gulf, burning the bridges behind them. The flight of Bowen was so hurried that he left many of his wounded behind in hospitals. A brigade of General Logan's division was moved forward to engage the attention of the enemy, while a floating bridge was thrown across the south fork of the bayou at Port Gibson. As soon as this bridge was finished, General McPherson's corps passed over and hurried toward the north fork, eight miles away. At that point the bridge was still burning. Vigorous efforts soon put out the flames, and during the night the bridge was repaired. Just as day was breaking, on the morning of May 3, the troops crossed and pursued the confederates to Hankinson's Ferry, on the Big Black River. Desultory fighting continued through the day and a great many prisoners were taken by the federals.

Grant's success was so marked that General Bowen saw it was beyond his power to hold Grand Gulf. Accordingly he withdrew, so that when Admiral Porter, on the morning of the 3d, made a demonstration against the town, no enemy was there. On the same day, General Grant rode into Grand Gulf and found it in the possession of

Admiral Porter's naval force. The place was very strong, and in a short time would have been much stronger, so that the promptness of Grant was wise in every respect.

The confederates felt that their true course was to concentrate at Vicksburg. Before leaving Grand Gulf, they blew up their magazines and buried or spiked their cannon. They were unable to take away their heavy guns, and thirteen fell into the hands of the federals.

The vigilance displayed by General Grant during this campaign was wonderful. For three days he was without sleep, sending minute instructions to his subordinate commanders at distant points and looking after almost every detail. One of his biographers says that he constantly directed the quartermasters and commissaries, the movements of troops and the transportation of stores and ordnance, the plans of reconnoissances and the positions of important batteries. General Pemberton, in his report to his government, said that the movements of Grant were so rapid, and his facilities for transportation so great, that his own actions were much embarrassed.

Grand Gulf was made the federal base of operations, and Grant told Sherman that the road to Vicksburg was now open. But that stronghold was not yet ready to fall before the conqueror.

At the time the larger part of the union army moved from Milliken's Bend, Sherman was directed to make a demonstration against Haines' Bluff, with a view of preventing re-enforcements leaving Vicksburg for Grand Gulf. Sherman crossed the Mississippi, landed his troops on the left bank of the Yazoo, and in conjunction with the gun-boats, attacked the position on the 6th of May. It was not intended to take the place, and on the next day the expedition returned.

The original purpose of Grant was to collect his forces at Grand Gulf, and to gather at that place a large supply of provisions and ordnance stores, before marching against Vicksburg. An army corps was then to be sent to co-operate with General Banks in his movement against Port Hudson, and afterward the forces were to reunite. General Banks, however, could not return to Baton Rouge from his position west of the Mississippi, before the 10th of May, and Grant was, therefore, compelled to give up that part of his plan.

But time was beyond value. Beauregard would soon send troops to Jackson, and the true policy was for Grant to strike at once. He resolved to attack that town himself, before it could be reached by the enemy. At Hankinson's Ferry, which he reached on the 3d, he waited some days for wagons and supplies, and for the coming of General Sherman's corps. The latter arrived on the 7th, when an immediate advance was ordered. The army moved up the eastern bank of the Big Black River; McClernand's corps on the right, McPherson's on the left and Sherman's in the rear. McClernand marched to Raymond, eighteen miles south-west of Jackson, where he was confronted by two confederate brigades. A brisk fight took place on the 12th of May, ending in the repulse of the confederates, after which McClernand entered the small town. On the same day, McPherson's and Sherman's corps fought the enemy near Fourteen Mile Creek, across which they forced their way.

At this juncture, news reached General Grant that General Johnston had arrived at

Jackson with a force with which he hoped to relieve Vicksburg. Determined to leave no enemy in his rear, Grant ordered McPherson the next day to move on Clinton. This town was occupied, and the telegraph and railways destroyed, and some dispatches from Pemberton to the late commander at Raymond were captured.

McPherson and Sherman moved toward Jackson, in front of which a battle took place on the 14th of May. The confederates held a strong position on the crest of a hill, and it was only after a savage encounter that they were driven toward the city, which they evacuated shortly after. McPherson then marched into Jackson, where he found the stores burning.

Grant had gained an important victory over Johnston, one of the ablest confederate leaders, but he was not yet done with him. He learned from deserters and intercepted dispatches that Johnston had sent peremptory orders to Pemberton to leave Vicksburg and assail the union rear. With his usual promptness, Grant decided to meet the movement by an advance of his own, so as to intercept the enemy on the line of the Vicksburg and Jackson railway.

You can readily see what a difficult task Grant had set out to perform. He wanted to keep Pemberton in Vicksburg and prevent Johnston from re-enforcing him: that is, he wanted to keep the former in and the latter out.

When he made his advance, Grant left Sherman at Jackson to destroy the railway, bridges, factories, arsenals and workshops. This seems cruel, but war of itself is cruel, and it may be said that it was a military necessity. Jackson was such a desirable city for the confederates that Johnston would be likely to make it a base of operations while Grant was besieging Vicksburg.

Jackson was burned on the 15th of May, and when the federals were done there was little left of the town. It is at such times that soldiers are likely to become uncontrollable, and the destruction of Jackson, Mississippi, was marked by excesses and cruelties.

Meanwhile, Pemberton had crossed the Big Black River and Grant ordered Sherman to leave Jackson and join the rest of the forces. Pemberton's army numbered about 18,000, posted on the south-west bank of Baker's Creek, across the Vicksburg and Jackson railway. On the morning of the 16th, Grant's army was much scattered. Three divisions were on the line of the railway; four were approaching along the road from Raymond; one was still further to the left, on the Big Black River, while Sherman had two in the neighborhood of Jackson. Grant had come upon the confederates sooner than he expected and found they had a strong position amongst some woody hills.

The situation was serious and he sent orders for the three divisions marching from Raymond to make all haste. They did so, but could not reach the ground until fighting had been going on for some time.

The battle is known as that of Champion's Hill, and was opened by an attack on the center of Pemberton's line. General Hovey, who made the assault, suffered a severe repulse, but General Logan, commanding on the right, told Grant that if the assault was repeated he could do effective work on the confederate left. Accordingly Hovey was sent forward once more and met with some success; but later, he was again driven back.

By this time, the divisions from Raymond arrived, and the whole line charged upon

the confederates. Logan did good service against the left and rear. Thus assailed from three sides by superior numbers, the confederates broke and fled in wild panic. For a time all order was at an end, but the officers managed to rally them to a slight extent; the defeat, however, was too severe to be retrieved. Most of the confederate army retreated toward the Black River, one division being cut off from the rest and forced to flee by another route.

Learning that the confederates were falling back, Grant ordered General Carr to

NEGRO VILLAGE IN GEORGIA.

pursue them with all possible speed to Big Black River, and to cross that stream if he could. The pursuit was kept up till after dark and a large amount of stores captured. It was impossible to overtake the troops, however, and when the river was reached by the federals, they found their enemies drawn up on the bridge with such an array of artillery and infantry that it was not deemed wise to attempt to cross.

The pursuit was renewed the next morning, and the confederates were found strongly posted on both sides of the Big Black River, at a place where the bluffs on the west side reach the edge of the water. On the other shore the land was open and

cultivated, surrounded by a bayou of stagnant water and protected by a line of rifle pits.

The federals attacked at once, but soon discovered an approach by way of the river bank. They tried it with such success that a few minutes later the entire garrison laid down their arms and surrendered the seventeen pieces of artillery with which the place had been defended.

General Sherman crossed the river on the morning of the 18th, and began his march on Vicksburg, by way of the road from Bridgeport. When within a few miles of the place, he turned to the right in order to obtain possession of Walnut Hills and the Yazoo River. This was done without difficulty, his position on the north being a strong one. The other corps as they came up placed themselves so as nearly to surround the town and fortifications.

Meanwhile, Admiral Porter was anxiously awaiting the coming of Grant's army. It was about noon on the 18th, when those in the fleet who were listening heard the boom of cannon from the rear of Vicksburg. It continued for some time, and by the aid of his telescope, Porter saw a company of artillery advancing, taking position and driving the confederates before them. Sherman's division was to the left of Snyder's Bluff and the confederates there had been cut off from all chance of joining the forces in the city.

Porter sent a number of gun-boats up the Yazoo to open communications with generals Grant and Sherman. The vessels and troops arrived at Haines' Bluff about the same time and found the place abandoned. All the garrison had withdrawn within the lines of Vicksburg except a few who stayed behind to destroy the ammunition. As soon as they caught sight of the gun-boats, however, they fled, leaving behind them guns, tents and equipage of all kinds.

Learning of the defeat at Baker's Creek, General Johnston had ordered Pemberton, in the event of his being unable to hold Haines' Bluff, to evacuate Vicksburg and to form a junction with his own army, which was at Canton, some distance to the north of Jackson. But these orders could not be carried out by Pemberton, for the federal army was so placed that it was impossible for him to do so.

Thus far General Grant had succeeded perfectly. He had prevented Pemberton from uniting with Johnston; he had sealed up the former in Vicksburg and shut out Johnston from all possibility of helping Pemberton.

CHAPTER XX.

EVENTS OF 1863. THE SECOND CONFEDERATE INVASION OF THE NORTH.

YOU know what a terrible defeat General Hooker sustained at Chancellorsville, early in May of this year. For several weeks after he kept quiet, while the confederates gave the time to rest and re-organization.

Within a month, however, there were rumors among the federals that the enemy was making ready for another forward movement. Where these rumors came from it was hard to tell. They were treated lightly by most of those who heard them, but they continued. There was "something in the air," which told of momentous events at hand.

General Longstreet came up from North Carolina with two divisions, which, united to the forces of General Lee, made his army 75,000 men without Stuart's cavalry, which numbered 15,000. They were divided into three equal corps and you need not be told that they were handled with masterly skill. Longstreet, Ewell and A. P. Hill were the respective commanders.

The confederates had determined to make another invasion of Maryland and Pennsylvania, under the belief that by bringing the miseries and sufferings of war into the North, they could secure peace on their own terms. President Davis had not much faith in the plan, but gave his consent.

It was of the highest importance to General Lee that his purpose should not become known to Hooker, whose superior position and numbers would enable him to crush the movement in the bud—that is, if the union commander should fight as he did when commanding the corps of an army instead of the army itself. Lee began the advance during the first week in June. The corps of Longstreet and Ewell marched on Culpeper, while the Third Corps under General Hill stayed near Fredericksburg, so as to deceive Hooker.

The latter did not have to be very diligent to find out that two-thirds of the confederate army fronting him on the other side of the Rappahannock had disappeared. Where it had gone was a mystery to the union commander, but knowing that it meant something serious, he pushed a strong reconnoissance, on the 6th of June, across the Rappahannock. The division was afraid to go far into the Wilderness, and after a brisk skirmish, kept near the river. The main body of the union cavalry, however, crossed three days later and learned for the first time the path taken by General Lee and his army. The cavalry surprised some confederate pickets at Brandy Station, not far from Culpeper Court House, on the Orange and Alexandria railway. The station was captured, but on the arrival of confederate re-enforcements, they retreated across the fords of the Rappahannock, pursued by the enemy.

Although it had been learned whither Lee was marching, there were few federals who believed that his plan was so vast as was really the case. The confederates, therefore, were allowed to push swiftly forward in a north-westerly direction without any serious check by Hooker. Lee moved down the Shenandoah Valley, while Hooker soon took the same course, but with the Blue Ridge Mountains between the two armies.

Lee passed through the defiles of these mountains and swooped down upon General Milroy at Winchester, before the federal general dreamed of his danger. Milroy had about 7,000 men; but he neglected to take proper precaution, and on the 13th of June, he was forced back into two large forts outside the town, while a federal brigade posted at Beverly fell back into Winchester, so as to join the main force. The following day the confederates made an assault on one of the outworks, with such success that it was clear there was no escape for the federals.

Milroy himself was detested by the southerners, because of his harsh course while commanding at Winchester, and he was afraid to fall into their hands. So that night he and some of his men stole away and escaped. Most of those left behind surrendered, and Winchester came into the possession of the confederates. About the same time, seven hundred men surrendered to General Rhodes at Martinsburg.

There was no longer any doubt of the plan of Lee: he was making for Pennsylvania, and there was no telling where he would stop. Washington was in danger, and there was not an hour to be lost. Hooker put the army of the Potomac in motion, and reached Fairfax Court House on the evening of the 14th, thus throwing himself on the flank of General Ewell. But Lee had occupied the mountain passes in such force, and his line of advance was so well protected by Stuart's cavalry, that the pursuit by the federals was much delayed. General Pleasanton, commanding the union cavalry, came in collision several times with Stuart and defeated him near Middlesburg, but the confederate infantry posted in the mountain defiles was too strong to be attacked.

On the 22d of June, General Lee's headquarters were at Beverly, ten miles from Winchester, but he kept up his communications with Winchester by means of A. P. Hill's corps, which was now between Front Royal and Culpeper. Ewell promptly crossed the Potomac into Maryland, and his cavalry pushed on into Pennsylvania.

News of all these movements was telegraphed north and to Washington by the vigilant newspaper correspondents and the agents of the government. You can not imagine the excitement and dismay they caused. Many believed Lee would never stop until he reached Philadelphia, and there were boasts made on the confederate side that their officers would water their horses in the Delaware. A large amount of treasure and public records was sent from Philadelphia to New York by special train, and many timid people moved further north to get out of the path of the terrible host sweeping up from the south. President Lincoln, on the 15th of June, issued a proclamation, calling on the governors of Ohio, Pennsylvania, Maryland and Western Virginia to provide 100,000 militia for the protection of those states. The response in Pennsylvania was so languid that that state called on New Jersey for help, which was given.

All these steps were important, but there was another of equal if not greater

GENERAL JACKSON MORTALLY WOUNDED. (*See page 171.*)

Pen drawing by C. Raymond.

importance — that was the selection of a competent leader of the army of the Potomac. Hooker felt his own unfitness, and crossing the Potomac on the 26th of June, and moving so as to threaten Lee's communications, he resigned on the following day the command of the army. On the 28th, while stationed at Frederick, Hooker published an order of the day stating that the army of the Potomac had been placed under Major-general George G. Meade.

The selection of General Meade was one of the best that could have been made. He was born in Cadiz, Spain, in 1815, where his father at the time was United States naval agent. According to the laws of our country, he was as much a citizen of the United States as if born on our soil. He graduated from West Point in 1835, and served with distinction against the Seminoles and throughout the Mexican war. Modest and pleasant in manner, no doubt he was the most surprised man in the country when notified of his promotion; but he was capable, and, as I have said, no better appointment could have been made: it gave great satisfaction to the country as well as to the army itself.

Meade made no change in the general plan of Hooker. Reynolds, Sickles, Sedgwick and Howard kept their old corps, while Sykes took that which had been Meade's and Hancock received that of Couch, who assumed charge of the department of the Susquehanna. The entire army numbered about 100,000.

Most of Lee's force was now on the northern side of the Potomac, some in Maryland and some in Pennsylvania. They were worn, gaunt and ragged, but well-supplied with the essentials with which to make war. Besides, as they proved on more than one battle field, there were no braver soldiers in the whole world. The invaders advanced with full confidence that the best of fortune awaited them.

On the 27th of June, the whole confederate army was at Chambersburg, Pennsylvania. Lee issued a congratulatory address to his army and strictly enforced his orders against the sale of liquors or the molestation of private property. "It must be remembered," said he, "that we make war only upon armed men, and that we can not take vengeance for the wrongs our people have suffered without lowering ourselves in the eyes of all whose abhorrence has been excited by the atrocities of the enemy." No doubt the invaders behaved well, though it is idle to pretend that no plundering was done.

Lee sorely missed Stuart and his cavalry, for without them he had been unable since crossing the Potomac to gain reliable news of the union army. He had his forces well in hand, however, and was on the point of advancing upon Harrisburg, when he was stopped by the first authentic knowledge of what the army of the Potomac was doing.

When General Meade took command, the army was lying near Frederick City, with its left thrown out to Middleton. On the 29th, Lee learned that its advanced force was beyond Middleton, and it looked as if Meade intended to cross the mountains and assail the confederate rear. Ewell's corps was at York and Carlisle, but no one knew where Stuart was. With a view of drawing Meade away from the Potomac, Lee began to concentrate his army east of the mountains. Longstreet and Hill were ordered to march from Chambersburg to Gettysburg, while Ewell was directed to proceed to the

same point. Advancing at a leisurely pace, in the hourly hope of the return of Stuart, Lee was so slow in reaching Gettysburg that Meade got there first.

Stuart with his cavalry had done his utmost to harass the union army in Virginia, but he could not check its advance. He therefore crossed the Potomac at Seneca Falls, and passing to the east of Meade's army, reached Carlisle just after Ewell had left for Gettysburg.

On the 30th of June, Meade had arrived within a few miles of Gettysburg. A little to the north and moving toward the same point, were Lee and the army of Northern Virginia. Learning where the enemy was, Meade pushed on, and entered Gettysburg on the 1st of July.

Meanwhile, the confederate army continued its advance, and about the middle of the forenoon, one of its divisions became engaged with Reynolds' corps on the western side of the town, a short distance beyond the line of hills known as Oak Ridge. While Reynolds was superintending in person the movements of his troops, he was struck dead by a rifle bullet. He was a most excellent officer, and to show the regard in which he was held by his enemies, I will quote the words of a southern historian: "He was a brave and skillful soldier, an honest-hearted gentleman, and had conducted himself so humanely and generously toward the people of Fredericksburg that they mourned his death almost as if he had been one of their own leaders."

General Doubleday succeeded Reynolds in command of the corps, but the confederates held their ground. Before his death, Reynolds had sent an urgent message to Howard to hurry forward with his Eleventh Corps, which reached the scene of action at one o'clock in the afternoon. Howard took command of the entire force, but the Eleventh Corps, composed mainly of Germans who had behaved so badly at Chancellorsville, broke into panic and rushed wildly through Gettysburg, hotly pursued by the enemy. Those who stayed in the town were cut down by musketry and artillery, and many surrendered.

By this time, General Hancock, who had been sent forward by Meade to take the principal command, arrived, and, with the help of Howard and by his own magnetism, he formed the broken corps anew on the summit of Culp's Hill, in the rear of the town. Hancock saw that this was the place where the decisive struggle between the northern and southern armies must take place and he sent word to Meade, fifteen miles away, to hurry up all his forces. Meade followed the suggestion, and some of them arrived that night, others the next morning, and in the afternoon Sedgwick's corps reached the field after a march of thirty-five miles. Lee had stopped all operations until he could bring up his whole army.

General Hancock formed his line along Cemetery Hill to the south and west of Gettysburg. The position was of great strength and General Lee, after carefully examining it through his glass, decided to make no attack upon it until the arrival of Longstreet and the rest of Ewell's corps. Lee's failure to storm the height was a fatal blunder. No doubt so able a chieftain had the best of reasons, as the circumstances looked at that time, for declining the risk, but later events proved that the oversight was disastrous to the confederates.

The life and death struggle of the Confederacy was to take place in that obscure little town of Pennsylvania; hence, you should try to understand the most terrific battle of modern times.

Gettysburg lies in the middle of a small valley formed by several ranges of hills. To the north, the country is not very rugged, but to the south, east and west the hills are steep and high. About a mile to the westward is a ridge fringing the east bank of Willoughby's Run; a quarter of a mile distant, is another elevation called Seminary Ridge. The opening battle took place between these ridges on the 1st of July.

South of the town and running due north and south at a distance of a quarter of a mile is Cemetery Ridge. Just outside the limits of Gettysburg, this ridge curves to the eastward, and then curving again falls off toward the south, forming a hook, whose convexity faces Gettysburg and is called Cemetery Hill. Further to the east, where it slopes to the south, it is known as Culp's Hill.

The main ridge, extending from Gettysburg southward, ends three miles off in a high wooded peak, called Round Top. A little distance north is another peak named Little Round Top or Weed's Hill. Rock Creek, a small stream, flows along the base of Culp's Hill and empties into the Monocacy, while Plum Run, another creek, flows in front of Cemetery Ridge from near Cemetery Hill to Round Top and beyond. The broken country to the west of this ridge is commanded by it.

The Taneytown road, running south along Cemetery Ridge, crosses the elevation at the cemetery; the Baltimore turnpike passes over the ridge a short distance to the east and bears to the right, crossing Rock Creek about a mile east of the Taneytown road. The Emmettsburg road turns off from the Baltimore turnpike just outside of Gettysburg, and veering to the west, intersects the Taneytown road in front of the cemetery and continues to the south-west. The highways I have named spread away from the southern side of the town like the spokes of a wheel.

Measuring from Round Top, the end of the ridge, directly north, around the curve called the Cemetery and on to Culp's Hill, the other terminus, the distance is about four miles. The Bonnaughtown road and the York turnpike lead out from the eastern side of Gettysburg; the Harrisburg road from the north-east; the Carlisle road from the north; the Mumasburg road from the north-west, south of which are the Chambersburg turnpike and the Millerstown road.

On the night of July 1, the union position was as follows: The right held Culp's Hill; the center Cemetery Hill, and the left was posted along Cemetery Ridge, while the reserve was on the right. The line of battle following the ridge was in the form of a horseshoe, the convexity turned toward Gettysburg. At that time, Sedgwick's corps had not reached the ground. The position was an extremely good one, and was held by a hundred thousand veterans and two hundred guns.

On the same night, the confederates occupied Gettysburg and the country to the east and west. Ewell was on the left, and held the town; Hill's corps was on Seminary Ridge, thus facing the center and left of the federal line on Cemetery Ridge. Pickett's division did not arrive until the morning of the 3d, when it was posted on the right of Hill's position in front of Round Top.

COPYRIGHTED, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

GUNBOATS PASSING BEFORE VICKSBURG. (*See page 166.*)

Drawn by G. Walter Gibson.

The 2d of July dawned clear and sunshiny, with the armed hosts facing each other and gathering for the mighty struggle. The greater part of the day was spent in adjusting the troops, so that it was not until nearly five o'clock in the afternoon that the battle was opened by Lee. His careful reconnoissances convinced him that the left and left center of the union line were the right points to assail. This was held by Sickles' corps and faced Longstreet. Sickles had committed a serious error by throwing a part of his force forward beyond the battle line and seizing a ridge, to prevent its occupation by the enemy.

Lee was quick to detect this blunder, and ordered Longstreet to attack at once. Longstreet opened a heavy cannonade upon Sickles, in which Ewell on the left quickly joined. Covered by this cannonade, Hood's division charged against Sickles' left, which curved back from a peach orchard along the Emmettsburg road toward Round Top. Hood attacked with great spirit, and swinging around to the right, thrust his right wing between Sickles' extreme left and Round Top. And it was then that took place one of those incidents that no one can foresee, and of little apparent consequence themselves, are fraught with momentous results.

At the time Hood was assailing Sickles with such fury, Little Round Top was hardly defended at all, and yet it was the key-point to the whole federal position. Had Hood known the truth, he could have captured it in a twinkling. Seeing its importance, however, he carefully worked his way toward it with a part of his division and was sure to seize it unless some extraordinary event stopped him.

Now it so happened that General Gouverneur K. Warren, chief engineer, and his officers were using Little Round Top for signaling purposes, when, finding their position becoming too hot, they began gathering up their flags to leave; but Warren saw the supreme importance of holding the hill, and told the rest to make a show of doing so, while he cast about for some force to bring to the spot.

At that critical moment, Barnes' division was hurrying by on its way to re-enforce Sickles, who was hard pressed. Warren took the responsibility of detaching a brigade, which he hastened into position, dragging with much labor a battery up the hill. This was accomplished while Hood was advancing, so you can see that Warren lost no time. He had barely got his men in position, when Hood's Texans charged, and instantly the fight became of the fiercest character. The Texans fought with the utmost desperation, but they were driven back. Still clinging to the rocky glen at the base of the hill, they forced their way up the ravine between the Round Tops and turned the left federal flank, but were driven out by a savage bayonet charge.

You will remember that Hood had flung his left against Sickles' center and McLaws' division was sent to help Hood. Sickles called for re-enforcements and three brigades were hurried to him; but even then he could not hold his position. Longstreet, concentrating upon his exact center, near a peach orchard, broke through, drove back the federals and gained the key-point to Sickles' advanced line, thus proving the error made by that officer before the opening of the battle.

Again and again and with the greatest valor the federals tried to regain the orchard, but Longstreet drove them back each time with great slaughter. He was still advanc-

ing, when another division was brought up and fell upon him just as he reached a wheat field and fringe of woods on the west side of Plum Run. The federals now began to gain ground, when Hood, having carried Sickles' left, appeared on the right of the peach orchard. A division of regulars was thrown forward to meet him, but he drove his way through an opening between Caldwell's left and doubled both divisions back on their main line at Cemetery Ridge. Sickles' left had been handled roughly and his center was now set upon by the confederates. His right wing was also assailed by A. P. Hill, and driven back. The whole advanced position of Sickles thus fell into the hands of the enemy and that officer lost a leg.

The confederates had done brilliant work, but despite their efforts the main union line remained unbroken. Longstreet's men fought their way to Cemetery Ridge, only to be bloodily repulsed by Hancock. Night was closing in, when Longstreet withdrew his men to the western verge of the wheat field, where they stayed until morning.

Ewell, obeying the orders of Lee, had attacked the union right center at Cemetery and Culp's Hill. His purpose was to prevent federal re-enforcements reaching the left where Longstreet was hammering with such vehemence. Ewell was so delayed that he did not attack until sunset. He then dashed forward in the face of a heavy artillery fire, charged up the slope, and in a short, furious struggle drove out the federal artillerists and infantry and kept possession of the works. If he could hold them through the next day, General Lee would be able to take Meade's line in reverse.

Thus ended the second day at Gettysburg with matters in an unsatisfactory shape for both sides. Lee had not failed nor had he met with the success he counted upon. He had gained some important advantages, but the union line was substantially unbroken. Longstreet had forced Sickles back and held advanced ground, but he had not done that which he set out to do. Lee had aimed to drive the federals from Cemetery Ridge: he had failed. The narrow chance by which Hood and his Texans missed the capture of Round Top was all that prevented a success of the southern leader that might have been decisive.

The losses during the first two days' fight were awful, amounting to more than twenty thousand on each side, among whom were many of the best officers either killed or wounded. General Barksdale was a prisoner in the hands of the federals and dying. The news that was flashed north and south that evening threw hundreds of homes into mourning, and caused thousands to shudder for what they knew was yet to come.

That night, Lee held a council of war at which was discussed the question whether the battle should be renewed on the morrow, or whether the southern army should fall back toward the Potomac. There were weighty reasons for either course. The confederates had suffered severely; and their supplies, including ammunition, were running low, but there was a feeling that the army of Northern Virginia upheld the southern Confederacy on its bayonets and that its defeat would be fatal. Besides this, the success of the gray legions had been enough to encourage them, and their confidence was unshaken: so it was agreed to stay where they were and give battle once more.

General Meade was scarcely less anxious than his opponent. He had suffered so

severely that he was doubtful when night closed in whether his army could stand another such struggle; but when he reflected on its splendid heroism and his unusually strong position, he too decided to hold his ground and to enter upon the final conflict on the morrow.

At the close of the second day, as you will recall, Lee had pierced the union lines only on the right, where Ewell had effected a lodgment within the breastworks of Culp's Hill. This caused Lee to strengthen his force near the elevation, with the intention of making his main attack at that point; but during the night, Meade posted a strong force of artillery so as to bear upon these troops, and at the first streaking of light, on July 3, he opened a heavy fire, and sent a strong body of infantry against the confederates. The latter, though outnumbered, held their ground for four hours, when they were driven out and the federal line re-established.

This disaster forced Lee to change his plan of battle, and he now resolved to make the union center his objective point, hoping to break apart the two wings. These preparations took several hours, during which an impressive stillness reigned over the multitude of armed hosts facing each other. The federals saw their foes hurriedly massing their artillery and making ready for the grand attack. By noon, Lee had one hundred and forty-five cannon on Seminary Ridge, opposite to Meade's center, while Meade, divining his purpose, lined the crest of Cemetery Hill with eighty pieces of artillery.

The sun was directly overhead, when all the confederate cannon opened and the federals replied with their eighty pieces. No imagination can picture the terrific grandeur of the cannonade. It lasted for two hours, during which the mountains and valleys seemed to sway with the most tremendous outburst that ever took place on the American continent.

The union fire gradually slackened, and the crouching troops compressed their lips and grasped their muskets for the more deadly shock that they knew was close at hand. From Seminary Ridge, a mile away, as the enormous bank of vapor lifted, a column of five thousand men was seen to issue and march toward the union lines. They were clad in confederate gray, with their red battle-flags flying and their gun barrels and bayonets gleaming in the sunlight. They marched with the even, beautiful tread of a dress parade and the fire of inflexible resolve burned in their eyes. They were the flower of the southern army, under the lead of Major-general Pickett, and all had been tried in the fire of many battles. The two armies became silent and ten of thousands of eyes were riveted upon the thrilling scene.

With the same graceful, unvarying step, at first in an oblique direction and then straight ahead, the double battle line, like some vast and perfectly-working machine, moved forward until the Emmettsburg road was reached. The confederate batteries now stopped firing, for the infantry were coming within range. Half the distance between the two armies was passed, when the union artillery burst forth and swept away scores, but the lines instantly closed up without a tremor. Then Pickett's men increased their pace, yet maintained their line as steady and beautiful as before. The federals waited until the gray coats were within short musket range, when the crest of the hill

Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg

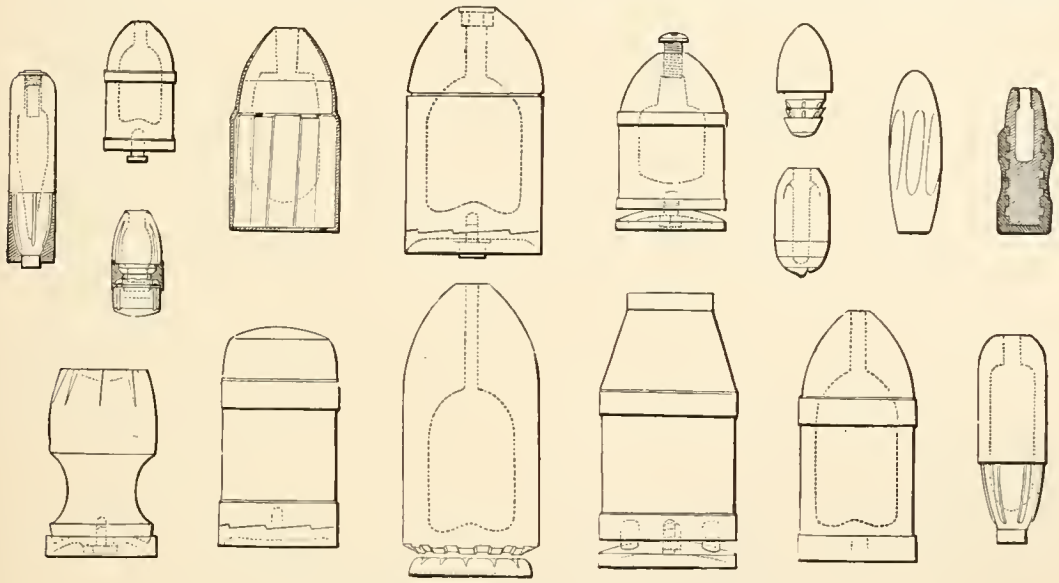
COPYRIGHT BY GEO. T. FINN.

PICKETT'S CHARGE AT GETTYSBURG.

became one sheet of flame and the hurricane of bullets flew in the very faces of the confederates. Pettigrew's division, which was supporting Pickett, was flung backward, leaving two thousand prisoners and fifteen standards with the union army. Wilcox's supporting brigade had fallen behind, so that Pickett and his heroes were left to face the deadly sleet. With the same amazing precision, they delivered a volley at the breastworks in front, and then with their resounding battle yells rushed up the crest of Cemetery Ridge and captured the works at the point of the bayonet.

But they had paid a fearful cost and they might as well have tried to hold possession of the crater of a volcano. A converging fire was poured upon them and they were attacked in front and flank. Looking around for his supports, Pickett saw that he was alone, and a few minutes more would be enough to destroy every one of his command. The order was given to fall back and "all that was left of them" withdrew.

Of the five thousand who advanced with such proud bearing upon that wonderful



VARIOUS FORMS OF PROJECTILES USED IN THE AMERICAN WAR.

charge, thirty-five hundred were killed, wounded or prisoners in the hands of the union army. Of the three brigade commanders, one was killed, the second dying and the third desperately wounded. Of the fourteen field officers in the advance, only one came back, and but two of twenty-four regimental officers escaped unhurt. The federals lost many in killed and wounded, among the latter being General Hancock, who, however, stayed on the field till the close of the struggle.

Standing on Seminary Ridge, with his glass to his eye, General Lee followed every movement of Pickett, from the moment fire was opened until the shattered and bleeding survivors came flying back to their own ranks. Springing upon his horse, Lee rode among them and did all he could to comfort the soldiers whose bravery has never been surpassed.

Longstreet expected that the repulse of Pickett would be followed by an immediate

advance on the part of the federals, and he made hasty preparations to defend himself. But no attack was made. The federals were exhausted, and had used up most of their ammunition. The third day's battle at Gettysburg, therefore, came to a close about six o'clock in the evening. The union loss during the three days' fighting was 2,834 killed, 13,713 wounded and 6,643 missing, most of whom were taken prisoners on the first day. There was never any official statement of the confederate loss, but it must have been much greater than that of the federals. The latter took nearly 14,000 prisoners and Lee probably had 5,000 killed and fully four times as many wounded.

General Lee realized that he had begun a task he could not perform. The union forces were too strong to be defeated, and nothing remained for him except to leave the country where nothing could be gained and all might be lost. That night, Ewell's corps was withdrawn from Gettysburg and posted on Seminary Ridge, where the confederate army intrenched itself. The federals occupied the town and Lee spent the day in burying his dead, and in removing his wounded and a portion of his arms. The retreat was begun at night by the Chambersburg and Fairfield roads, which pass through the South Mountain range into the Cumberland valley. A violent storm came up during the afternoon and lasted through the night.

By the morning of the 5th, Lee was beyond sight of the federals, and Meade sent Sedgwick with the Sixth Corps in pursuit. He came up with the rear-guard on the evening of the 6th, but found their position so strong that he did not think it prudent to attack them. The main part of the federal army therefore marched on Middletown, taking a course parallel to that of Lee. Part of the confederate train moved by the road through Fairfield and the rest by way of Castletown. They were exposed to many attacks from the federal cavalry, but they reached Williamsport without much loss. There they were attacked, but General Imboden repelled his assailants. Detachments of Meade's cavalry were afterward defeated by Stuart. The union army crossed South Mountain on the 9th, and Meade established his head-quarters at Antietam Bridge.

Meanwhile, the confederates had reached Hagerstown on the night of the 6th and the morning of the 7th, but they were in great danger. The rain storm had so swollen the Potomac that the fords were impassable. Two of the bridges had been carried away; the federal cavalry had burned a pontoon bridge and a strong force had re-occupied Harper's Ferry. The defeated army, therefore, had no choice but to intrench where it was and wait till some means could be found for getting across the river.

Meade was two miles away, but he took the advice of his generals, who urged him not to make any attack until after the arrival of re-enforcements. There was some belief that Lee, being unable to cross, might make a desperate effort to drive off the federals who had also intrenched themselves, in which event he would be likely to suffer another disastrous defeat.

But the confederate leader had no such thought. He stayed quietly where he was until the afternoon of the 13th of July, when the river had fallen enough to be forded. He therefore began to withdraw his army into Virginia. The federal cavalry made a dash at his rear-guard, but were driven back with considerable loss. Before the close of the next day Lee and his army were once more on the soil of the Old Dominion.

On the 15th he withdrew from the Potomac to the vicinity of Winchester. General Meade, eager to grasp the great prize that seemed almost within reach, resolved to cut him off from Richmond or compel him to fight before he could get to the east of Blue Ridge. The union army crossed at Harper's Ferry on the 17th and 18th of July, and sought to occupy the passes before they could be reached by the enemy. In consequence, Lee turned up the Shenandoah Valley, his march delayed by the high water in the Shenandoah River. Longstreet was ordered on the 19th of July to go to Culpeper Court House by way of Front Royal. He got part of his command over the Shenandoah in time to shut out the federals from occupying Manassas and Chester Gaps. A pontoon bridge was laid, the remainder of the corps crossed, and, marching through Chester Gap, reached Culpeper on the 24th. Hill's corps followed, encamping near Madison Court House on the 29th.

A part of the federal army entered the valley, during the march of Lee, and had a good opportunity for a flank attack, but none was made, through the mismanagement of General French. Seeing at last that the confederate army had escaped him, Meade marched at his leisure toward the Rappahannock, while Lee fell back to the neighborhood of Culpeper.

As I have already stated, the battle of Gettysburg was the life and death struggle of the Southern Confederacy: it may be said therefore that the issue was equally momentous for the American republic; for these two could not live at the same time on the American continent. The battle had been fought and the Confederacy was defeated: it was now doomed. It never again could be so strong as it was before Gettysburg; its utmost resources had been drawn upon, while those of the North were only lightly affected.

Much remains to tell you about the war for the Union, for much remained to be done before it could be restored. The South was brave and determined; but, if you will study events, you will see that the cause of the Southern Confederacy steadily declined after the defeat at Gettysburg, until within two years it went down forever.

CHAPTER XXI.

EVENTS OF 1863. OPENING OF THE MISSISSIPPI.

THE appalling loss of life at Gettysburg spread sorrow through thousands of homes north and south; but the great victory caused rejoicing among the friends of the Union, who saw that the seemingly resistless army of Northern Virginia had at last

GENERAL MEADE.

received a serious check. It had been checked before, but never in its history had it been so worsted as in Pennsylvania, in July, 1863.

Hardly had the news of the great union triumph been flashed through the country,

when the North was gladdened by tidings of another triumph. Let me tell you the story.

General Grant, by his masterly generalship, kept the confederate General J. E. Johnston from relieving Pemberton at Vicksburg, and at the same time shut up Pemberton himself so that he could not get out. Since the place was too powerful to be taken by storm, Grant began the investment of the stronghold, which still blocked all union commerce up and down the Mississippi.

The garrison had only sixty days' provisions, when about the middle of May the

GENERAL STUART.

siege began. These stores supplied not only the garrison, but the inhabitants of Vicksburg themselves. Johnston set out to raise a force strong enough to drive away Grant and to relieve the garrison.

This was a hard task, for at that time there were few able-bodied men not already in the ranks of the southern armies. The other armed forces had so much on their

hands that they could not be spared to help in keeping the Mississippi closed. But Johnston set vigorously to work, and met with some success. Pemberton strengthened his defenses, and made it certain that any triumph of the federals would have to be won by hard fighting and at severe cost.

Grant became convinced that Johnston meant to attack him in the rear. Instead of waiting the slow progress of the siege, he determined to assault the works at once. At two o'clock on the morning of May 19, the Fifteenth Army Corps advanced to the attack, followed by the Thirteenth and Seventeenth corps.

The ground over which these soldiers advanced was of the worst possible character. The clayey soil was turned into mud and was covered by a thick forest. At many points were valleys choked with cane and willow, crossed by chasms and obstructed by timber felled by the confederates with a view of checking such an attack.

These causes broke up the assaulting force so that it reached the trenches in bad form. A force of infantry, however, got to the outer works and planted the stars-and-stripes upon the slope. But within the following few minutes, Captain Washington the commander was mortally wounded and seventy-seven men out of two hundred and fifty were either killed or wounded. The troops held their position during the whole day, keeping up a hot fire on the garrison, but produced no effect, and at nightfall they withdrew.

The attempt was renewed on a much larger scale three days later. This was an advance of the whole line, and in order that the movement should be simultaneous, all the corps commanders set their watches by Grant's. The three army corps in front of the confederate works moved at ten o'clock on the morning of May 22. They showed the greatest bravery; the union flags were once more planted on the outer slopes of the bastions, and the troops held their positions until nightfall, but the attack was no more of a success than the feebler one that preceded it. The best soldiers in the army were hurled against the works again and again, but in every instance were driven back with grievous loss. Finally at night, when the attack was abandoned, the union loss was 3,000, while that of the confederates was hardly one third as many.

While this assault was in progress, Porter engaged the defenses on the river, and his mortar boats threw a number of shells into the town. The return fire, however, was so effective, that Porter received more injury than he inflicted. A number of his vessels were hit below the water line, and the whole fleet dropped down the river beyond the range of fire.

Naturally the inhabitants of Vicksburg were terrified, even though the attack was repulsed. They had dug caves into the hill on which the city stands, and during the height of the bombardment they hid themselves in these excavations. The next morning the bombardment was renewed, and for six weeks the storm of shot and shell continued with little intermission. There was no stop on Sundays and more than once worshipers were injured in church.

You know that people can become accustomed almost to any thing. The shriek of a shell passing over your head to-day would fill you with the greatest alarm, but as the siege of Vicksburg progressed, the inhabitants grew indifferent. Sometimes they would

run into their caves, when one of the fearful missiles, with its smoking fuse, dropped near them, but often they paid little attention to it.

After the 26th of May, the firing on Vicksburg was kept up day and night. It was estimated that 6,000 mortar shells were thrown into the town every twenty-four hours, besides 4,000 on the line in the rear of the city. The month of June was rainy and the caves filled with water so that they could no longer be used.

You would think that the people had enough affliction, but in addition to those which they had suffered so long, they were now threatened with famine. For a few days after the opening of the siege, the troops were allowed full rations, but these were gradually reduced until the daily amount of food for each man was less than a pound. The necessaries of life became of fabulous value.

Grant's army was re-enforced by the middle of June, so that he was able to make his investment more complete, besides keeping a strong reserve to watch the movements of Johnston. Haines' Bluff was fortified on the land side, and every preparation was made to defeat any attempt to relieve Vicksburg. The troops to look after Johnston were placed under the command of Sherman. The confederate commander crossed the Big Black River on the 25th of June, with most of his force, but the union army was so strongly intrenched that he hesitated to attack it.

Meanwhile, the siege was pressed. Parallels and approaches were constructed and mines were sunk. Foot by foot the works of the besiegers crept up to those of the besieged. They mined and countermined against each other. At last the federal works approached so near the walls that the opposing sharpshooters were within fifty feet of each other and the batteries less than three hundred yards apart.

Several weak attempts were made to relieve Vicksburg, but the fierce grip of General Grant could not be loosened. He held the place fast, and with the grim resolution of his nature meant to hold on until the foe should be forced to yield.

The federals dug a mine in the cliff on which one of the forts stood, extending it a dozen yards from the point of starting. Seven hundred pounds of powder were placed in the center mine and fifteen hundred pounds in the branch mines. Troops were marshaled ready for operations early in the morning, and all the mines were fired at once.

The ground shook as if from an earthquake, a red glare shot upward, and a number of confederate soldiers were seen spinning through the air. Only a few however were injured. The confederates had discovered the mining operations, and had withdrawn most of the soldiers beyond the reach of harm.

For a short while before firing the mine, the federals opened a heavy artillery fire, with a view of diverting the attention of the besieged. The opening made in the ground by the explosion was large enough to hold two regiments, and the smoke had not yet lifted when a column of infantry that had lain concealed in a hollow near the fort charged into the breach with loud cheers.

The confederates were not surprised but met the charge in the crater itself, where a desperate hand-to-hand conflict took place. Both combatants used hand-grenades and the gunners in the rear joined in the fight, though at the risk of killing their own men.

The uproar was frightful. The confederates, with great coolness and bravery, erected a line of breastworks inside the gap and thus kept back the federals from entering the town.

The assailants, however, did not give up the advantage they had gained. On the night following the explosion fresh troops relieved those who were holding the chasm, which came to be known as the "Death Hole." Fighting continued through the night, the confederates making free use of their hand-grenades. But the federals would not let go, and the following day they built a line of rifle pits across the opening. A covered gallery was also begun, from which more mines could be made to open out. One of these was exploded on the 1st of July, demolishing a whole redan, and so damaging the interior works that no one of the garrison could show his head without becoming instantly a target for the sharp-shooters.

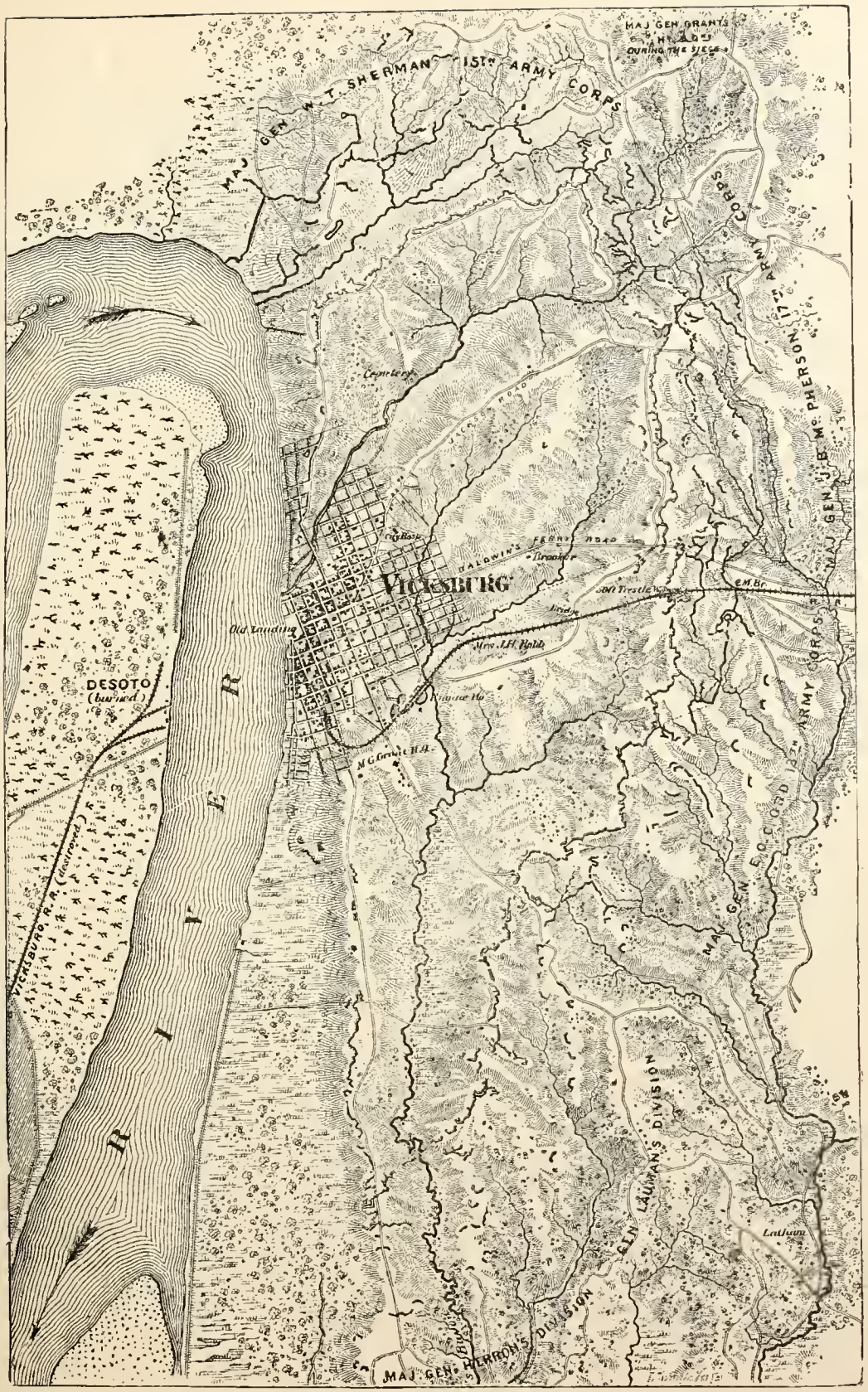
You can well understand that the city of Vicksburg was in a pitiful condition by this time. The newspapers were printed on wall paper; mules and dogs furnished the only kinds of meat obtainable; bean meal was made into bread, and corn meal served for coffee; the weather was hot; the soldiers were worn out with watching day and night, and many unburied corpses tainted the air with a horrible odor. There was hardly a building in Vicksburg that had not been struck by shells. Even the hospitals were accidentally hit several times.

Now and then Pemberton was able to communicate with Johnston, and each time begged for relief. Johnston was eager to comply, but his scant forces had no chance against the numerous veterans of the union commander. Grant saw that the fall of Vicksburg was close at hand and he so told his government. The confederates themselves knew there was no hope.

Grant informed Sherman that another assault would be made on the 6th of July, but it was not necessary. Pemberton was an intense partisan of the Confederacy and he had done his best to hold Vicksburg. He was angered some weeks before by the report that he intended to sell the town. In a published order, he said that he did intend to sell it, but only at the price of his own life and every man in his command. When a general talks in that fashion it is quite sure that he is getting ready to surrender.

No soldiers could have shown more heroism than did the defenders of Vicksburg, but it was beyond their power to hold out. They were on the verge of starvation, and of the 21,000 nominally under the command of Pemberton, 6,000 were in the hospitals, while Grant had fully 60,000 men ready for the assault.

A little after seven o'clock on the morning of July 3 (at which time the battle of Gettysburg was going on), the union troops saw a flag of truce fluttering on the crest of a hill outside the town. A messenger was sent to bring in the bearer of the flag and two confederate officers, blindfolded, were guided to the tent of General A. J. Smith. They brought with them a dispatch from Pemberton to Grant, proposing an armistice, with a view to arranging terms for the capitulation of Vicksburg. Pemberton said that he did this to stop the shedding of blood, though he felt able to hold his position for an indefinite period. Grant in reply declined to appoint commissioners for fixing the terms of capitulation, because he would consider none except those of unconditional surrender.



PLAN OF THE SIEGE OF VICKSBURG.

The messengers returned and soon after Grant and Pemberton met in an orchard, midway between the contending forces. Colonel Montgomery (one of the bearers of the flag of truce), introduced the two commanders to each other. They shook hands, exchanged a few words, and then moved aside to discuss the important question. Grant finally agreed to put his terms in writing. Several notes were exchanged, when it was agreed that the garrison should be paroled and allowed to return to their homes, not to serve again, until properly exchanged, and that the town, stores, arms and trophies should become the prize of the conquerors.

It is worth noting that the negotiations were completed on the 4th of July, the grand anniversary of American independence. Many of Pemberton's friends censured him for making the surrender on that memorable day, but really there seemed to be no help for it. You may be sure that the news added to Grant's popularity and caused the wildest rejoicing in the north.

You will observe that Grant had receded somewhat from his demand for unconditional surrender, but, as he explained, he had the best reason for doing so. He saved to his government the trouble and expense of sending the garrison to the north, while the federals were left free to operate against Johnston.

At ten o'clock on the morning of the 4th, the confederates marched out and stacked arms in front of their works, after which three divisions of Grant's army marched in and occupied them. The officers were permitted to keep their side arms and private baggage, and field and cavalry officers were allowed one horse each. Privates were given rations sufficient to last them to their homes.

By the surrender of Vicksburg, the Confederacy lost the services of more than 20,000 men, including three major-generals, and nine brigadiers, with nearly a hundred pieces of artillery and 40,000 small arms. In his report, Grant thus summed up the results of the campaign: "The defeat of the enemy in five battles outside of Vicksburg, the occupation of Jackson, the capital of Mississippi, and the capture of Vicksburg, its garrison and munitions of war; a loss to the enemy of 37,000 prisoners, at least 10,000 killed and wounded, and hundreds, perhaps thousands, who can never be collected and re-organized. Arms and munitions of war for an army of 60,000 men have fallen into our hands, beside a large amount of other public property, and much that was destroyed to prevent our capturing it."

The South felt that the blow was the severest it had yet received. July 15, President Davis issued a proclamation calling into service all persons living in the Confederacy, and not legally exempt, between the ages of eighteen and forty-five years. The 21st of August was appointed a day of fasting, humiliation and prayer. It was observed throughout the South and nowhere more impressively than in the army.

Grant won the unbounded gratitude of the North by his splendid service. He was pronounced the best military leader that had yet appeared, and already many believed he was to be the man destined to save the Union. On the 13th of July, President Lincoln wrote to him: "I do not remember that you and I ever met personally. I write this now as a grateful acknowledgment of the almost inestimable service you have done the country."

The federal army was so worn out with the siege of Vicksburg that Grant reported they would need a few weeks repose before entering on a new campaign. Those least in need of rest were sent out on different expeditions, but most of the army stayed in Vicksburg, which was strengthened against any attack the confederates might make. Sherman set out after Johnston, who was threatening the rear of the union army. Sherman did such good work that Johnston evacuated Jackson on the night of July 16 and retreated westward.

You have learned how hard but vainly Johnston tried to relieve Pemberton when Grant was besieging Vicksburg. Other and less important efforts were made in the same direction. Rosecrans was in Tennessee; and though he was only barely able to win the battle of Murfreesboro', he was able to keep Bragg from sending any re-enforcements to the help of Johnston.

During the first month in the year, General Marmaduke attempted to seize Springfield in south-western Missouri, but failed. In April, the same general advanced with a large confederate force into eastern Missouri and threatened Cape Girardeau on the opposite side of the Mississippi from Cairo, and a short distance above it. Had this been captured it would have interfered with the navigation of the Mississippi, and compelled Grant to detach a force to recapture it. Cape Girardeau, however, was so strongly fortified and so well defended by General McNeil that Marmaduke was foiled, and retreated into Arkansas.

At the same time, General Kirby Smith was serving the Confederacy in Louisiana. He attacked the federal camp at Milliken's Bend, but was repulsed, and another force of his was defeated at Richmond, a small town a few miles distant. All these attempts, therefore, to divert the attention of Grant from Vicksburg failed.

Although Vicksburg, the great confederate stronghold, had fallen, the Mississippi was not fully opened. Port Hudson, just below, still held out, though it may be said that its fate rested wholly upon that of Vicksburg.

About the middle of May, General Banks left Simsport and crossing to the eastern shore of the Mississippi, advanced upon Port Hudson. On the 25th, the defenders were driven from the outer works and on the 27th a vigorous assault was made. Banks commanded a large army, and was aided by Farragut with a powerful fleet. General Gardner, the commander at Port Hudson, had about 6,000 men in his hastily erected intrenchments, and his artillery was not strong. He made such a valiant defense, however, that the federals were repulsed.

Banks now began the siege in regular form. On the 13th of June, Gardner was summoned to surrender but refused. An assault took place on the next day, but failed partly through mismanagement. Banks renewed his siege operations and was pressing them hard when Gardner learned of the fall of Vicksburg. He saw that it was vain to hold out longer, and on the 9th of July he surrendered.

Thus the Mississippi was opened at last, and the Southern Confederacy was cut in twain.

CHAPTER XXII.

EVENTS OF 1863. THE CAMPAIGN IN THE SOUTH-WEST.

THE federal government, after the great successes in the east and west, was anxious to strike an effectual blow in Tennessee. For several months after the battle of Murfreesboro', Rosecrans made no important movement. Detachments of his troops had several skirmishes and sharp fights, but the army of the West played the part of a spectator until summer. In June, the government thought that Rosecrans ought to take steps to drive Bragg into Georgia, so as to secure eastern Tennessee. It was believed that the confederate commander had weakened his army by sending re-enforcements to Johnston in the neighborhood of Vicksburg.

Rosecrans differed with his government. He said his army was not prepared for a forward movement, and that his officers thought it better to wait until the fate of Vicksburg was decided. Halleck, the commander-in-chief, did not order Rosecrans to fight, but he told him very plainly that the government was dissatisfied with his inactivity.

Rosecrans acted on the hint, and on the 24th of June began a series of movements from Murfreesboro', intended to force Bragg to retreat from his position on Duck River. They succeeded perfectly. Bragg, finding himself in danger of being outflanked, retired to Chattanooga on the south side of the Tennessee, where he intrenched himself. This was about the 4th of July.

In order to give Rosecrans all necessary help, Burnside was ordered to march from the Ohio into eastern Tennessee. Violent rains hindered the movements of the federals, so that it was not until the 16th of August that Rosecrans advanced against Chattanooga, and when Burnside left Camp Nelson in Kentucky, Rosecrans found a great deal to do in the way of making roads across the Cumberland Mountains. Burnside met with little resistance, the small bodies of confederates falling back before him and joining the army of Bragg.

Among the confederate officers who fell back toward Chattanooga was General Buckner, who, you will remember, surrendered Fort Donelson to General Grant. Two of his brigades were detached from the main body, and one held Cumberland's Gap. On the 9th of September, this brigade surrendered Cumberland Gap, without firing a shot in its defense. The Gap commands one of the chief roads from Kentucky into Tennessee. You will see, therefore, that its surrender exposed eastern Tennessee and south-western Virginia to federal invasion, besides breaking the line of communication between Richmond and Bragg.

The turning aside of Burnside to capture Cumberland Gap delayed the advance of Rosecrans, and gave Bragg powerful re-enforcements from Virginia, the army of the Mississippi and from other sources. Indeed he became more powerful than Rosecrans

expected. The latter, on the 20th of August, reached the northern bank of the Tennessee, opposite Chattanooga, and on the 4th of September, a large part of the army crossed. Bragg, finding his communications threatened, withdrew to Lafayette in Georgia, and Chattanooga was occupied by a federal corps.

Rosecrans now divided his army into three columns, widely separated by mount-

DEATH OF GENERAL REYNOLDS.

ains, and advanced in loose order against the foe, who, as I have told you, he thought much weaker than was the fact. Bragg made ready to overcome the three columns in detail, and felt certain of complete success. General D. H. Hill, however, bitterly opposed a movement against General Thomas, who was encamped at the foot of Lookout Mountain, to the left of the federal advance. Bragg, therefore, assigned the duty

to Buckner and General Hindman. The movement was a failure. Thomas escaped them by withdrawing into the mountain passes, and soon after effected a junction with two other corps.

It was arranged that at the time of the attack on Thomas, General Polk should fall on Crittenden's corps, which was the center of the three advancing columns; but he too failed, and on the 18th of September, the whole union army stood on the western bank of the Chickamauga—"the Dead River"—twelve miles from Chattanooga. Bragg had been largely re-enforced, and knowing that Longstreet's corps from Virginia was not far away, he decided on an effort to recover Chattanooga.

Rosecrans knew that his line was weak toward the left, and he was afraid of being cut off from Chattanooga. On the evening of the 18th, he moved some of his divisions from the right to the left, and the next morning the two armies faced each other in a narrow valley formed by two lines of hills—Mission Ridge and Pigeon Mount. Between them flowed the Chickamauga, which the confederates crossed in quest of the enemy.

On the morning of September 19, Rosecrans opened the battle by moving forward a brigade of Thomas' corps, which attacked the confederate right wing. The fighting soon became general and continued all day, the advantage being with the confederates. They had been checked in several quarters and compelled to give up some of their positions, but they had gained possession of the road to Chattanooga, and had driven the federals almost to the foot of Mission Ridge.

It was near midnight following the battle that Longstreet reached Bragg's headquarters, bringing an additional division of veterans. He was placed in command of the left wing. A new disposition of the forces was made, and it was ordered that the action should recommence at day-break on the morrow, which was Sunday.

It was an anxious night, as you can well understand, to Rosecrans. By the advice of General Thomas, he moved some more of his troops from the right to the left: the dread of the union commander was that his communications with Chattanooga would be cut.

While this movement was under way, the confederates attacked. It was about ten o'clock, the assault from some cause having been delayed. The delay gave the federals time to throw up breastworks and to increase their defenses. Bragg hurled his right wing against these intrenchments again and again without success.

Thomas, who handled the union left, repelled a sharp attack by Polk, but on the right, where Rosecrans commanded in person, he was completely outgeneraled and defeated by Longstreet. This able confederate leader, like Stonewall Jackson, had the faculty of getting every achievement possible out of his men. His soldiers followed him with impetuosity, wedging themselves between the two wings of the union army, where a gap had been created by the removal of the center to strengthen the left. Operating in both directions at the same time, under the direct leadership of Longstreet, the confederates threw several divisions in disorder and caused such confusion that Rosecrans galloped to Chattanooga and telegraphed to Washington that his whole army had been beaten. His object in riding back was to secure his supply train and his pontoon bridges over the Tennessee.

At this critical juncture, Hood, one of the confederate leaders, was desperately wounded, and the advance was checked during the time required to bring another officer to take his place. This brief delay gave the federals time to rally; re-enforcements were hurried to the weak points and a fresh stand was made.

But the utter overthrow of the army was alone prevented by General George H. Thomas. Commanding on the left, he hurled back the attack of Polk, but was assailed again by superior numbers. Polk attacked his center and left, and Longstreet charged his right with the utmost fury, but Thomas, with every soldier fighting like a hero, stood immovable. His grand courage won for him the name by which he was ever afterward known—"The Rock of Chickamauga."

About four o'clock in the afternoon, Longstreet observed a gap in the hills, almost in the rear of Thomas and began rushing his column through it. Fortunately, General Granger, knowing from the heavy firing that the reserves were needed, hurried them up from Rossville, arriving at this moment. The division had never been in battle before, but they fought like veterans. The onsets of Longstreet were repelled, and Thomas, having held his position, fell slowly back toward Chattanooga with a firm front presented to the enemy. He was ready to fight the next morning, but Bragg did not care to disturb him. Thomas and Longstreet were the respective heroes, while neither of the chief commanders won any credit.

The battle of Chickamauga was a victory for the confederates, for they had driven the federals from the field and kept possession. There were probably about 50,000 men engaged on each side. The federals lost 1,644 killed, 9,622 wounded and 5,085 missing, of whom probably many were killed. They lost thirty-six guns and a large quantity of small arms were left on the field. The confederate loss is not known with certainty, but it was probably nearly as great. Among their killed were three brigadier generals.

There was much dissatisfaction on both sides with the conduct of the battle. Rosecrans was soon afterward relieved of his command, and General Thomas appointed his successor. McCook, Crittenden, Negley and VanCleve were suspended until full inquiry could be made.

On the confederate side General Polk was thought to have shown hesitation in the action, and was removed from the scene of the recent operations, though President Davis complimented him for his past services and promised him a speedy appointment to a new command.

Longstreet was eager to follow up the retreating federals, but Bragg countermanded the orders he had given for that purpose. He was greatly blamed for this, but the confederate president was a warm friend of Bragg, and refused to notice the complaints.

Upon reaching Chattanooga, the union forces intrenched themselves. Bragg appeared before the town on the 23d, and finding the defenses too strong to be carried by assault, he laid siege. His effort to cut off the sources of supply partly failed because of the activity of the federal cavalry.

The position of the union army in Chattanooga at best was very grave and caused much anxiety in Washington. Unless relief could reach it there was danger of its being destroyed. In casting about for the best qualified man to grapple with the

problem, the government naturally fixed upon General Grant. He was appointed to the command of the entire west, which was erected into the "Military Division of the Mississippi," and large bodies of troops were put in motion to provide him with the means of acting promptly and with effect. The Eleventh and Twelfth corps, under Hooker, were transferred from the army of the Potomac to that of the Tennessee. These two corps, numbering 23,000 men, were, together with their artillery, baggage and animals, moved from the Rapidan, in Virginia, to Stevenson, in Alabama—a distance of 1,192 miles—in seven days, during which they twice crossed the Ohio River.

Thus, as the autumn advanced, several columns were converging for the relief of Chattanooga, while Bragg could do little besides watch the beleaguered town. Since the union re-enforcements far outnumbered those of the confederates, it may well be wondered what Bragg hoped to gain by waiting and doing nothing.

Among the union officers pushing toward Chattanooga was General Sherman, who had succeeded Grant in the command of the Tennessee department. It was on the 19th of October that Thomas succeeded Rosecrans. On the same day, he received a dispatch from Grant to hold his position at all hazards. He replied, "I will do so till we starve," and so he would have done, had it been necessary.

Thomas was trying to open a road along the southern bank of the Tennessee, so as to make a connection between the main army and Hooker's force, which at the close of October had reached Bridgport. The base of the union army was at Bridgport and Stevenson, both in Alabama, and the soldiers were supplied from depots at Nashville and Louisville by a single line of rail. The confederates had possession of the southern side of the Tennessee, with the exception of Chattanooga and the surrounding lines, while the road on the northern side was impassable because of the sharpshooters on the other bank. The federals, therefore, were forced to bring all their supplies by a round-about way, which was useless during severe weather. The army, therefore, was often in danger of starving, and it was of the highest importance to open the river and gain a shorter communication with the base.

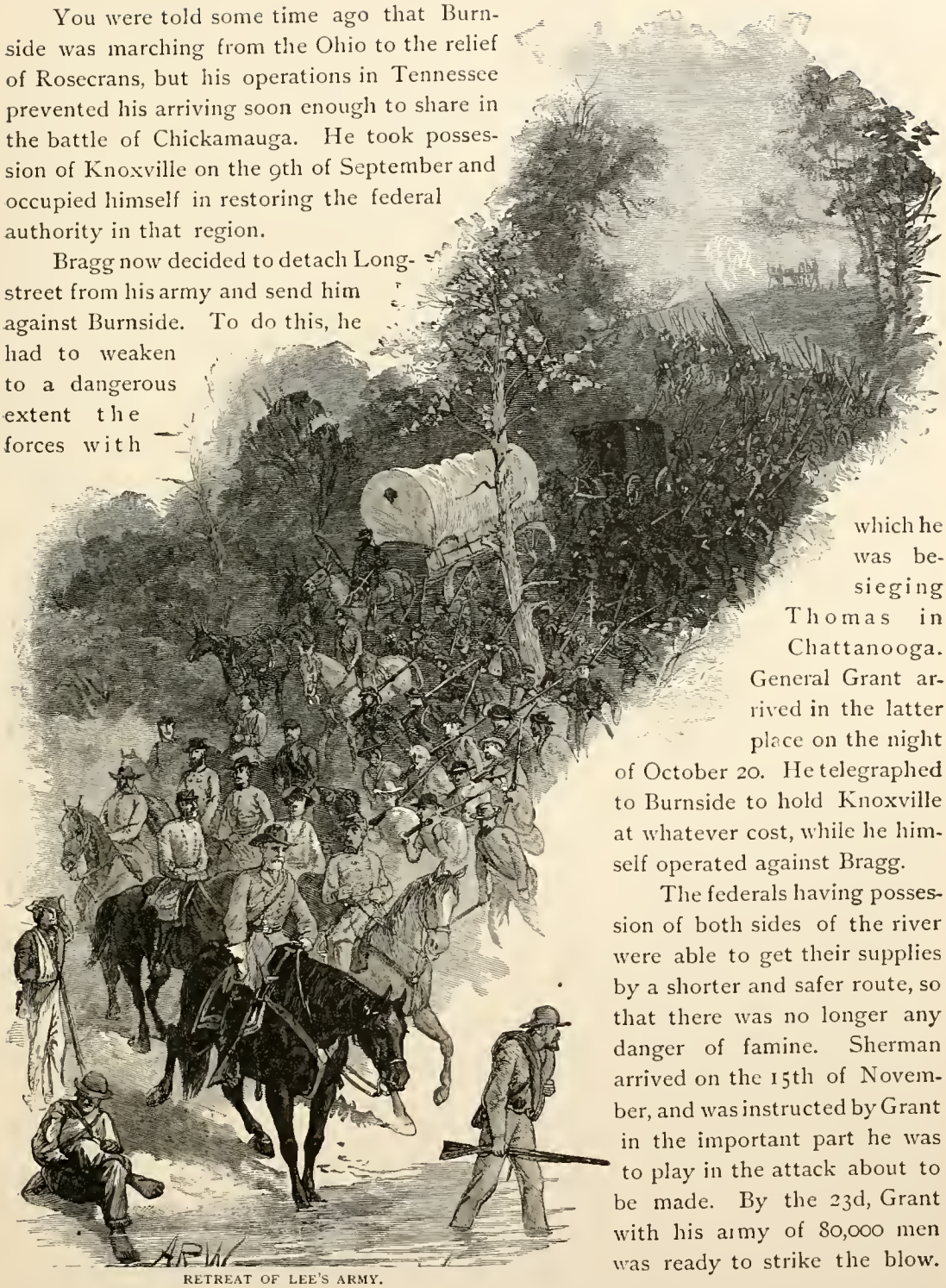
The arrival of Hooker at Bridgport relieved the army at Chattanooga from anxiety about their supplies, and you have learned that Sherman was also pushing toward the same point. Thomas ordered General W. F. Smith, his principal officer, to seize the mouth of Lookout Valley and the adjoining heights on the same side of the river with Chattanooga, while Hooker crossed from Bridgport on the opposite bank. Smith descended the river on the night of October 27, accompanied by infantry and engineers, and landed at the mouth of the valley at an early hour the next morning, meeting with little opposition from the enemy.

Securing himself in position, a pontoon bridge nine hundred feet in length was put together in five hours. Hooker crossed the same day at Bridgport and marched east, so as to join the force that had taken possession of Lookout Valley.

Generals Bragg and Longstreet watched this movement from the brow of Lookout Mountain, but they did not attack, because they were not ready for a general battle. That night, however, Longstreet assailed a detachment of Hooker's corps that was separated from the rest, but was repulsed with severe loss.

You were told some time ago that Burnside was marching from the Ohio to the relief of Rosecrans, but his operations in Tennessee prevented his arriving soon enough to share in the battle of Chickamauga. He took possession of Knoxville on the 9th of September and occupied himself in restoring the federal authority in that region.

Bragg now decided to detach Longstreet from his army and send him against Burnside. To do this, he had to weaken to a dangerous extent the forces with which he was besieging Thomas in Chattanooga. General Grant arrived in the latter place on the night of October 20. He telegraphed to Burnside to hold Knoxville at whatever cost, while he himself operated against Bragg.



RETREAT OF LEE'S ARMY.

The federals having possession of both sides of the river were able to get their supplies by a shorter and safer route, so that there was no longer any danger of famine. Sherman arrived on the 15th of November, and was instructed by Grant in the important part he was to play in the attack about to be made. By the 23d, Grant with his army of 80,000 men was ready to strike the blow.

Bragg was so weakened by the detachment of Longstreet's corps that he had less than 50,000. His line was twelve miles long and had two elevations overlooking the valley in which Chattanooga lies. Lookout Mountain on the south rises to the height of 2,400 feet, while Missionary Ridge on the east is of somewhat lower elevation. The left wing of Bragg's army rested on Lookout Mountain and his right on Missionary Ridge, with the Chattanooga flowing between. Almost any one would have declared the position impregnable. Bragg certainly thought so. He even prepared for an attack on Grant. On the 20th of November, he notified him to remove all non-combatants from the town, as he was about to bombard it. Grant smiled over the dispatch, and paid no attention to it.

On the evening of the 23d, the confederate picket lines were driven back and good positions gained. The next morning Hooker was sent to assail the position on Lookout Mountain, he having crossed the river the night before and gained a footing at the mouth of Lookout Creek, facing the mountain. A dense fog hid the movements of Hooker. It had been General Hooker's purpose to stop when the confederate rifle-pits among the foot hills were carried, but the enthusiasm of his men became such as to suggest the storming of the whole confederate position. The order was given, and up the mountain slopes the troops charged with resistless energy. The union flag was carried to the crest and by two o'clock Lookout Mountain swarmed with federal soldiers. The confederates fled toward Missionary Ridge, having lost 2,000 prisoners. The heavy fog was below the soldiers and this fact has led the engagement to be known as the "Battle above the Clouds."

The morning of the 25th was also foggy, but when the mists cleared the confederates from their high ground saw Sherman's corps moving toward the extreme right, near Chickamauga station. A heavy fire of artillery was opened against the attacking force, but the federals swept on, and soon reached the base of the ridge. The cannonade now slackened and gave place to musketry firing. Sherman's division was seeking to scale the heights occupied by the confederate right wing, commanded by General Hardee. The attack was pressed with great courage for an hour, but the federals were finally repulsed. Grant ordered the attack to be renewed and it was done with the utmost heroism, but a bloody repulse again followed. Then Grant ordered a general movement on the left center of the confederates. The resistance here was of the most determined character, but it was the one weak point, and a whole division of Hindman's line gave way: the federals bounded into the trenches, and the routed line retreated in disorder toward Ringgold, to the south-east of the confederate position. A vast number of prisoners were taken, and an enormous amount of supplies fell into federal hands.

General Hooker started in pursuit, and on the 26th the enemy fell back from Ringgold after a vain attempt to hold that place. The confederates then took possession of Taylor's Ridge, where the position was so strong that Grant called off the pursuit. Hooker was ordered to stay at Ringgold, while Sherman, at the head of a large body of troops, was directed to march against Longstreet.

Bragg had shown such incompetency that even the powerful friendship of President Davis was not strong enough to sustain him. He was superseded by General Hardee,

whose stand on Missionary Ridge was similar in many respects to that made by Thomas at Chickamauga.

Let us now turn our attention to Burnside, who was shut up in Knoxville and in danger of starvation. Knoxville is eighty-four miles from Chattanooga. The forces with which Longstreet marched against it were poorly equipped and they were obliged to forage on the country as they advanced; but the soldiers had the fullest confidence in their leader, and on the 16th of November they came in collision with two divisions of Burnside's force, at a place known as Campbell's Station. The federals were able to check their assailants until they could withdraw into the fortifications within the town. These reached from hill to hill around Knoxville, and within them were gathered nearly 15,000 infantry and artillery with some cavalry.

Longstreet invested the town on the 17th of November and on the 18th an assault was made against one of the principal outworks, which was carried after a hard struggle. In the midst of the action Captain Northrop, seeing the confederate infantry hesitate, spurred his horse on a dead run across the plain straight for the federal intrenchment. His heroism electrified his followers, who dashed after him with a shout and the work was taken. The scabbard and point of Northrop's sword were broken by musket shots, and he was wounded in the shoulder.

One of the outworks had been captured, but General Longstreet doubted whether all of them could be taken by assault. It was impossible to continue the siege, since General Grant was too near with his superior forces to permit it. To cut off the town from all supplies, so as to reduce it by famine, would take time, and the defeat of Bragg rendered it impossible. A large body of troops would soon be marching to the relief of Knoxville, in which event Longstreet would be caught between two fires.

Finally the plan of a direct assault was adopted and it was made on the morning of November 29. The federal batteries having been silenced, the storming parties charged across the open ground and gained the edge of the ditch. It was then found that there were no scaling ladders. While the assailants were hesitating as to what they should do, the federals poured so deadly a fire into their ranks that the column was broken. Some of the men climbed up the sides of the parapet and several even crawled into embrasures, but they were shot down, captured or driven back into the ditch. Hand-grenades were thrown among the reeling assailants, who broke and fled to their own lines.

Longstreet was grievously disappointed by his failure, but he still held his position. He learned not only that Bragg had been defeated, but that Sherman was marching with a strong force to the relief of Knoxville. The union general, although compelled to repair and build many bridges, advanced fast and by December 5, was in the vicinity of Knoxville. Longstreet had also been re-enforced, but he was not strong enough to resist the united armies of Sherman and Burnside. When the latter, therefore, reached the spot, Longstreet was gone. He had moved in a north-easterly direction toward Virginia.

Sherman and Burnside met outside the fortifications and the former proposed to pursue Longstreet with a force strong enough to compel the withdrawal of the confederates from east Tennessee, but Burnside declined. Sherman returned to

Chattanooga, and shortly afterward Burnside, because of failing health, secured a recall, and was superseded by General Forster from the department of North Carolina.

Toward the close of the year, the federals at Knoxville pushed their posts some thirty miles toward Virginia. Longstreet was still on the frontier of that state, and was on the watch for a chance to deliver a blow. On the 14th of December, General Shackelford was stationed with his federal cavalry at Bean's Cross Roads, on the north side of the Holston, about twenty-five miles from Knoxville.

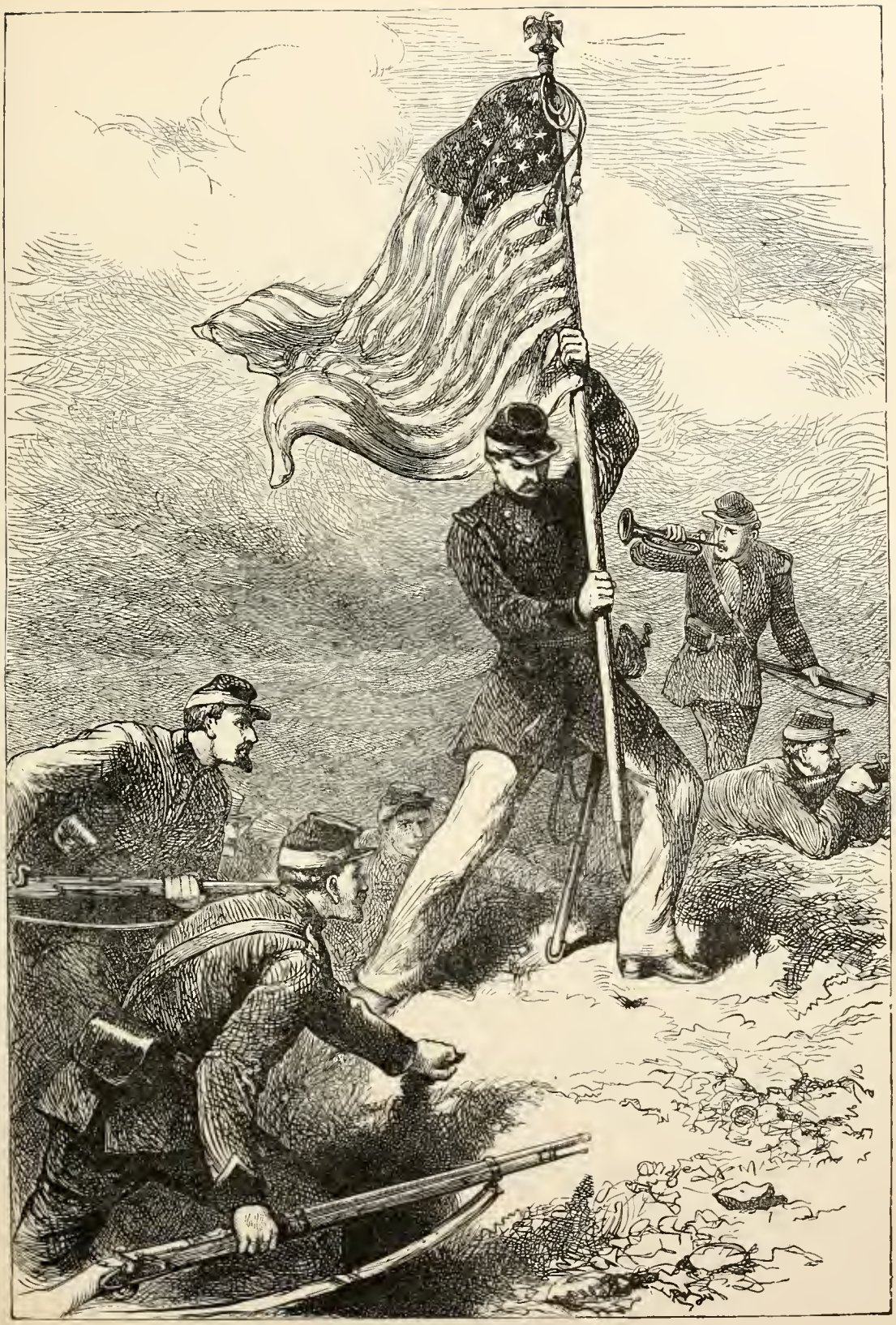
Longstreet moved down the valley with a view of cutting off these cavalrymen. Shackelford was driven back several miles with the loss of some prisoners, but the attack had hardly been made before the alarm spread, and a force of infantry was moved up to the support of the cavalry. The united forces took such a strong position that Longstreet decided not to renew the attack.

A SKIRMISHER.

The federals intrenched themselves and expected a determined assault on the next day. It proved to be only a skirmish, however, for without making any serious attempt, Longstreet drew off, taking with him a large amount of supplies, which he sadly needed.

General Longstreet withdrew to Rogersville, close to the Virginia border, where for a time he held the position of a spectator. The campaign of 1863 was ended in Tennessee, and from what has been told, you will readily see that the tide had set strongly in favor of the Union.

The majority of the people in east Tennessee were opposed to secession, and welcomed Burnside as one come to deliver them from bondage. The Mississippi had been opened, the leading confederate armies of the south-west had been badly defeated, thousands of prisoners taken, and the Confederacy had received more than one blow from which it could never recover.



INCIDENT AT THE SIEGE OF VICKSBURG. (*See page* 201.)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

CHAPTER XXIII.

EVENTS OF 1863. LESSER OPERATIONS.

AFTER Lee's retreat into Virginia from his bloody repulse at Gettysburg, a period of inactivity followed in northern Virginia. You have learned what vast campaigns were pushed in other quarters. The interest of the North and South was transferred for the time to the south-west, where the giants grappled in deadly conflict. Not only Lee but Meade sent large detachments thither to help in the tremendous struggle.

Longstreet's corps went to Tennessee in September, and Meade thought he was now strong enough to strike a blow, though he himself had also lost a large part of his army. He sent his cavalry across the Rappahannock. Lee, believing a general attack was intended, withdrew to a strong position behind the Rapidan, where Meade was afraid to attack him and he therefore attempted a flank movement. Before he could do so, he received notice from Washington that it was necessary to send two more of his corps to the south-west, because of Rosecrans' defeat at Chickamauga. You remember that the Eleventh and Twelfth corps were transferred, with Hooker as their commander.

This left Meade so weak that he could act only on the defensive. After his absent men were sent back to him, and he was making ready to assume the offensive, Lee himself did so. The confederate leader wished to deliver a blow that would so disable the army of the Potomac, that it would make no forward movement before the following spring.

General Lee crossed the Rapidan on the 9th of October, with the purpose of passing around the right flank of Meade and getting between him and Washington. He advanced with great secrecy on Madison Court House, well to the right of Meade. The first warning received by Meade was the next day when his outpost was attacked at James City and driven back to Culpeper, where the main army lay.

Seeing that his right flank had been turned, Meade started his trains toward the Rappahannock and followed with his army the same night. Lee approached Culpeper on the 11th and found that the federal army had passed beyond the Rappahannock. In the pursuit, some sharp skirmishes took place between the rear guard of Meade and the confederates under Ewell and A. P. Hill.

When Meade reached the further side of Bull Run, his army began fortifying and in a few days were secure against any attack by Lee. The latter had no choice but to return to the point whence he came. The country in which he now found himself had been tramped back and forth by the hostile armies for more than two years and was incapable of sustaining a large body of men.

Lee had proved that he was able to make an advance northward whenever he

COPYRIGHT, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

ON PICKET. "WHO GOES THERE?"

Drawn by A. R. Waud.

chose, and to throw the North into a state of alarm by threatening Washington; but when he did so, he ran great risk and gained nothing. On the 18th of October, the confederate army returned to the line of the Rappahannock, their rear covered by Stuart's cavalry. Kilpatrick started in pursuit with his cavalry, but was driven back after a sharp engagement. Lee then took position on the Rappahannock, with his forces on both sides of the Orange and Alexandria railway.

On the 7th of November, General Meade, having repaired the railway destroyed by Lee, started toward Richmond. On the northern bank of the Rappahannock, he met a strong body of confederates occupying earthworks erected by the federals some time before. A furious fight followed and the confederates in the end were driven across the river with heavy loss. The federals continued to Culpeper, and Lee made a hurried retreat across the Rapidan.

Meade did not think it prudent to follow, and no doubt the year's campaign would have ended there, but for the clamor of the North for an advance movement. He had sent nearly two thousand prisoners, seven field pieces and many colors to Washington, but the northern press insisted that the time had come to take Richmond. The demand for an immediate advance was so strong that Meade yielded.

Meade's plan was to divide the two wings of the confederate army by a quick movement on Orange Court House. He crossed the Rapidan on the 26th and 27th of November and once more entered the tangled country known as the Wilderness. The elements, however, fought against him. Heavy rain storms set in and he was compelled to cut communicating roads between the corps and to build many bridges over the swampy portions.

Meanwhile, Lee was busy bringing together the several divisions of his army and by the last day of November he was ready for any attack. When Meade came in front of the formidable line of obstructions, he began hunting for a favorable point of assault. The result of these reconnoissances and of the council that followed was the decision that General Warren with 26,000 men was to try to turn the confederate left, while Sedgwick sought to turn the right. French was to take no part but to hold the line between Sedgwick and Warren.

It was arranged that on the morning of the 30th the attack should be opened by a heavy artillery fire by Sedgwick, after which Warren would advance, and an hour later Sedgwick would make his attempt to turn the confederate right. At daylight the boom of Sedgwick's cannon rolled along the line, but in the direction of Warren all remained as still as the tomb. Meade and the rest were amazed, but an aid of Warren quickly brought the explanation.

Warren had inspected the confederate right just before the attack was to be made, and had found it as impregnable as Fredericksburg when Burnside hurled the army of the Potomac against it. Warren's men were awaiting the order, but their leader showed a moral heroism in declining to order the assault: he preferred to sacrifice himself rather than his men.

General Meade rode over the line and examined the works in front. He saw that Warren was right: it would have been a crime to order the attack, and, bitter as was the disappointment, the union leader decided that no assault should be made.

Indeed Lee felt so strong that he was in favor of attacking Meade, but his officers opposed, believing that the union commander would make some later movement that

THE DWELLERS IN VICKSBURG.

would give the advantage to his opponent. But Meade did not do so: winter was close at hand and the weather was so severe that several of his men had frozen to death. On the night of December 1, therefore, he returned to his old position on the Rapidan. Lee started in pursuit, but he was too late.

Both armies now went into winter quarters. Meade's troops were distributed along

the Orange and Alexandria railway, from the Rapidan to the Rappahannock. Lee held the south bank of the Rapidan, from the river along the railway to Orange Court House and Gordonsville.

It is proper in this place to give some account of the leading raids made by both

THE MEETING OF GRANT AND PEMBERTON.

sides. To the dashing soldiers there was something tempting in these forays, many of which were of the most stirring nature. Sometimes they had no effect upon the campaigns, while in other cases they were of such magnitude that their influence was marked.

During the operations at Chancellorsville the federal General Stoneman, at the head of his cavalry force, executed a movement by which it was hoped to cut off the retreat of Lee's army should it be defeated by Hooker. The result, as you know, of Chancellorsville was such that Hooker would have been very glad to have the confederate army retreat with all speed.

Stoneman left Falmouth on the 28th of April, with three brigades of horse, mustering 2,300. The Rappahannock was crossed at Kelly's Ford, and one half under Averill rode toward the Orange railway, a short distance above Culpeper, which was then occupied by Fitzhugh Lee. Lee was so vigorously attacked that his force of five hundred men fled across the Rapidan, destroying the bridge behind them to prevent pursuit. Averill did not go any further, but turned back and joined Hooker at the United States Ford, just before that general retreated to the northern side of the Rappahannock.

Stoneman with the other half of the cavalry showed more enterprise. He crossed the Rapidan on the 1st of May and rode to Louisa, a station on the Virginia Central railway, fifteen miles east of Gordonsville. From this point he sent out several flying columns to work all the mischief they could. One of them reached Ashland, a station within fifteen miles of Richmond. Another brigade struck the James River at Columbia, inflicted much damage on the different lines of communication and made off with many horses and negroes. Stoneman started northward on the 6th of May, and encountered a confederate force on the line of the York River railway. The federals were in much danger, but by rapid riding they escaped along the north bank of the Pamunkey and York rivers and reached the federal post at Gloucester, opposite Yorktown.

At one point in this raid, Stoneman was within four miles of Richmond. There was much consternation for a time in the confederate capital, for it was not known how large was the force of the enemy. The raid was a daring one, but you need not be told that it gave no help to Hooker, who was badly defeated by the army of Northern Virginia.

During the siege of Vicksburg, a raid in the rear of the city by Colonel B. H. Grierson was of great help to Grant. The confederate lines of communication were destroyed and the concentration of re-enforcements for Pemberton checked. Colonel Grierson was the commander of the first brigade of cavalry of Grant's army and the raid was his own idea. He left La Grange, near the southern frontier of Tennessee, on the 17th of April. He was at the head of three regiments, and, crossing the Tallahatchie, he moved south till he struck the Macon and Corinth railway. The rails were torn up, the telegraph wires cut, the stores burned and detachments were sent out in different directions. This work was done thoroughly, after which the troops came together again and continued their march.

Turning to the south-west, Grierson seized the bridge over Pearl River, and burned a number of locomotives on the Jackson and New Orleans railway. Following the line of that railway in a southerly direction, he pushed through swamps and marshes to Baton Rouge, where he arrived on the 2d of May. There he found friends, the town being in the possession of the federals. They had spent a little more than two weeks on their raid, during which they had many skirmishes, attacked several towns, destroyed

an immense amount of supplies and captured numerous prisoners. The distance traveled was more than five hundred miles.

There were many raids made by the confederates, especially under Mosby, Stuart and Morgan. The first two operated in the east and the other in the south-west. I have not the space to tell you one half of the achievements of these daring riders, whose exploits were often admired by their enemies as well as by their friends.

Morgan, in the early part of July, seized on Columbia, to the north-west of Jamestown, Kentucky, and marched to Greenbrier Bridge, where Colonel Moore was intrenched with a body of federal troops. The latter defended themselves so well that Morgan was obliged to retreat.

Morgan now attacked Lebanon, and savage fighting took place in the streets. His brother, in command of one of the regiments, was killed, whereupon Morgan set fire to the houses. The union troops then surrendered and the place was sacked by the raiders. Knowing that the union cavalry were advancing, Morgan retreated through northern Kentucky, plundering on every hand. The men were almost uncontrollable; and, reckless to desperation, they crossed the Ohio and entered Indiana, which as yet had seen nothing of war.

The invaders spread dismay everywhere. The local militia could not stop them and even Ohio became alarmed. But the union cavalry were riding hard after Morgan, who had enemies on every hand. Realizing his danger he turned toward the east, and entering Ohio threatened Cincinnati. But he was on his way to Western Virginia, the nearest shelter.

By this time the pursuit was hot and was fast becoming hotter. The telegraph had carried the alarming news in every direction and troops were converging from all quarters; the fords of the Ohio were guarded by the militia; gun-boats steamed up and down the river; trees were felled across the roads and every possible means taken to head off the raiders.

Morgan and his men had ridden hard and they were so laden with plunder that their progress was not rapid. But the leader was brave and he did all he could to save his command. Planting field guns on the Ohio, near Buffington Island, he sought to protect his men while they swam their horses across. A federal gun-boat, however, knocked the battery to pieces.

Then Morgan tried to cross at Belleville, but failed again and his troops scattered. They were followed and picked up one by one, until Morgan himself and some of his officers and men were surrounded near New Lisbon, Ohio, and compelled to surrender. Morgan, with his superior officers, was sent to the Ohio Penitentiary. There they were kept in close confinement until the 27th of November, when, through the assistance of friends, Morgan and six officers effected their escape. He reached the confederate lines in safety, and it was not long before he was at the head of another body of cavalry, dealing as hard blows as before at the federal cause.

You have learned something about the exploits of Stuart, who made a raid around McClellan's army in the Peninsula, in 1862. He rode around Pope and his army also, and gave valuable aid to Lee in the Gettysburg campaign.

During the movements of Lee and Meade, as described in this chapter, Stuart set out on a reconnoissance to Catlett's Station. He saw French's column of federals in the act of withdrawing from the river, and he fell back toward Warrenton. Entering the road leading from Warrenton to Manassas, Stuart unexpectedly found himself face to face with the corps of General Warren, so that he was directly between the two federal columns and in imminent danger of being captured or destroyed. The safety of his men for the time depended on not being seen by the federals, who almost surrounded them. The cavalry were in a thin strip of woods, where they had hidden themselves on learning their danger, but it looked as if discovery was certain. The federals were so close that the neigh of a horse or the clank of a saber would betray the confederates.

Stuart called his officers around him to decide what should be done. Surrender was not to be thought of and no one proposed it. The only course seemed to be that of abandoning their nine pieces of horse artillery and cutting their way out under cover of the darkness.

Stuart, however, was unwilling to lose his guns. He adopted another plan. He dismounted several of his men and gave each a musket and an infantry knapsack. In the darkness their uniforms would not have been recognized had they met any federals. They were directed to make their way through the union lines to Warrenton, to tell General Lee that Stuart was surrounded and to ask him to send immediate help. Two of the messengers succeeded in reaching Lee and making known to him the perilous position of his lieutenant.

A long time must pass before help could arrive and the hours, as you may well suppose, were long and anxious ones to Stuart and his men crouching among the trees. The federals were on every hand, their camp fires burning brightly and the smell of cooking food floated to the nostrils of the hungry raiders. The words of the federals as they laughed and chatted were plainly heard, and detection seemed certain.

Late in the evening two federal officers straggled into the woods with never a thought of danger. They were moving leisurely along when at the same moment each felt the cold muzzle of a pistol shoved against his nose, accompanied by the whispered warning that if he stirred or made an outcry he would be shot dead. The prisoners saw that the woods were full of dusky figures and they submitted, giving their captors no trouble.

Early the next morning, the federal division posted on the heights of Cedar Run to protect General Warren's rear began preparing breakfast. Shortly after, they were startled by the sharp firing of musketry from the advance of General Ewell's column, coming over the Warrenton road.

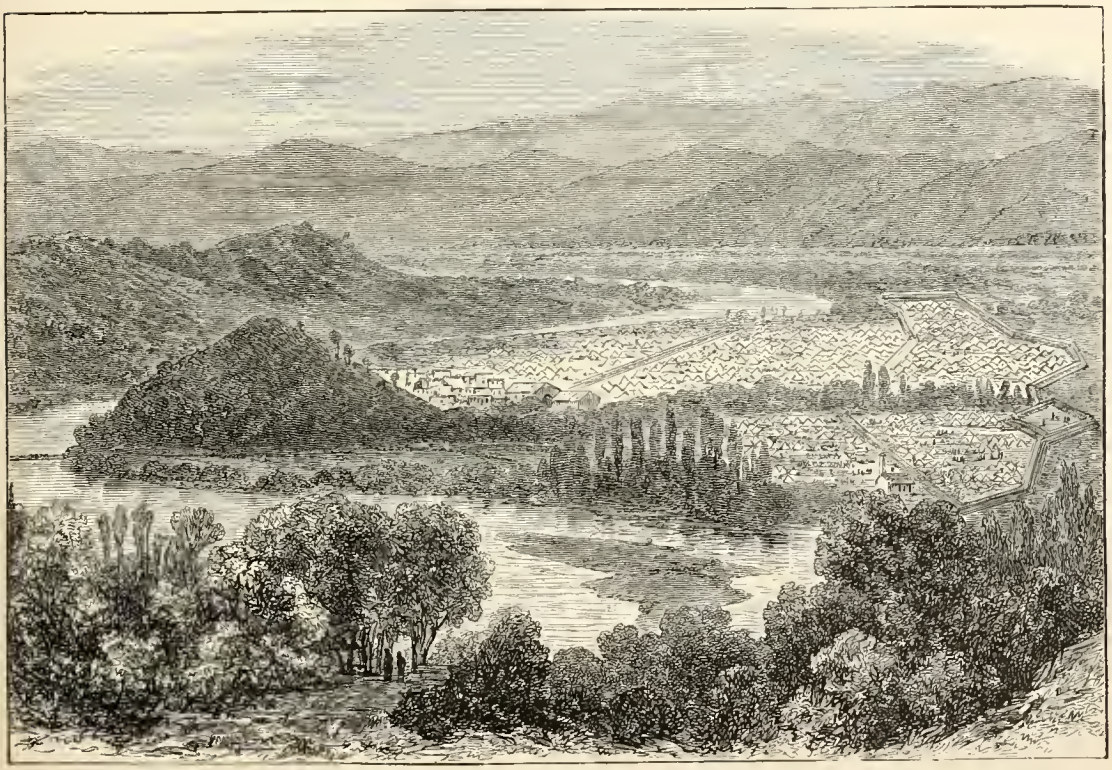
The sound thrilled the anxious troopers with delight, for it proved that Lee had sent relief which was at hand. Stuart immediately opened on the federal lines. An attack from that quarter was so unexpected that it caused much confusion and a number of lives were lost. Stuart then limbered up his guns and galloped to meet General Ewell.

CHAPTER XXIV.

EVENTS OF 1863. OPERATIONS ON THE COAST.

LET us now see what was done along the coast.

The confederate war steamer *Nashville* was in the Ogeechee River, Georgia, and a sharp watch was kept over the mouth of that stream to prevent her getting away. She had been loaded with cotton for several months, and was waiting for a chance to slip out and elude the fleet. The latter would have been glad to go after the privateer, had it been in their power to do so. But the confederates had strengthened Fort McAllister at the entrance to the river, and had so obstructed the channel with torpe-



FEDERAL LINES AT CHATTANOOGA.

does that any hostile vessel attempting to ascend the stream would have been destroyed. The steamer was heavily armed, and had she been able to get out, would have rivaled the *Alabama* in her career of destruction.

On the night of February 27, Captain Worden, commanding the iron-clad *Montauk*, observed the *Nashville* lying aground in shallow water above Fort McAllister. The next morning the *Montauk*, although exposed to a hot fire from the fort, opened on the

Nashville, and soon succeeded in setting her in flames. Soon after a large pivot-gun, mounted abaft her foremast, exploded from the heat, and finally the magazine blew up. By that time there was little left of the confederate privateer.

The iron armor of the *Montauk* proved such good protection against the fire of the fort that Captain Worden decided to ascend the river. Before doing so, however, it was necessary to reduce Fort McAllister and to remove the obstructions in the river. An engagement took place between the batteries and the gun-boats, on the 3d of March, but the boats withdrew and no attempt was made to pass up the river. The vessels too were needed to take part in operations against Charleston.

The confederates knew that an attack would be made on that city—the birthplace of secession. General Beauregard, the commander of the department, had strengthened the defenses and had issued a proclamation urging the removal of all non-combatants and calling on the population of the state to come forward for the defense of the city.

Charleston was closely watched by a fleet of iron-clads. On a dark night in January these were scattered by Captain Ingraham, who dashed out with a couple of rams and compelled one of the gun-boats to surrender. The confederates claimed that the blockade had been raised, but the claim resulted in nothing.

Admiral Dupont had charge of the expedition against Charleston. During the month of March, most of the fleet was moved from Port Royal, South Carolina, to a point half way between that and Charleston. By the 1st of April a hundred vessels were gathered at the mouth of North Edisto River. The fleet sailed on the 6th of April, and during the day the iron-clads crossed the bar and took up position in the main channel along the coast of Morris Island.

A thick haze prevented any operations until the next day. Then a line of battle was formed by the iron clads, the wooden vessels staying outside the bar. With a view of exploding the torpedoes known to be in the channels, a raft was attached to the *Weehawken*. The raft proved to be such a hindrance that the advance of the squadron was delayed an hour. Another hour passed before the vessels came within range of the many forts and batteries by which Charleston was defended.

As you may well suppose, there was great excitement in the city. The roofs of the houses, all the steeples and the long line of wharves swarmed with spectators whose eyes were riveted on the stirring sight. From the walls of the forts streamed the flags of South Carolina—palmetto tree on a blue ground—and of the Confederacy, while the advancing squadron caught the strains of "Dixie," floating across the bay from the bands within the forts.

The *Weehawken* was not molested until she had passed the outer batteries and was about to enter the inner harbor. Then a gun was fired from Fort Moultrie, instantly followed by all the batteries on Sullivan's Island and Morris Island and by those of Fort Sumter. At the entrance of the channel between Sumter and Sullivan's Island, the leading vessel was entangled in a hawser which was stretched across, and provided with nets and contrivances intended to clog the screws of the propellers. The *Weehawken* tried to find a better position and then the squadron became mixed in a way that ended all order.

The *New Ironsides* while trying to turn was caught in the tide way, and refusing to obey her rudder, became unmanageable. Two other iron-clads fell afoul of her, all three lying in a dead lock for a quarter of an hour. Admiral Dupont signaled the fleet to pay no attention to the movements of the flagship, but to take up the best positions they could.

About the middle of the afternoon, the iron-clads were ranged opposite the north-east front of Sumter, at distances varying from 550 to 800 yards. In this position they were in direct range of 300 guns of great power. The *Weehawken* being useless, there were only eight iron-clads carrying sixteen guns in all.

It is hard to realize the terrific fire to which these iron-clads were exposed. If you will hold a watch to your ear, you will hear the ticking about as fast as the projectiles struck the vessels—that is, when the firing was comparatively moderate. Most of the time it was twice as fast and for awhile it was almost three times as rapid.

You will see under what disadvantages the iron-clads labored. The channel was so narrow that great care was necessary to prevent them fouling each other, and the danger from torpedoes attended every movement. Besides, the smoke from the guns was so dense that often the men could not see the length of the ship.

Commander Rhind ran the *Keokuk* close to Fort Sumter and fought for half an hour. During that brief period she was struck ninety times in the hull and turrets and nineteen shots pierced her sides either at or below the water line. Her commander by great labor got his vessel beyond range of the guns and she sank the next morning.

All the other vessels had been injured, though none so severely as the *Keokuk*. It was clear that with all their heavy armor the iron-clads could not withstand the tremendous guns of the forts. Admiral Dupont signaled for the attack to cease. Only two men had been killed in the forts, while the federals had lost several. The east wall of Fort Sumter showed in a slight degree the effect of the shots, but it amounted to nothing. Nowhere else had the slightest damage been done, while the squadron had received serious damage.

The whole fleet, with the exception of the *New Ironsides*, went back to Port Royal on the 12th of April. President Lincoln, like the rest of the North, was greatly disappointed by the result. He ordered Admiral Dupont to hold his position inside Charleston bar, or, if he had left it, to return at once. He was told not to allow the enemy to put up new defenses on Morris Island, and if he was trying to do so, he must be driven away.

In his reply, the admiral said he was ready to obey all orders willingly, but he showed that the course marked out was attended with great risks. As a result, Dupont was superseded in July by Rear-admiral Dahlgren, and preparations were made for a combined land and naval attack on Charleston.

General Quincy A. Gillmore, who captured Fort Pulaski, at Savannah, shortly after the engagement between the *Monitor* and *Merrimac*, was called to Washington to arrange with the government the plan of an attack on Charleston. It was decided that a military force should seize Morris Island and from that point bombard Fort Sumter. A strong fleet under Dahlgren was to help the troops, and it was rather hoped than

believed that the monitors and iron-clads would be able to pass the batteries and reach Charleston itself.

A large force was collected on Folly Island, to the south of Morris Island, and during July batteries were erected among the woods. Under cover of them a force of 2,000 men, under General Strong, on the 10th of July attacked a force of South Carolina infantry under General Ripley at the southern point of Morris Island. The confederates were driven to Fort Wagner, near the further end of the island.

LONGSTREET'S ARRIVAL AT BRAGG'S HEADQUARTERS.

The weather was very hot and no further attack was made until the next day. During the night the confederates threw re-enforcements into Fort Wagner, and their defense was so effective that the federals were forced to retreat with much loss. Indeed the cost of taking Fort Wagner would be so great that General Gillmore decided for the time to proceed against the fort by the erection of opposing batteries, which were aided by the fire of the monitors.

A tremendous bombardment was opened on the 18th of July. The confederate guns replied weakly, and that night, in the midst of a violent thunderstorm, the federal columns formed on the beach for another assault upon Fort Wagner. The head of the first brigade was a negro regiment, and the whole force as it pressed on received the fire of forts Wagner, Gregg and Sumter and the batteries on James and Sullivan's islands. The garrison poured fierce volleys into the assailants as they attempted to

VIEW FROM LOOKOUT MOUNTAIN.

climb the walls, and when they came within reach of the bayonet and sword those weapons were used with fearful effect. The first brigade was driven back and then the second tried it. They met with the same savage reception, but effected a lodgment in one of the angles of the fort, where they fought desperately for an hour. In the end they, too, were driven out with severe loss. General Strong was wounded and most of

his leading officers had fallen. Through some blunder the third brigade did not arrive to the support of the first two. The confederates in the fort had lost one hundred and seventy-four in killed, wounded, and missing, but this was only a fraction of the loss of the assailants, and the fort was as strong as ever. It was made of sand, which turned aside or rendered harmless the missiles that struck it, while such breaches as were made were easily repaired.

General Gillmore opened parallels against the fort, and the siege was pushed in the regular way. The iron-clads now and then exchanged shots with Fort Wagner and Fort Sumter. The former was within such easy reach of Charleston that its garrison was regularly re-enforced and relieved and the best guns obtainable were sent thither during July and August.

On the 17th of the latter month, the breaching batteries began firing over Fort Wagner at Fort Sumter, three miles distant. Forts Wagner, Gregg and Sumter were bombarded by the iron-clads and replied with spirit. The weather was so oppressively hot that the vessels were obliged to stop firing early in the afternoon. When they came back toward evening, the garrison of Fort Wagner had repaired the damages received in the forenoon.

The bombardment continued until the 21st, by which time the southern wall of Sumter was a mass of ruins. The confederate flag was repeatedly shot down, but as often replaced by some daring soldier. Great breeches were made on the northern side, a number of guns dismounted and others taken away. The garrison, however, had suffered little. Little damage had been done to forts Wagner and Gregg, and the inner line of defenses reaching across James Island toward Sullivan's Island had been made stronger than before.

General Gillmore had been so successful against Fort Sumter that he demanded the surrender of that position, and of the works on Morris Island, under a threat of bombarding the city of Charleston in case of refusal. Beauregard was absent on a reconnoissance at the time the message was brought to the city, and before he could reply the bombardment opened.

The first shot was fired a little past midnight on the 22d of August. It caused consternation and terror among the sleeping inhabitants, who rushed into the streets, while many fled to the open country. Beauregard sent a vehement remonstrance to Gillmore, reminding him that among civilized nations timely notice was always given of the intended bombardment of a city, in order that non-combatants might be removed. Gillmore, after giving the reasons for his course, agreed to wait until the night of the 23d, at eleven o'clock, before renewing the bombardment. He explained that he had been steadily advancing for a long time, as was well known in Charleston, and non-combatants ought to have been removed long before. He had reason to believe that in fact most of them had left.

The bombardment of Charleston was renewed at the hour named. The principal work was done by an immense Parrott gun, which carried a one hundred and fifty pound ball, and was known as the "Swamp Angel." This gun was doing good service when, fortunately for Charleston, it burst, and its effectiveness was forever destroyed.

Among some condemned cannon sent after the war to a large foundry in Trenton, N. J., was the famous Swamp Angel, which is now mounted in that city at the junction of Perry and Clinton streets.

Meanwhile the parallels were steadily pushed toward Fort Wagner. The confederate rifle-pits were carried at the point of the bayonet on the 26th of August, and a fifth parallel was completed within seven hundred feet of the main work. There was no decrease, however, in the opposing fire, and, since Admiral Dahlgren could not pass the barriers to the inner harbor, he could do nothing toward flanking the positions that the federals were trying to take in front. The sappers could work only at night, and even then some of them were picked off by aid of the strong moonlight.

General Gillmore, however, stuck to his work. He opened a new bombardment on the 5th of September, which never ceased for forty-two hours. At night the gunners worked by means of calcium lights, and the land batteries were aided by one of the iron-clads, which fired huge shells from its eight broadside guns. The garrison lost a number of men, and, finding their position untenable, it was decided to withdraw from Fort Wagner and Fort Gregg.

The evacuation began at nine o'clock on the night of September 6. The guns were spiked and fire applied to the magazine, but the matches went out. The last of the confederate garrison left the island, and the federals were obliged to repair the ramparts to protect themselves against the batteries that were turned upon them from Fort Moultrie and James Island.

Admiral Dahlgren believed that Fort Sumter must be surrendered now that Morris Island had been captured. It was a ruin, its artillery could not be worked, and it was held only by a detachment of infantry, commanded by Major Elliott. Dahlgren summoned him to surrender, but, after communicating with Beauregard, the major invited the admiral to come and take it. The attempt was made by the iron-clads, aided by a military force, on the 9th of September, but it failed.

This ended for a long time the operations against Charleston. The forts and the city were occasionally bombarded, but the stronghold did not yield till toward the close of the war.

CHAPTER XXV.

EVENTS OF 1863. MINOR INCIDENTS.

IN reading an account of the war for the Union, you must not make the mistake of thinking that every one in the North was in favor of it. That a large majority were thus disposed is proved by the vigor with which it was waged, but many thought that the Union was not worth the treasures of money and life that it had already cost.

Although large bounties were offered for volunteers, the supply was by no means equal to the needs, and the government passed a conscription act—that is, it ordered each state to furnish its quota of soldiers to be selected by lot from its citizens.

The enforcement of the draft caused a fearful riot in New York and in several other places. The first day of the conscription—July 11—passed quietly, but on the next, which was Sunday, it was determined to resist the draft by force. Some residents of the Ninth District, in New York City, met on that day and formed their plans. The next morning organized bands went to the various shops and factories and persuaded hundreds of workmen to join them. A large force then marched to the conscription office, and assailed the building with paving stones. The rioters captured the place, smashed the ballot boxes and furniture, tore up the lists, drove out the provost-marshal, and beat another official almost to death. Turpentine was scattered about and the building set on fire; the flames spread fast, and the mob would not allow the firemen to put them out.

The number of rioters increased every hour. At such times, multitudes of the worst criminals become active. From the alleys, hovels and secret places swarmed the vile and desperate, until thousands were raging through the metropolis, like so many wild beasts let loose on the affrighted people.

It was not opposition to the draft that actuated most of these men: it was the fierce thirst for plunder and blood, which in moments of excitement changes people into tigers. Peaceable persons were knocked down on the streets, robbed and pounded to death; leading citizens and editors who favored the prosecution of the war were compelled to hide themselves, or to flee from the city to save their lives; an armory was sacked and set on fire, and the mob, now that they had deadly weapons, began a reign of terror in New York.

The police of that city are among the best in the world, and they strove to their utmost to disperse the rioters. Sometimes, with the help of the firemen, a mob would be broken up, but in a few minutes the rioters would come together again wilder and more furious than before. There were no soldiers to be had, but fifty marines were launched at the savage men, who quickly overwhelmed and killed several of them.

When night settled over the city, incendiary fires lit up the sky in many directions, alarm bells were jangling, the air was filled with the cries of the criminals, and the

CAPTAIN NORTHROP LEADING THE ATTACK AT KNOXVILLE. (*See page* 211.)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

consternation was so general that few dared to go to bed, not knowing but that their dwellings would be wrapped in flames before morning. For four days the mob trampled New York under foot. During that period the most horrible crimes were committed. The fury of the rioters was turned against the negroes. Wherever one of them was caught, he was beaten to death. Many that took refuge in dwelling houses were pulled out and hanged to the trees in front. Women and boys helped, and scores of poor negroes were mutilated in the most shocking manner. The shops and stores belonging to Africans were pillaged, and the Colored Orphan Asylum was set on fire. Colonel O'Brien of the militia was murdered and dragged through the streets. On the 14th, Governor Seymour declared martial law, but it was not until the 16th, when the government sent a large military force to the city that the outbreak was put down and something like order restored. How many were killed during those frightful days can never be known, but careful estimates place it at many hundreds.

On the 15th of July, when the riot was at its height, the provost marshal of the city published a notice that the draft had been suspended in New York and Brooklyn. It was also voted by the city that $3,000,000 should be given in the case of the poorer conscripts, to pay the commutation of three hundred dollars, which the government was willing to accept in place of a substitute. Other cities of the state followed the example and this no doubt helped to restore quiet.

It proved however that the provost marshal had no authority for his statement. The authorities at Washington gave notice on the 17th that no orders had been issued countermanding the draft, which would go on, and the military were to aid in carrying it into effect.

You would think that this announcement would start the riot anew, but it did not: the fires of brutality had well nigh burned out. The government sent large bodies of troops from the army of the Potomac to meet the "fire in the rear," as it was called; the open places were occupied by cavalry, artillery and infantry; armed vessels were so placed as to command the streets, and arrangements were made for sending re-enforcements with all speed. These precautions, in addition to some concessions, averted further trouble.

There were outbreaks caused by opposition to the draft in other quarters. The most alarming were in Boston, and Portsmouth, N. H., where it was necessary to employ the military. Nevertheless, the draft brought 50,000 men to the army, and the commutation furnished more than $10,000,000 to the government.

The messages of the presidents of the United States and of the Southern Confederacy to their respective Congress were of great interest, for these papers are expected to give a summary of the events of the preceding year of national importance, as well as a view of the questions of present and future moment.

President Lincoln in his message of December 8, said that the question of negro bondage and of using black soldiers had given a new and doubtful aspect to the future. As a matter of civil administration, the government had no power to free the negroes of any state and for a long time it was hoped that the rebellion could be put down without resorting to this extreme measure. But the necessity came and it was adopted.

As was expected it was followed by dark and doubtful days. "Eleven months have passed," said President Lincoln, "and we are permitted to take another view. The rebel borders are pressed still further back, and, by the complete opening of the Mississippi, the country dominated by the rebellion is divided into distinct parts, with no practical communication between them. Tennessee and Arkansas have been practically cleared of insurgent control, and influential citizens in each, owners of slaves and advocates of slavery at the beginning of the rebellion, now declare openly for emancipation in their respective states. Of those states not included in the Emancipation Proclamation, Maryland and Missouri, neither of which three years ago would tolerate any restraint upon the extension of slavery into new territories, only dispute now as to the best mode of abolishing it. Of those who were slaves at the beginning of the rebellion, fully one hundred thousand are now in the United States military service, about one half of which number actually bear arms in the ranks; thus giving the double advantage of taking so much labor from the insurgent cause, and supplying the places that otherwise must be filled with so many white men. So far as tested, it is difficult to say they are not as good soldiers as any. No servile insurrection, or tendency to violence or cruelty, has marked the measures of emancipation and arming the blacks."

The president was so sure that the national authority would soon be restored, that he had issued an amnesty proclamation, dated on the same day as his message, and sent it to Congress for approval. This proclamation promised full pardon and restoration of right of property—except as to slaves, or where the rights of other parties had supervened—to all persons (with certain exceptions), who had been in the rebellion, on condition that they took a prescribed oath of future loyalty to the government of the United States.

President Davis sent his message to the confederate congress about the same time. He did not shut his eyes to the disasters that had overtaken the late military operations. He complained of the unfriendliness of France and England, which as you may know was the precise complaint that we justly made two years before. The state of the finances of the Confederacy required immediate attention. The treasury notes had increased until there were more than $600,000,000 in circulation, which was three times the amount required by the business of the country. He considered the resources of the country ample, and counted on the devotion of his people to supply all that was needed of the "sinews of war."

President Davis referred to one interesting subject of which President Lincoln made no mention—that was the invasion of Mexico by French troops. On the 31st of October, 1861, the governments of Great Britain, France and Spain agreed to unite against Mexico because of some outrages committed on foreigners by that republic and of the failure of the nations named to get payment due to various bond-holders. I need not tell you that the nations I have named would never have dared to sign any such agreement had not the United States been involved in its great civil war. It was a defiant violation of the Monroe Doctrine to which, under other circumstances, we would not have submitted for a day.

Spanish troops landed at Vera Cruz in December, and a British naval and French military expedition reached Mexico in January, 1862. Some time after, England and Spain discovered that the wily emperor of France had arranged to establish a Mexican empire under the Archduke Maximilian of Austria. Thereupon, Great Britain and

VIEW IN CHARLESTON FROM THE BELFRY.

Spain withdrew from the compact in May, and France pushed it through alone. The armies of President Juarez were defeated and a provisional government was established in June, 1863. In the month following, an Assembly of Notables, in the city of Mex-

ico, decided on the establishment of a limited hereditary monarchy, with a Roman Catholic prince as emperor. The offer was made to and accepted by Maximilian.

During this year Arizona and Idaho were organized under territorial governments, the former on February 24 and the latter March 3. The free letter carrier system went into effect in July. Five Russian vessels of war, the first that ever visited our ports, arrived in the harbor of New York. On the 1st of October, the officers were publicly welcomed by the city authorities.

At the beginning of the year the market price of gold was 133 ⅜ to 133 ½ ; on the 1st of April, it was 156 ¼ to 156 ¾ ; on the 1st of July 144 ¼ to 144¾ ; and on the 1st of October 140 ⅜ to 142 ¾.

CHAPTER XXVI.

EVENTS OF 1864. THE WAR IN THE WEST AND SOUTH-WEST.

TWO grand campaigns were set on foot in 1864: these are known as Sherman's March to the Sea and Grant's Campaign against Richmond. The numerous operations in other parts of the country were of minor importance, and were all subordinate to these vast movements, which when pushed to a successful conclusion were to end the war. Before entering upon an account of them, I must tell you about a number of interesting occurrences in other parts of the country.

Our government had resolved to prosecute the war on a scale of resistless magnitude. The estimates were made on an army organization of a million men. Supplies were liberally provided, new drafts were ordered, and every possible facility created for the rapid moving of the enormous armies. It was seen that the forces of the Confederacy were growing steadily weaker, and there was no means of filling the scant ranks. It was wise, therefore, to push the war with all the vigor at command.

The arrangements were that the advance "all along the line," should be made in spring, but in the meantime a number of projects were set in motion.

General Sherman was still at Vicksburg. On the 3d of February he set out with a strong force for Jackson and burned what was left of that beautiful town. Dwellings, farms and the country itself were laid waste and fully eight thousand negroes were liberated.

Reaching Meridian at the end of eleven days, Sherman devoted his energies to destroying railways. He says it was "the most complete destruction of railroads ever beheld." The men had learned that simply to bend a rail did not destroy its usefulness, for it could be straightened again. Sherman's raiders, therefore, laid the rails on the piles of blazing ties, and when heated until soft they were twisted out of shape. That being done no power could restore them to their original form. The purpose of this expedition was to injure the communications of the enemy, and to shut out the large supplies of corn that were sent from Mississippi to the confederate armies in the west. The work could not have been more thoroughly done. One hundred and fifty miles of railway, sixty-seven bridges, twenty locomotives, two million bushels of corn and several thousand bales of cotton were destroyed.

Before leaving Vicksburg Sherman had arranged that a strong cavalry force under generals W. S. Smith and Grierson should move down the Ohio and Mobile railway and join him at Meridian. These troops did not start until after the day fixed for their junction with Sherman's army. The confederate General Forrest met them at Okolona and routed them, so that the cavalry were glad to make all haste back to their starting point. Sherman, finding they did not come, returned also to Vicksburg.

A part of the federal plan was that Admiral Farragut should attack Mobile while

the army was moving thither, and that General Thomas should march against Johnston so as to keep him from sending any re-enforcements to the threatened positions. The defeat of Smith upset this plan. Farragut bombarded Fort Powell at the entrance to Mobile harbor, but lost a gun-boat and effected nothing, while Thomas met with no success against Johnston.

The confederates were now in such a favorable position that they took the offensive. Forrest entered western Tennessee and Kentucky, captured Jackson on the 23d of March, Union City on the 24th and Paducah on the 26th. He appeared before Fort Pillow on the eastern shore of the Mississippi on the 12th of April and summoned it to surrender. After two refusals he stormed the works. Most of the garrison consisted of negro troops, the sight of whom so infuriated Forrest's men that they fell upon them with indescribable fierceness. They gave no heed to the offer of surrender, but chased the blacks to the river and shot them down without mercy.

General Banks, who was still in command at New Orleans, was ordered to conduct an expedition into the interior of Louisiana. It was arranged that the army was to march in three columns, and was to be supported by Admiral Porter with a flotilla, which was to force a passage up the Red River. The object was the capture of Shreveport, three hundred and fifty miles above New Orleans, and the seat of the confederate government of Louisiana. At the same place there was an enormous amount of cotton, which tempted the federals.

The first division of the army, numbering ten thousand men, was to march from Vicksburg under General A. J. Smith; the second from New Orleans was to be led by General Banks, and the third from Little Rock was to be under the command of General Steele. In addition to his 10,000 infantry, the last named officer was to have 2,500 cavalry.

General Kirby Smith was the confederate commander of the trans-Mississippi department, and his forces were much less numerous than those arrayed against them. He directed General Dick Taylor (son of Zachary Taylor, formerly president), to do his utmost to block the course of the Red River; and sent generals Price and Marmaduke to harass Steele on his march from Arkansas, while he himself prepared to annoy the invaders.

With a view of delaying the federal gun-boats, Fort de Russy, about fifty miles above the junction of the Red River with the Mississippi, was strengthened. It was carried by assault, however, on the 13th of March, and two days later the twelve gun-boats and thirty transports joined the forces of Franklin at Alexandria. General Lee, with the cavalry of Banks' army, occupied the old French settlement of Natchitoches on the last day of March. On the 6th of April the army marched from that point, with Lee's cavalry in advance, toward Shreveport. Two days later the leading column camped at Pleasant Hill and reached Mansfield on the 8th. Admiral Porter had arrived several days before, at Grand Echore, on the Red River.

All this time the confederate General Taylor was steadily falling back toward the north. He was joined by detachments of Green's cavalry from Texas, who kept up a continuous skirmishing with the federal horsemen. Price's infantry had reached

Shreveport, so that Taylor was much stronger than at the beginning of the campaign. Although he had been ordered to retreat all the way to Shreveport, he determined to give battle. Three miles south of the little town of Mansfield he took up a strong position and a fight followed on the 8th of April.

The battle was similar in some respects to that of San Jacinto, which a quarter of a century before gained the independence of Texas. General Banks' army, like that of

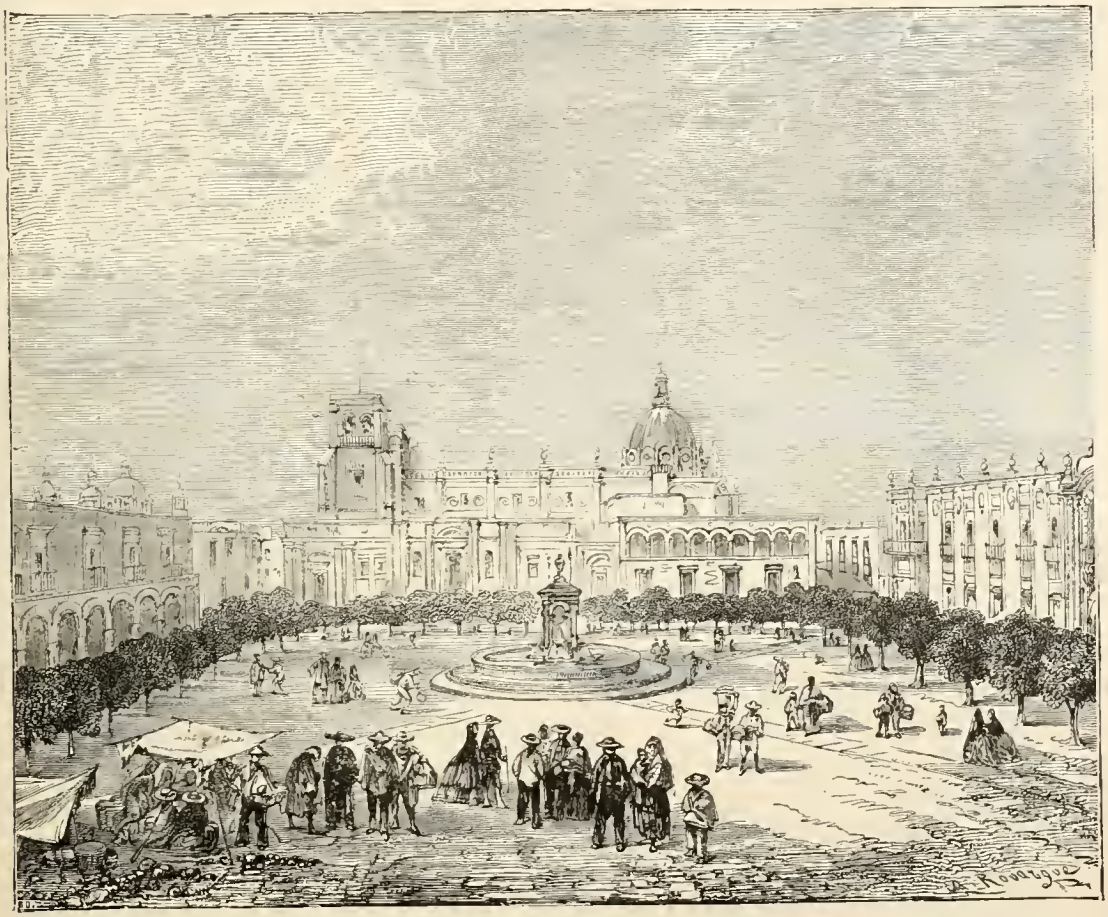
THE EMPEROR MAXIMILIAN.

Santa Anna, was widely scattered and advancing at a leisurely pace without thought of danger. The divisions of the army were encumbered by its vast amount of baggage, so that an inviting chance for attack presented itself.

Green's cavalry had been falling back for several days until close to Mansfield, when they found themselves supported by a powerful column of infantry. They wheeled and charged the union force with fiery energy. Other confederate troops were hurried up

and the federals were driven headlong. They left their artillery behind, intent only on escaping the wrath of the enemy. The Third Division rallied in the rear of the wagon train, but was swept away. Arms and accouterments and every thing that could hinder their flight were flung aside. The rout was complete, and was unchecked until the Nineteenth Corps made a stand. Under the protection of their guns, General Banks fell back to his old camping ground on Pleasant Hill.

The intention of Banks was to stop at this place and await the action of the confederates, but his forces were so broken, and had thrown away so many arms, that it was



A "PLAZA" IN MEXICO.

decided to keep up the retreat. Kirby Smith ordered a vigorous pursuit, but the confederates were already worn out by their severe exertions and their pursuit was languid. They collided with the Nineteenth Corps and the fight was savage and prolonged. The advantage was with the federals, but Banks saw that his only safety lay in further retreat. So he fell back to Grand Echore, where he received the protection of the gun-boats.

You have learned what ill-fortune overtook the land forces, but it was not long

before the fleet found itself in still worse straits. Admiral Porter had gone further up the river, but he came back to Grand Echore on learning of Banks' defeat. The shores of the stream swarmed with sharp-shooters, so that he had to sweep the banks with grape-shot before the gun-boats could advance. One of the boats was blown up by a torpedo, and the confederates captured two of the transports at Grand Echore.

By this time the Red River was so low that Banks decided to fall back with the army to Alexandria. The march began on the afternoon of the 23d of April, the confederates pursuing until the 27th, when the federals reached Alexandria.

Meanwhile, the fleet was caught in such low water above the falls of Alexandria that Admiral Porter gave up all hope of getting it out that season, if indeed he could ever do so at all. The fleet, however, was saved through the ingenuity and skill of Colonel Joseph Bailey, of Wisconsin, acting engineer of the Nineteenth Army Corps. He proposed to build a series of dams across the rocks above the falls, so as to raise the water high enough to float the fleet over. The other engineers ridiculed the plan, but Colonel Bailey went to work at the request of Porter, who gave him 3,000 men with several hundred wagons.

Now, you know that the United States is not a nation of soldiers. We have our regular army and our military academy, but our people are engaged in other pursuits, and the soldier element is but a small fraction of the whole. When the war broke out every trade and profession was represented in the ranks, except that of war itself, and these intelligent soldiers proved the best of pupils in that.

Thus it was that an American colonel was pretty sure to find among his soldiers men who knew how to run locomotives, build railways, shoe horses, construct bridges, put up houses, chop down trees, make shoes, cut out and put together suits of clothing, and in fact do every thing within the range of human attainment. General Banks had within his army large numbers of experts in the trades that were now called into service. The soldiers from Maine felled the trees and looked after the "lumbering" branch; quarries were opened; flat boats were made to bring down stone from above; the steam-mills in the neighborhood were torn down for material, and every body worked with zeal.

The task was great, indeed, for the falls were a mile long, and it was necessary to raise the water high enough to float the fleet through them all. In a little more than a week the work was nearly done. On the 9th of May two of the coal barges that had been sunk at the end of a tree-dam were swept away by the pressure of the blocked waters. Admiral Porter ordered four of the gun-boats to try the passage. The *Lexington* was the first to do so. Porter thus describes the scene: "She entered the gap with a full head of steam on, pitched down the roaring current, made two or three spasmodic rolls, hung for a moment on the rocks below, was then swept into deep water by the currents, and rounded to safely into the bank."

The other three boats went through without harm, and were loudly cheered by the soldiers on the banks. The men set to work then and repaired the dam. A broad gap was left in it and a series of wing-dams was built on the upper falls. The work was finished in three days, and all the vessels passed safely through into the smooth water below the falls. The exploit of Colonel Bailey was a brilliant success.

Banks, with most of his forces, was now at Alexandria. He knew he was still in danger, and continued his retreat, first burning Alexandria. General Steele, on his march from Little Rock, learned on reaching Camden of Banks' failure, and turned back with Kirby Smith in pursuit. There was some sharp fighting, but Steele reached Little Rock in safety. Banks' expedition was one of the worst failures of the war. It was denounced by many as a gigantic cotton speculation. An inquiry was made into the cause of the disaster, and the majority of the court condemned the whole plan.

In the month of February, a part of the force before Charleston was sent on an expedition into Florida. General Gillmore has said that his object was to get an outlet for cotton, timber, etc., to cut off one of the enemy's sources of commissary supplies, to obtain colored recruits, and to do what he could in the way of bringing Florida back into the Union.

The troops landed with little opposition at Jacksonville, which had been burned by the federals the year before. General Finnegan, the confederate commander, retreated to Lake City on the Florida Central railway. General Gillmore went back to Charleston, leaving General Seymour with orders to keep a strictly defensive attitude. He was rash enough, however, to march against Lake City. He attacked Finnegan in a swamp fifteen miles from the town, but was driven back with great loss and forced to retreat behind St. Mary's River. Nothing therefore was left for the federals except to hold the coast.

Things went wrong in North Carolina. The confederate General Pickett threatened the federals at Newbern early in February, and captured part of a Vermont regiment guarding the railway between Newbern and Beaufort. Plymouth, on the south bank of the Roanoke, garrisoned by 2,400 union soldiers, after a severe fight, was captured by a superior force. During the battle a confederate steam-ram gave the assailants much help by passing the fort at the mouth of the river, sinking one of the union gun-boats, driving off the other and preventing the sending of any re-enforcements to the garrison. In the latter part of April the federals abandoned Washington on the Tar River, first burning the beautiful town, an act of barbarism which was denounced by General T. N. Palmer, the commander of the district.

You remember that General Rosecrans, having failed to meet the expectations of his government, had been removed from his command in the south-west. His new department was in Missouri. He had not been there long when he became convinced that a confederate invasion of that section was likely to take place, and he asked the authorities at Washington to increase the forces under his command without delay.

A revolt took place in western Missouri in July, but it was soon put down. The occurrence led Kirby Smith to believe that if he should enter the territory with a large force the people would flock to his support. Not many of his officers agreed with him, but all the same he carried out his plan. In the latter part of September he entered the state from Arkansas with an army of 15,000 men, consisting mainly of cavalry.

Smith had good reason to look for success, for Rosecrans had sent away most of his troops to help Sherman in his important operations, and what was left consisted mainly of a few regiments of undisciplined militia. The federals soon received a re-enforcement

of a regiment of veterans under General A. J. Smith. These were sent to strengthen the line of defense covering St. Louis and the railways leading thither. Other troops were gathered at Springfield, and the incoming volunteers from Illinois and Arkansas were disposed in the best manner possible to meet the expected attack.

The plan of the invasion, as you have been told, was Kirby Smith's, but the principal commanders were Price and Shelby. The former, when he entered southern Missouri, was confident that he would soon subjugate the state. He attacked Pilot Knob on the 27th of September and was defeated. This surprised the confederate leader to that extent that he paused to consider what step to take, and during the pause Rosecrans did his utmost to strengthen the defenses of St. Louis, and to suppress the guerrillas that were encouraged to rise by the coming of the confederates.

Price decided to march against Jefferson City, the capital, and arrived in front of it on the 7th of October. He found that a line of intrenchments had been thrown up, and that a strong force was awaiting him. He concluded not to attack, and retreated toward the west. His slowness had given the federals such time to rally that Price saw his only safety lay in flight. General Pleasanton and his cavalry harassed his rear, and keeping along the southern bank of the Missouri, Price finally turned south into Arkansas. On the 25th of October, the pursuing cavalry attacked his rear guard on the banks of the Little Osage, and after a short fight captured eight guns and a thousand prisoners, among whom were generals Marmaduke and Cabell. Three days later, Price was overtaken again and a desperate battle followed. The confederates were routed and fled into Arkansas.

Kirby Smith had failed in his design. Clearly the majority of the people in Missouri did not favor the Southern Confederacy. The reception there was very much like that of Lee in Maryland. It may have been that the western people saw that the south must soon succumb and they preferred to be on the winning side.

The result of the campaign was an injury to the military fame of Kirby Smith and a benefit to that of Rosecrans. The latter had handled his forces skillfully, and had done an immense service to the cause of the Union. It may be said that Missouri was at last relieved of all danger, and the power of the Confederacy west of the Mississippi was broken beyond all recovery.

THE CITY OF VERA CRUZ, MEXICO. (*See page 232.*)

CHAPTER XXVII.

EVENTS OF 1864. THE WAR ON THE COAST AND ON THE SEA.

MOBILE was one of the most valuable ports of the Confederacy. Despite the vigilance of the union fleet, the blockade runners occasionally went in and out and several iron-clads and armed vessels were built there by the confederates, who became so bold that they made threats of raising the blockade. Admiral Farragut reconnoitered the approaches to the city, and told his government that if he were given a few iron-clads and some troops he would take possession of the bay. During the latter part of July, his squadron was re-enforced by four monitors, and some land troops under General Granger were promised him.

The entrance to Mobile harbor was commanded on the left by Fort Gaines and on the right by Fort Morgan, while a confederate fleet and the huge ram *Tennessee* lay inside. Farragut attacked Fort Morgan on the 5th of August. The iron-clads opened fire, while the wooden vessels, lashed together in couples so as to give mutual help in case of accident, moved by the forts and into the narrower channel, by which the broader part of the bay is reached. In order to direct the movements of the fleet, the brave admiral mounted to the maintop of his flag-ship *Hartford*, and lashed himself to the rigging.

The fort at first concentrated its fire on the *Brooklyn*, which was accidentally checked so as to embarrass those behind. Not long after, the monitor *Tecumseh* struck a torpedo, and went down, carrying most of her crew with her. I must tell you of an affecting accident connected with the loss of this vessel.

The *Tecumseh* was leading the fleet and had fired the first gun of the battle. After she had passed Fort Morgan a row of buoys was seen close under her bow. Captain Craven gave the *Tecumseh* full speed and tried to pass between two of them, but a torpedo exploded directly under the turret, tearing an enormous hole in the bottom of the vessel. Only those who were on deck and one man from the turret escaped. The latter was the pilot. He related that in the fierce struggle to get out, he and Captain Craven leaped at the same moment to the foot of the narrow ladder leading up to the scuttle in the top of the turret. Both could not go up together, and stepping back, Captain Craven said, "After you, sir."

The pilot by a desperate effort got out just as the waters poured in, while Captain Craven went down with the rest, leaving behind an example of courteous heroism never surpassed.

Farragut poured such a fire into the works on shore that the men were soon driven from their guns and the ships went by with little damage. It looked as if the bay was won, when the terrible *Tennessee* charged down at full speed upon the federal fleet. She rushed straight for the *Hartford*, which, however, dodged her blow. The

three gun-boats in the company of the iron ram were soon disposed of, but the *Tennessee* raged like a lion beset by wolves. She was handled by Admiral Franklin Buchanan (who had charge of the *Merrimac* the first day at Hampton Roads), and he showed great skill and bravery. The fight was one of the fiercest of its kind that ever took place. The federal vessels would back off and then steam into her at full speed. While this terrific ramming was going on from every quarter she was continually hammered by federal broadsides. The blows of the iron-clads were so prodigious that the crew of the *Tennessee* were knocked off their feet again and again, and could hardly work the guns.

It looked for a time as if the *Tennessee* was proof against the enormous balls, which, striking her sides, shot up into the air for hundreds of feet and fell harmless into the water, just as they did with the *Merrimac* when the *Cumberland* fired into her. But nothing could withstand the continual pounding of cannon shot and rams. Buchanan was badly wounded and a number of his crew were killed. The smoke-stack of the *Tennessee* was carried away, the steering-chains broken, most of the port shutters jammed, and the craft became unmanageable.

One of the federal iron-clads backed off, and then under full steam was making for the disabled *Tennessee* when she showed the white flag. The federal iron-clad instantly reversed her engines.

Two days after, Fort Gaines was taken, and on the 23d of the month Fort Morgan lowered its flag. The land force that accompanied Admiral Farragut aided him much by rendering the several positions untenable. Thus the port of Mobile was sealed up, and nothing more was heard about breaking the blockade.

Despite the strictness of the naval investment, however, a number of confederate vessels managed to run in and out of the different ports, bringing to the Confederacy much needed arms and medical stores. Several privateers did great injury to the northern commerce. During the year 1864 three new ones appeared—the *Tallahassee*, *Olustee* and *Chickamauga*. The first cruised off the coasts of the northern states in August, and destroyed thirty-three vessels in ten days. The other two also burned much shipping.

On the 29th of September the steamer *Roanoke*, running between New York and Havana, was captured by Lieutenant Braine, a confederate, with a band of men that at Havana had gone on board as passengers. The officers and crew were overpowered and the *Roanoke* was run to Bermuda, where a crew was soon secured. The privateer captured a brig laden with coal and provisions, but the crew complained to the British authorities at Bermuda, and the confederates were arrested as pirates. On their trial they were discharged, and in the correspondence that took place between the British and American governments Earl Russell said that inasmuch as Lieutenant Braine had a regular commission from the confederate government, whose belligerent rights had been acknowledged by Great Britain, that officer was justified in what he did.

When the confederates found their harbors blocked by the union war vessels, they resorted to every means they could think of to drive them away.

The little boats that were made to run under the water were called "Davids," in allusion to the scriptural account of David and Goliath, and they were often more

dangerous to the crew than to the union vessels. There is to-day in the Brooklyn Navy Yard a small submarine torpedo boat, which has a wonderful history. It is made of boiler iron, shaped like a cigar, being nearly round and closed over the top. It is about thirty-five feet long, six or seven feet broad, and could carry a crew of nine men, eight of whom turned the shaft of the propeller screw by hand, while the ninth steered the boat. It could be sunk to any depth by letting water into a tank and could be raised to the surface again by pumping it out.

With the crew working hard under water, it could reach a speed of about four knots an hour. The torpedo which she carried consisted of about sixty pounds of powder,

FORT PILLOW.

and was fastened to a long spar that could be run out from the bows against the side of an enemy's vessel, or it could drag a floating torpedo after it. In the latter case it was intended that on approaching a vessel, the boat would sink and pass under her, while the floating torpedo would strike the side and explode. The boat could stay under water a half hour before it was necessary to come up for fresh air.

Soon after this curious craft was finished, Lieutenant Paine, of the confederate navy, with eight volunteers, set out to attack the union fleet off Charleston. While they were getting ready, the swell of a passing steamer caused the craft to overturn, and all except the lieutenant, who was standing in the open hatchway, were drowned.

It was raised a few days later, and another crew volunteered to go out in it.

While moving smoothly along, just opposite Fort Sumter, it suddenly overturned again and went to the bottom, all hands drowning except Paine and two others.

You would think that the confederates had had enough of the treacherous craft, but not so. It was raised once more, and Mr. Aunley, one of the builders of the boat, insisted on taking a trip in it. It started up Cooper River. Reaching deep water, it was submerged, and, from some unknown cause, became unmanageable. It was impossible to force it to the surface, and the nine men were drowned.

FLIGHT OF NEGROES FROM FORT PILLOW.

But once again the boat crowded with dead men was raised. Lieutenant Paine by this time seems to have had enough of it, but there were other daring spirits ready to risk their lives. On the night of February 17, 1864, Lieutenant Dixon, of Mobile, gathered a crew of eight men, and set out to attack the *Housatonic*, a heavily armed member of the blockading fleet.

That night, acting master J. K. Crosby, of the *Housatonic*, who was officer of the deck, caught sight of a dark object in the water about a hundred yards away. It looked like the back of some huge fish that was moving very slowly. He watched it for a moment, and then observing that it was approaching, he hailed, but got no answer. By this time the officer knew that something was wrong, and gave the alarm.

The "David" moved so slowly that the cable was slipped, the engines started, and the crew called to quarters. The odd looking craft was so low in the water that the guns of the *Housatonic* could not be depressed enough to strike it, though a shower of rifle balls was rained against the iron sides. These produced no effect, and before the steamer could get under way, the torpedo was driven against her side and exploded.

The *Housatonic* keeled over to port and went down stern foremost. The *Canandaigua* lay a short distance off, and rescued a part of the crew, while the rest took refuge in the rigging, the upper part of which was above the water. Nothing more was seen of the "David," and it was supposed that it had got away during the confusion, and in the darkness. Meanwhile, the anxious confederates in Charleston heard nothing of Lieutenant Dixon and his "David." He did not come back, and his fate remained a mystery until after the war, when a diver was sent down to explore the wreck of the *Housatonic*. He found the "David," with its crew, jammed into the hole that had been torn by the torpedo into the side of the steamer. The suction of the in-rushing water had drawn the torpedo boat into the wound it had inflicted, and there it stuck, destroying for the fourth time its own crew.

During this year, three of the confederate cruisers—the *Alabama*, the *Georgia*, and the *Florida*—were destroyed or captured. Since the first named was the most famous of all the confederate privateers and inflicted by far the greatest amount of damage on Northern shipping, it will be interesting to give more particulars of her career.

The *Alabama* was built by the famous shipbuilders of Birkenhead for the confederate government, and launched May 15, 1862. She was a bark-rigged wooden propeller of 1040 tons register; length of keel, 210 feet; length over all, 220; beam, 32; depth, 17. She had two horizontal engines, each of 300 horse-power, and she had a stowage for 350 tons of coal. All her standing rigging was of wire. On the double wheel placed just before the mizzen-mast was inscribed the motto: "*Aide-toi, et Dieu t' aidera.*" The bridge was in the center, just before the funnel. She carried five boats: cutter and launch amidships, gig and whale-boat between the main-mast and mizzen-mast, and a dingey astern. The main deck was pierced for twelve guns. Her berth-deck was capable of accommodating 120 men.

When the *Alabama* was finished, she was sent on a pretended trial trip. She kept straight ahead to the island of Terceira, one of the Azores, where a transport was awaiting her with war material. She was there joined by Captain Raphael Semmes with his officers, who had gone thither on the British steamer *Bahama*.

On Sunday morning, August 24, the transfer of armament was completed, and the *Alabama* was put in commission by authority of the confederate states government. Eighty men came from different ships, and to these were soon added all that were needed. Then the *Alabama* started upon a career of destruction that lasted twenty-two months.

The steamer was made for speed rather than for battle. It took only fifteen minutes to hoist her propeller, when she could go through every evolution under sail. It required less time to lower her propeller; her speed was from ten to twelve knots, and with sails and screw it reached fifteen knots. Her armament of eight guns consisted of one Blakely hundred-pounder rifled gun, pivoted forward; one eight-inch solid shot gun, pivoted abaft the main-mast; and six thirty-two pounders in broadside. The crew numbered one hundred and twenty men and twenty-four officers.

On the eleventh day after going into commission, the *Alabama* captured her first prize, within a hundred miles of where she hoisted her flag. She headed for Sandy Hook, but the weather was so bad she ran down to the Windward Islands and entered the Caribbean Sea. Then sailing into the Gulf of Mexico, she attacked and sunk the *Hatteras*, a steamer of much lighter armament. The crew were paroled at Kingston, Jamaica, and the *Alabama*, after making some needed repairs, headed for the South Atlantic.

It is not worth while to give a full account of the cruise of the *Alabama*, for there was a sameness about her war upon unarmed merchantmen. The United States put forth every effort to capture or destroy her, but for a long time she eluded all the cruisers that pursued her.

On Sunday, the 12th of July, 1864, the *Kearsarge*, Captain John A. Winslow, was at anchor off Flushing, Holland. Captain Winslow then made known to his crew that he had received a telegram from W. L. Dayton, the American minister to France, making known that the *Alabama* had arrived the day before at Cherbourg, France. The crew received the news with cheers: they had been looking a long time for the *Alabama*, and there was a prospect at last of meeting her.

The next day the *Kearsarge* stopped at Dover for dispatches and the day following she appeared off Cherbourg and caught sight of the *Alabama* within the breakwater, with the confederate flag flying. You may be sure that the cruiser was studied with deep interest by officers and crew as they steamed toward her.

After waiting and watching for some days so that the *Alabama* should not slip away, Captain Winslow received a copy of a note written by Captain Semmes to the effect that it was his intention to fight the *Kearsarge* as soon as he could make arrangements, and he hoped the *Kearsarge* would not go away without giving him a chance for a fight. Captain Winslow replied that he had come to Cherbourg to fight, and he had no thought of leaving without an engagement.

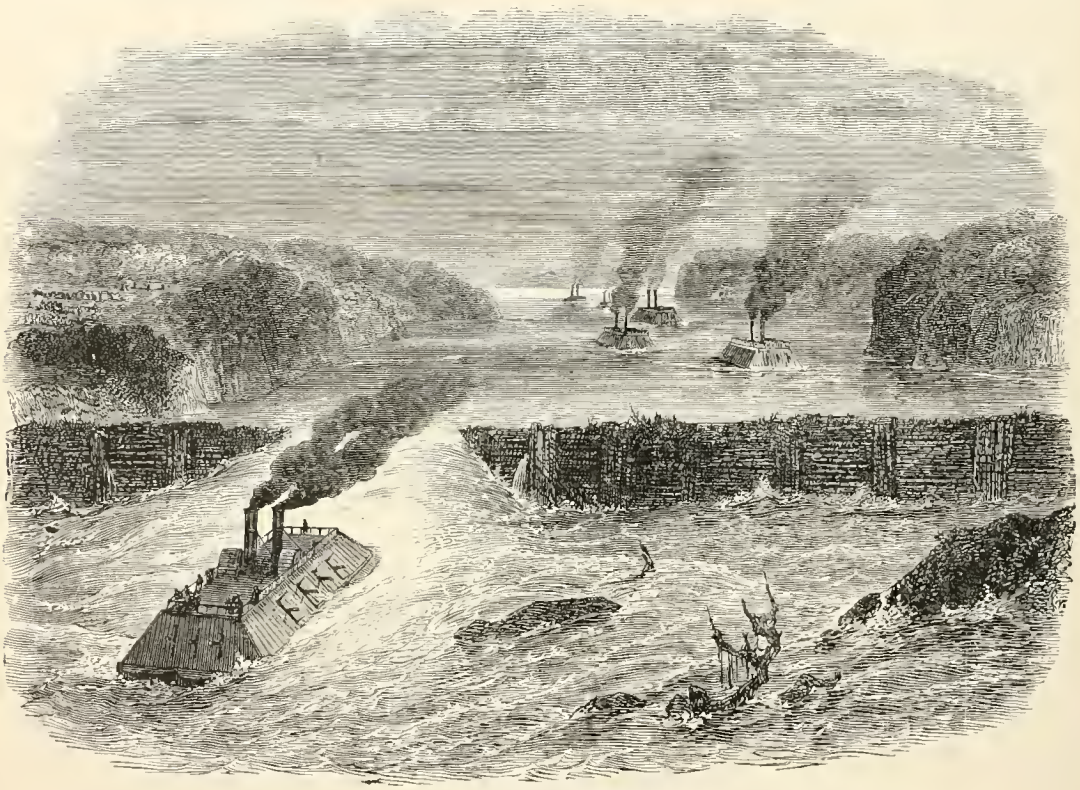
Captain Winslow discussed with his officers the coming battle. He thought the two ships would engage on parallel lines, and in case the *Alabama* was defeated, she would seek neutral waters. It was necessary, therefore, not to begin the fight until several miles from shore. It was resolved not to surrender, and if need be, to go down with colors flying.

Captain Semmes spent several days in making thorough preparations. He was confident of winning, but neglected no precaution. Nor did Captain Winslow. Between ten and eleven o'clock on Sunday the *Alabama* appeared, and the *Kearsarge* immediately cleared for action. Having done so, she steamed several miles from shore, so as to

draw the *Alabama* so far away that there would be no violation of the law of nations, which would not permit such a combat within three miles of land. It looked for a time as though the *Kearsarge* was running away from the *Alabama*.

Less than seven miles from shore, however, the *Kearsarge* turned and made for the *Alabama*. The latter sheered and presented her starboard battery. The *Kearsarge* continued to advance, receiving three broadsides, which produced little effect. Captain Winslow wished to get within short range, while Semmes preferred to fight at long range. At nine hundred yards, the *Kearsarge*, fearing the effects of another broadside, rounded to and fired with her starboard battery.

The battle was now fairly opened and it lasted for a little more than an hour. The



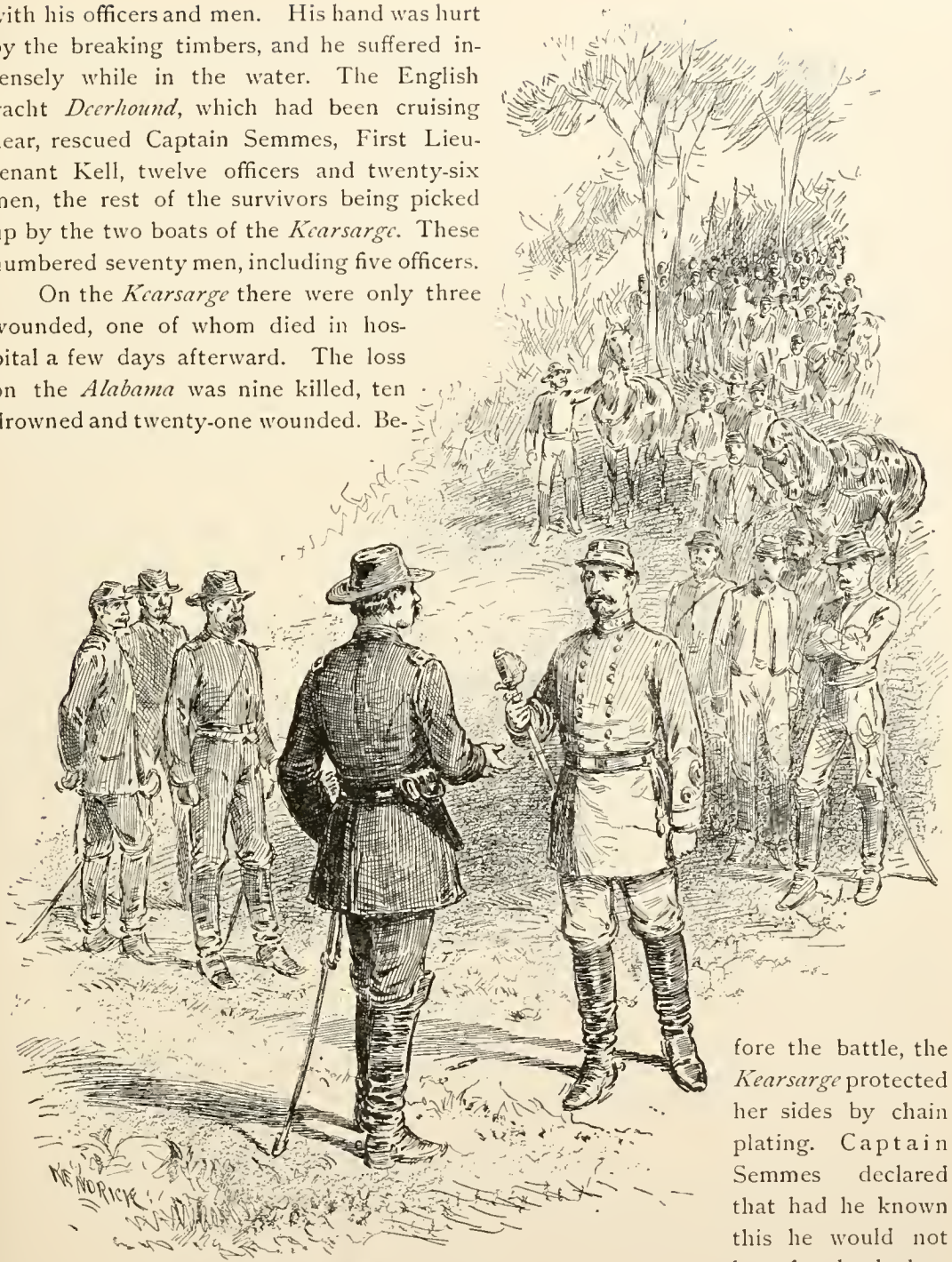
BAILEY'S DAM ON THE RED RIVER.

fire of the *Kearsarge* was the more accurate, and soon the *Alabama* suffered severely. The two vessels kept steaming around a common center, so that they moved in a huge circle, being from a quarter to half a mile apart.

The *Kearsarge* had completed her seventh circuit and was entering upon her eighth, when the *Alabama*, aware that she could not float much longer, headed for the French waters. The *Kearsarge* followed close and with a few well directed shots stopped her career forever. The *Alabama* began to settle and her colors were struck, a white flag appearing over the stern, while her ensign was half masted, union down. Just before the cruiser sank, Captain Semmes dropped his sword into the sea and jumped overboard

with his officers and men. His hand was hurt by the breaking timbers, and he suffered intensely while in the water. The English yacht *Deerhound*, which had been cruising near, rescued Captain Semmes, First Lieutenant Kell, twelve officers and twenty-six men, the rest of the survivors being picked up by the two boats of the *Kearsarge*. These numbered seventy men, including five officers.

On the *Kearsarge* there were only three wounded, one of whom died in hospital a few days afterward. The loss on the *Alabama* was nine killed, ten drowned and twenty-one wounded. Before the battle, the *Kearsarge* protected her sides by chain plating. Captain Semmes declared that had he known this he would not have fought the battle, while it has been claimed by the officers of the union ship who analyzed the firing, that the result would



CAPTURE OF GENERAL MORGAN.

have been the same without the armor. The battery of the *Kearsarge* consisted of seven guns: two eleven inch pivots, smooth bore, one twenty-eight pound rifle, and four light thirty-two pounders.

The officers of the respective vessels will probably never agree as to the particulars of the battle, but you have been told enough of the main facts. More than fifteen thousand spectators watched the fight from the heights of Cherbourg, the breakwater and rigging of men-of-war. The *Alabama* went down about four and a half miles from the breakwater, in forty-five fathoms of water.

The other privateer, the *Georgia*, was seized by the United States steamer *Niagara* off the coast of Portugal. She had no armament on board, but she was taken as a lawful prize, and sent to the United States for adjudication.

The *Florida* was captured illegally. While she was lying in the neutral port of Bahia, Brazil, she was attacked October 7, by the *Wachuset*. She was taken into Hampton Roads the following month, and there, while awaiting the decision on the legality of her capture, she was run into by a steam transport and sunk. Some claimed that the collision was accidental, and some that it was not.

The iron-clad *Albemarle* was one of the most formidable vessels ever in the service of the Confederacy. She guarded the mouth of the Roanoke and thus prevented any attack on Plymouth, North Carolina, which had been taken from the federals in April, 1864. Not only that, but the *Albemarle* had defeated the union fleet in two furious naval actions, and was so powerful indeed that there was danger that she would interfere with General Grant's campaign against Richmond.

Lieutenant Cushing, a daring young officer of the United States navy, volunteered to make the attempt to destroy the *Albemarle*—an offer which was accepted, though it did not seem to offer one chance of success in a thousand. He was provided with a small steam-launch, a spar-torpedo, and a crew of thirteen, selected from the sailors and marines, among whom were Paymaster Swan of the *Otsego* and Acting-master's Mate Woodman, of the *Commodore Hull.*

The *Albemarle* was moored at the Plymouth wharf some seven or eight miles up the Roanoke, and, in order to reach her, it was necessary to pass the pickets along shore. Lieutenant Cushing started on his perilous enterprise on the night of October 27, 1864.

One of the union vessels, the *Southfield*, had been partially sunk in the river about a mile below Plymouth wharf, during one of the naval battles, and since the confederates were in possession of the wreck, it looked impossible for the launch to get by without being seen.

The channel of the Roanoke has an average width of about two hundred yards, and for the whole eight miles of the course, both banks were lined with pickets. As a matter of course, the night on which the venture was made was cloudy and dark. The launch moved slowly, every man on the watch. Only now and then was a whispered word spoken. It would seem impossible, as I have said, to escape discovery, but not a picket detected the small boat, stealing like a thief in the night along the winding channel, and passing within fifty feet of the wreck of the *Southfield.*

Gliding around the last bend in the river below Plymouth, a fire was observed on shore close to the iron-clad. This was of great help to Cushing and his comrades, for the enormous mass of the *Albemarle* was plainly seen against the background of flame. The launch stopped, and hurried and silent preparations were made for the attack.

The torpedo consisted of sixty pounds of powder in a copper cylindrical case and held loosely in a "scoop" at the end of the torpedo-spar. When this was lowered, a sharp pull at the line tied to the torpedo would throw it forward and downward. Then by means of a second line it could be exploded.

Every thing was ready, the launch dashed at the highest speed straight for the iron-clad. There were four lookouts pacing back and forth on the deck, their forms plainly seen by the aid of the fire beyond. The instant the launch burst from the gloom into view, one of the sentries called out:

"Boat ahoy, there!"

Receiving no reply, the sentries sprang their rattles and began firing their carbines, calling out:

"What boat is that?"

In a twinkling the deck of the ram was fully manned and their rapid fire caused the death of several men on the launch, which never stopped. A howitzer fired from the latter caused a flurry on the ram and made the fire less effective. When close to the *Albemarle*, Cushing saw that it was protected by an outlying boom of logs placed thirty feet from its sides. This was unexpected, but without hesitation he charged against the boom, broke through, and amid a storm of bullets and grenades, reached the iron-clad. Nearly half the crew of the launch had been struck, three balls having passed through the clothing of Cushing; but with wonderful presence of mind he lowered the torpedo spar and shoved in under the sheathing of the monster abreast her port-quarter. This, as you will observe, was one of the vulnerable spots of the *Albemarle*, which could laugh at the broadsides of a whole fleet.

At this moment, Paymaster Swan and another man were shot beside Cushing, who, with the same amazing coolness he had shown from the first, gave a sharp pull at the other line and exploded the torpedo.

The recoil was prodigious, throwing the launch violently back and raising such a column of water that when it descended into the boat it swamped it. An officer on the *Albemarle* shouted twice to Cushing to surrender, but the brave officer told him to look after his own ship, and, calling to those of his men who were alive to save themselves, he threw aside his coat, kicked off his shoes, leaped overboard and swam toward the middle of the river.

The escape of Cushing was marvelous. His clothing was pierced several times, and the bullets continued to fly about his head as he swam desperately out in the darkness. A half-dozen men, most of them wounded, stayed in the launch and were made prisoners. Master's-mate Woodman and William Hoftman, a sailor, sprang into the water at the same time with Cushing, all taking different directions. Hoftman was a fine swimmer, and, reaching the shore some distance below, made his way through the enemy's line to the mouth of the river and escaped.

Cushing swam steadily down stream for half a mile, when hearing a slight splashing near him he swam to it, and found Woodman, who was so exhausted that he could only speak in a whisper and immediately sunk. Cushing grasped him, though almost worn out himself. He was pulled under several times while doing what he could to help his friend. Woodman finally sunk and came up no more. He was probably suffering from a wound or a severe chill.

Hardly able to keep his own head above water, and not knowing in which direction the shore lay, Cushing was about to succumb, when to his delight his feet touched the oozy bottom of the river. He struggled ashore, where, falling down among the reeds and half covered with water, he lay a couple of hours unable to move.

When it began to grow light the lieutenant struggled to his feet, and, knowing that he would be discovered if he stayed where he was, he crawled into a swamp near by and lay down under some brush, beside a path. A few minutes later two officers walked past and were talking about the sinking of the *Albemarle*. Cushing's heart was thrilled, though he felt some doubt, for he did not think he had got close enough to the iron-clad to make the torpedo effective, and he was not able to catch much of the conversation of the officers.

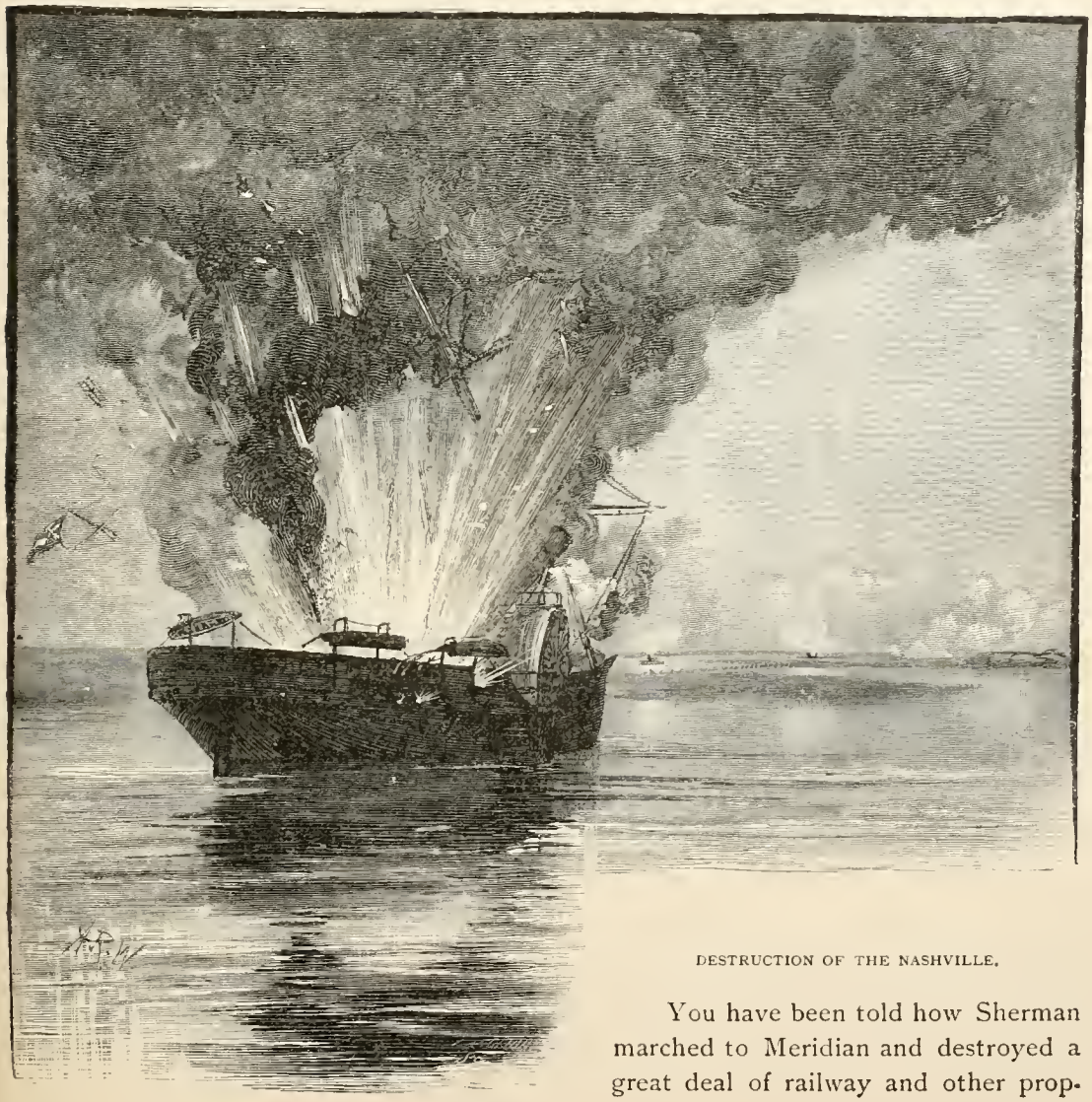
The lieutenant, however, remained where he was for several hours, until feeling stronger he pushed further into the swamp. Seeing a hut, he waited until a negro came out, when he made himself known, and asked him to go to Plymouth and find out whether the *Albemarle* had been injured. At the end of several hours the negro came back with food for the fugitive and the glorious news that the *Albemarle* lay at the bottom of the river. It was afterward learned that when the torpedo exploded, it blew a hole five feet in diameter in the side of the iron-clad, through which the water poured like a mill-race, speedily sinking the vessel.

Cushing stayed with the negro until near night, when he crossed another swamp, and after a laborious tramp through brush, mud and water, found an old skiff on the bank of a small creek. Seating himself in this he paddled slowly down the narrow stream until he entered the mouth of the river where the union fleet lay. A little before midnight he was taken on board the *Valley City*, having performed a task beyond the power of the whole fleet.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

EVENTS OF 1864. SHERMAN'S MARCH TO ATLANTA.

IN giving an account of the chief operations along the coast and on the sea we have been carried beyond other and more important campaigns to which we must now give attention.



DESTRUCTION OF THE NASHVILLE.

You have been told how Sherman marched to Meridian and destroyed a great deal of railway and other prop-

erty belonging to the confederates. Grant now being commander of all the union armies arranged for the campaigns already mentioned—the advance against Richmond and the march of Sherman to Atlanta. Sherman had command of the three armies of the Cumberland, Tennessee and Ohio; the first being under General Thomas, the second under General McPherson, and the third under General Schofield.

The confederate generals were Hardee, Hood and Polk, acting under Joseph E. Johnston. The latter were less in numbers than the federal forces, but they were veterans of many battles, and were the equal of the soldiers of the army of Northern Virginia under Lee.

The success of General U. S. Grant was brilliant in nearly every effort he made. The rank of lieutenant-general (previously held only by Washington and Scott) was revived and bestowed upon him. President Lincoln handed him the commission on the 19th of March, 1864. Shortly after receiving it Grant went to Nashville and held a long consultation with Sherman. The plan of the campaign was sketched out by Grant, after which he went back to Washington to carry out his part. His confidence in Sherman was perfect, and he left him without any instructions except to go ahead and do in his own way what it had been decided to do.

Sherman was a thorough soldier and he took time to perfect all his preparations. Supplies were sent to Chattanooga from the depots at Nashville, and these two cities were made the bases of the army that was soon to set out on its famous march. For some time partial rations had been furnished to the people of Tennessee, but these were now stopped. Orders were issued that the railways should be given up entirely to the military service. By the early part of May about 100,000 men and 254 guns had been collected in and about Chattanooga.

Now you may know that for many years Georgia has been one of the wealthiest and most prosperous states in the South. The mountainous region in the north-west abounds in iron ore, which had been of great value to the confederates. At Etowah, at Rome, and especially at Alanta, were immense iron works. If these could be captured it would be an incalculable injury to the southern cause. Besides, Atlanta during the few preceding years had become the center of railway communication and trade between the western states and those on the Atlantic and the Gulf of Mexico. The principal railways had their machine shops there and the confederate government had several manufactories of arms, shot and shell, gun carriages and military clothing. You may be sure, therefore, that when it became known that Sherman was making ready to march against it, the greatest alarm prevailed.

General Johnston gave up the plan of invading Tennessee and Kentucky, and decided to dispute at every point possible the advance of Sherman upon Atlanta. He did not wish to bring on a general engagement until he had great advantage and the union army was far from its base of operations. The Richmond authorities did not like the plan, which looked like throwing away many strong positions that might be held, or at least where a stubborn resistance could be made. Johnston, however, stuck to his policy.

Sherman began his march from Chattanooga on the 7th of May. At that time,

Johnston's army was drawn up on a range of hills cut through by a pass known as the Buzzards' Roost, and leading to Dalton and Resaca. The three union armies were at different points in front, General Schofield being at the other end of the pass. Johnston was so strongly fortified that Sherman was convinced that a direct attack would be useless. He therefore sent McPherson round by Snake Creek Gap nearly twenty miles to the south-west, to threaten the rear of the enemy, while the rest of the army advanced upon the front. Tunnel Hill, directly in advance of Johnston, was occupied by General Thomas, and two days later one of the lower ridges of the confederate position was carried, but an attempt to seize the crest was defeated, with severe loss to the assailants.

Meanwhile McPherson had reached Snake Creek Gap. After surprising a brigade of cavalry, he advanced upon Resaca. It was found too strongly fortified, however, to attack, and afraid of a flank movement against himself, McPherson withdrew to the Gap and took a strong position.

Sherman was satisfied from what had taken place that powerful as was the position of Johnston, it could be turned. He set about doing so. His whole army passed through Snake Creek Gap on the 12th of May, and the next day McPherson, preceded by Kilpatrick's cavalry, marched toward Resaca. In a brisk fight that followed, Kilpatrick was badly wounded, but his cavalry pushed on and drove the confederates within their fortifications.

Johnston had withdrawn from Dalton on the night of the 12th and the place was occupied the following day by General Howard. Johnston rapidly moved his army to Resaca, and Sherman now found himself in front of a strong line of intrenchments in a bend of the Oostenaula River, on which stands Resaca.

Sherman waited till his whole army had arrived in front of the intrenchments, when he prepared to reduce them. A division of infantry and cavalry were sent to cross the river below Resaca and to cut the railway between that town and Kingston to the south, while the main army made ready to close around the fortified position. The federals threw up strong works, and under cover of them made several attacks upon the confederate positions. The fighting was desperate, but the assailants could not carry the position in front.

The flank movements were more successful. McPherson threatened to cut off Johnston from the bridges over the Oostenaula, and the union cavalry reached the railways in the rear. Johnston saw that he must continue his retreat. On the night of May 15, he crossed the river and fell back to Etowah, forty miles south of Resaca.

Sherman lost no time in following. The division of Jefferson C. Davis veered to the south-west and captured Rome, while the rest of the army pursued the confederates. The latter crossing to the southern side of the Etowah took position in the Allatoona pass of the Etowah mountains.

You can see how serious was the position of Sherman. He had penetrated into a hostile country, where his enemies were swarming on every side. He was a hundred miles from his starting point, with a large force under brilliant leadership in his front. A little over-sight on the part of the union commander would bring fatal disaster; but Sherman was watchful against every form of danger.

The army marched in three columns, but they kept within supporting distance, and the flanks were guarded by cavalry. Whenever there was cause to think Johnston was preparing for a demonstration, the divisions of the federal army were brought together. Thus it came about that when Johnston tried to crush the union center just before crossing the Etowah, he was badly defeated, and was glad to reach the other side the river, where he could throw up intrenchments.

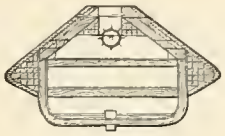
THE SWAMP ANGEL.

The armies now watched each other for several days, but Sherman was not the one to remain idle. On the 23d of May he crossed the Etowah near Kingston and moved toward Dallas. The country was wild and rugged and there were many skirmishes with confederate detachments. The two armies intrenched themselves, and five days later Johnston fell upon McPherson with great fury, but was driven back with severe loss.

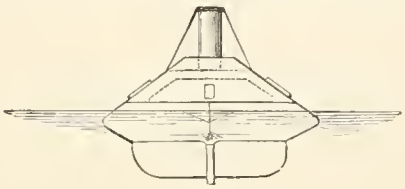
Once more Sherman outflanked Johnston, his forces entering the east and west ends of Allatoona pass at the same hour. The confederate army fell back on the 4th of

June, and the way was left open to Ackworth. Here Sherman received a re-enforcement, and establishing a fortified position in his rear at the Allatoona pass, he moved on. Johnston had intrenched his army along a rugged line of mountainous hills, covered by thick chestnut forests.

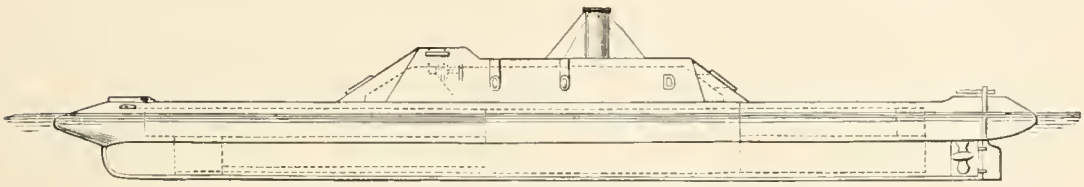
After carefully reconnoitering the position, Sherman attacked the weakest part of the line. Severe fighting followed, during which, on the 14th of June, General Leonidas Polk, a bishop in the Episcopal church of Louisiana, was killed by a cannon ball, which



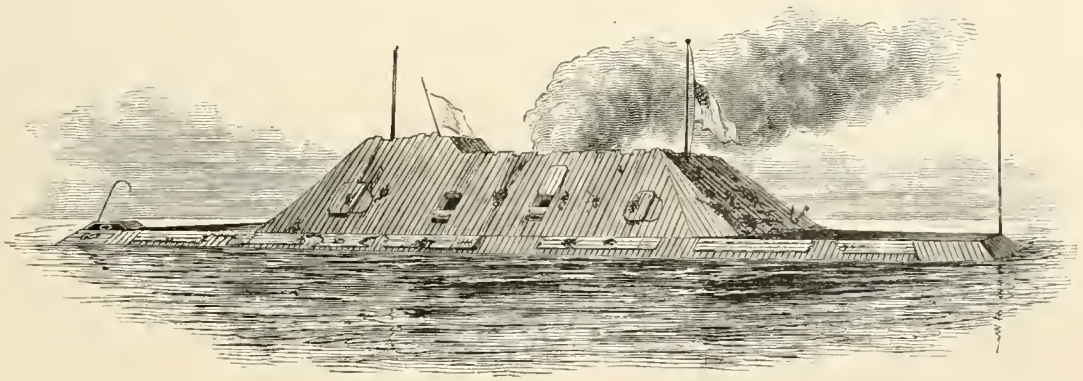
CROSS SECTION.



END ELEVATION.



LONGITUDINAL ELEVATION.



THE CONFEDERATE RAM "TENNESSEE."

carried away his head. Finally Johnston was forced to evacuate his position and to gather his army within shorter lines.

A pause of several days followed. On the 23d, Johnston attacked Hooker and Schofield, but was driven back. By this time, Sherman had grown tired of continually flanking the enemy. The shorter and more decisive way was to attack him openly and he decided to do so. It was a sad mistake for the union leader.

The left column of the confederate army was assailed on the 27th of June. The attempt was to take the slope on which the enemy was posted, Johnston's line of battle being at least ten miles long. The attack was made with great gallantry, and Sherman was defeated with the loss of 3,000 men.

Convinced now that the true course was that of flanking the enemy, Sherman resumed his former tactics. A movement of the federal right toward the Chattahoochee endangered Johnston's communications with Atlanta. Accordingly, on the night of July 2, he withdrew from Marietta and took a new position five miles in the rear. Between him and Atlanta there was but the single line of defense, which Johnston turned to the best account. Threatened again by another flank movement, he moved the greater part of his army, on the 4th of July, across the Chattahoochee and strongly intrenched himself. The severe lesson received by the union commander a short time before prevented his making a direct attack. He sent his cavalry to destroy the flour-mills and cloth-factories in the vicinity, and by some skillful maneuvering secured command of the Chattahoochee near the confederate right flank. Ponton-bridges were thrown across the river, and Sherman swiftly transferred a part of his army from the western to the eastern bank of the river. This compelled Johnston to withdraw within the defenses of Atlanta.

Although Johnston had been repeatedly forced back until he was now at bay in the city which was the destination of the union army, he did not lose heart. He still had under his command his army of 50,000 veterans, and Governor Brown, of Georgia, promised that within ten days he should have 10,000 militia. Notwithstanding the fine generalship of the confederate leader, he received on the 17th of July an order from his secretary of war relieving him from command and appointing Hood his successor. Hood believed in fighting whenever and wherever the chance presented. Sherman learned of the change the next day. He says: "I immediately inquired about Hood and learned that he was bold even to rashness, and courageous in the extreme. I inferred that the change of commanders meant 'fight.' This was just what we wanted; that is, to fight upon open ground, on any thing like equal terms, instead of being forced to run up against prepared intrenchments; but at the same time, the enemy having Atlanta behind him, could choose the time and place of attack, and could at pleasure mass a superior force on our weakest points. Therefore we had to be constantly ready for sallies."

Now that he was brought face to face with the real task of the campaign, Sherman went about it with the care and thoroughness of preparation which always marked his conduct. His men needed rest, and he had lost a great many. Beside the large numbers lost in battle, he had left detachments at various points to protect the rear, and to keep open the railway communications with Chattanooga. It was necessary to establish depots for stores at Allatoona, Marietta and other places. The re-enforcement expected by Sherman from Corinth, Mississippi, had been routed by General Forrest. Since there was imperative need for more men, Sherman telegraphed to General Rousseau, who had 2,000 cavalry at Decatur, Alabama, ordering him to destroy the railway connecting Alabama with Georgia, and then to join the camp on the Chattahoochee. Rousseau arrived with his cavalry on the 22d of July.

Ten days before this, the whole union army had crossed the Chattahoochee, with the exception of General Davis's division of the Fourteenth Corps, which was left to guard the rear. Sherman's plan was to turn to the right and march on Atlanta; but there

was great risk in the movement, for when Johnston reached Atlanta he had determined on a final stand. He had retreated so much that his government would stand it no longer, and he himself was convinced that the time had come for fighting of the most determined character. That now fell to the lot of the impetuous Hood.

The three union armies converged toward Atlanta on the 20th of July. General Thomas, by means of trestle-bridges, crossed the lower part of Peach-tree Creek, a small branch of the Chattahoochee, and Hood fell upon a detachment of his army. The fight was a hot one, but the confederates were driven back into their intrenchments.

The rest of the union forces crossed the creek the next day. Sherman was now in front of the defenses of Atlanta, which extended for three miles about the city. They were of a formidable character, but were not yet finished. The federals, as they came in sight, saw their enemies engaged in connecting the redoubts with curtains, and in building other works. McPherson had secured possession of a hill to the left of the union line which gave him a view of the enemy's position. Hood was not willing to let him stay there, and on the 22d he attacked furiously on the left flank. Hearing the firing, McPherson rode toward it, but coming upon some skirmishers was shot and mortally wounded. He was a brilliant officer, whose loss was deeply mourned by Grant and Sherman, and indeed by all the union leaders. The command of his army fell temporarily upon General John A. Logan.

The confederate attack was pushed with great energy. The union line was assailed in three different points, a number of guns were taken, and Wheeler, with his confederate cavalry, dashed into Decatur, in the rear of the federal line and came near capturing the wagon train. It looked bad for a time for the federals, but by promptly sending re-enforcements where they were needed, Sherman was able to drive back the enemy and restore his own lines.

The policy of the union commander was to shut in Atlanta from all communication with the outside world. Could this be done, it must soon fall. Accordingly he began a series of operations meant to cut all railway lines leading into the place. The first step was to occupy East Point, a small town five miles south of Atlanta, where the West Point and Macon railways meet. To do this, Sherman was obliged to shift his right around Atlanta so as to reach the junction from which he wished to operate.

Two columns of cavalry, the larger under General Stoneman and the less under McCook, were sent out on this service. It was arranged that the columns should take different routes and meet at Lovejoy's Station, on the Macon railway. Through some mistake the junction did not take place. Each column was attacked by superior forces and routed. A great many prisoners, among them General Stoneman, were taken, and the cavalry branch of the union army as a consequence was much weakened.

Hood on the 28th of July made another vehement attack on the union army. Howard was now in command of the army of the Tennessee (formerly that of McPherson), which occupied a high ridge that crosses one of the highways leading from Atlanta to the Chattahoochee. Hood assaulted the federals six times, but was obliged

to retreat with great loss. He had tried to force Sherman to withdraw that part of his army which was steadily creeping round to the right. He failed, and Sherman was able to advance his line nearly half way to East Point. Hood, however, by a counter movement kept him from reaching the railways.

The fighting between the opposing forces went on continually. The loss of life was great. Hood's rashness is shown by the fact that in the first three conflicts he lost more men than Johnston had lost in all his skillful fighting and retreating from Chattanooga to Atlanta.

Sherman now opened the bombardment of Atlanta. The terrified inhabitants took refuge from the flaming tempest in the vaults of churches and the cellars of their houses, but there were no signs of yielding.

It occurred to Hood that the best plan for relieving his own communications was by cutting those of Sherman. He therefore sent General Wheeler, with 4,500 cavalry, to destroy the railway running from Marietta to Chattanooga, which was the line by which Sherman held connection with the north. A part of the line was torn up and a number of cattle and other supplies captured. No permanent injury, however, was done; the federal garrisons held their several positions and the railway was soon repaired. Then General Steedman galloped out of Chattanooga with his cavalry in pursuit of Wheeler, who fled into eastern Tennessee, and finally into northern Alabama. Hood saw no more of him, so that the plan ended badly for the confederates.

Kilpatrick had so far recovered from the wound received at Resaca that he returned to his post of duty and began reorganizing the federal cavalry, of which a great many had been lost. On the 18th of August, he set out to destroy all the southern railways within reach. While doing so, he was attacked by a strong force of cavalry and infantry, and only by the hardest fighting was he able to break through the lines. He rode around the enemy's position and got back to Decatur four days later. He had not been able to do any thing of importance, and Sherman saw that he must attack with a much larger part of his army.

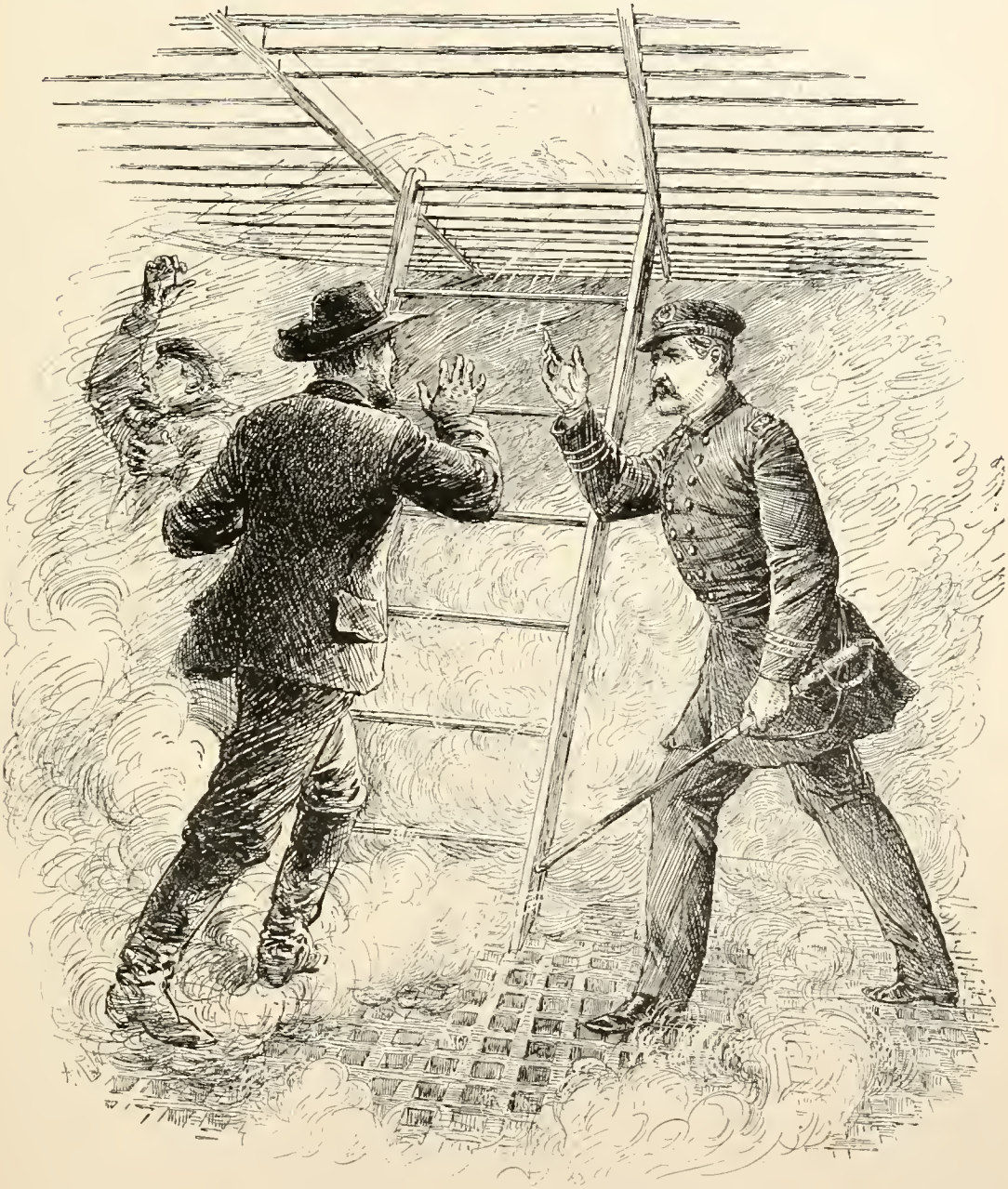
The union commander now carried out a masterly scheme for the reduction of the confederate stronghold. He wanted to draw Hood out of his intrenchments and force him to risk every thing on a single decisive battle, and he did it in this way:

The wagons were loaded with fifteen days' provisions, and on the night of August 25th, two corps on the extreme left quietly withdrew from their intrenchments and marched to the south-west. Other corps followed and, under the eye of Sherman himself, the West Point railway was destroyed for a distance of more than twelve miles. Those soldiers had had so much experience with that sort of thing that they did the work thoroughly. As they had done in other cases, the rails were heated red hot and then twisted like huge screws, after which no handling could make them of any further use. Great excavations were made in the earth, where the rails had lain, and filled with trees and rocks, with torpedoes strewn between.

It was at this time that Hood sorely missed Wheeler's cavalry, which was in flight toward northern Alabama. He did not know where Sherman was, or what he was doing. He could have learned had he been able to keep his cavalry.

When the people of Atlanta saw that all of Sherman's army was gone except the Twentieth Corps, they were in high spirits, believing that the siege had been given up. They were soon to learn their mistake.

It was several days before Hood discovered that his rear was in danger. Even



"AFTER YOU, SIR!" (DEATH OF CAPTAIN CRAVEN.)

then he believed that only a small part of the federal army was engaged in tearing up the railway, and he sent the corps of General Hardee and S. D. Lee to Jonesborough, a

short distance beyond East Point, on the Macon railway. General Howard soon reached a point within a half mile of Jonesborough when, finding the confederates intrenched outside the town, he also began to throw up intrenchments. He was attacked on the last day of August but kept his position. The confederates were obliged to retire.

The federals were continually re-enforced, Sherman himself being on the way to Jonesborough. The important step now was to drive the union army between the corps of Hardee and Lee on the one side and the rest of Hood's army in Atlanta. Sherman ordered Schofield to move quickly along the Macon railway, utterly destroying it, while Howard with a corps of Thomas' army was to engage Hardee in front, as the cavalry fell upon his flank and rear. The plan was not so successful as was hoped, but by dark a lodgment was made within Hardee's lines. During the darkness Hardee fell back to Lovejoy's Station on the Macon railway, where he began fortifying himself.

On the 1st of September, Atlanta was thrown into consternation by learning that the union army was between Hardee and the city. Hood saw the fatal blunder he had made, and all that remained for him was to get out of the city without an hour's delay. Sherman was likely to overwhelm Hardee and Lee, and the 40,000 union prisoners at Andersonville were in danger of being turned loose by the federal cavalry.

Most of the military stores were tumbled into the wagons; the rest were burned or flung among the people, and by the glare of the fires in every direction Hood's army, accompanied by many citizens, marched out of Atlanta and made their way to Lovejoy's Station. The siege of the city had ended at last by the withdrawal of its defenders.

The federals, who were miles away, heard the heavy explosions of ordnance, and saw the heavens lit up by the glare of the conflagration. Suspecting that Hood had abandoned the place, General Slocum, from his position on the Chattahoochee, sent out at daybreak a strong reconnoitering column. No one appearing to dispute their way, they rode into Atlanta at nine o'clock on the morning of September 2d.

The mayor of the city soon came forward and made a formal surrender of Atlanta. The stars and stripes were raised over the court-house amid cheers and martial music. Meanwhile, Hood had joined Hardee and Lee at Lovejoy's Station. Sherman, learning of the surrender of Atlanta, did not think it wise to attack the reunited army of the confederates, and accordingly marched back the different divisions of his army, encamping about the city.

The news of the fall of Atlanta was received in Washington on the day that it took place, and of course caused great rejoicing through the North. President Lincoln telegraphed the thanks of the nation to Sherman and his brave officers and soldiers for what they had done. It was ordered that a national salute be fired, and the 11th of September was appointed a day of national thanksgiving for the successes of Sherman at Atlanta and Farragut at Mobile.

On reaching Atlanta, General Sherman issued orders for the departure of all the people, male and female, except those in the employ of the government, as he meant

to use it entirely for military purposes. He proposed a truce of ten days to Hood, which was accepted by him, though he said the proceeding exceeded in cruelty any thing done during the war. The mayor of Atlanta begged Sherman to recall his order, pointing out the suffering and misery it would cause to women, children and invalids. Sherman answered Hood by a vigorous attack on the course of the South, which had only herself to blame for what had taken place. He was more moderate to the mayor, reminding him that war is always cruel and that it was imperatively necessary that he should appropriate Atlanta for military uses. He offered to give carriage to the inhabitants as far south as Rough-and-Ready and as far north as Chattanooga. The citizens were allowed to take all their movables with them, and the negroes who wished to do so might go with their masters; the others would be employed by the government, and their women and children sent outside the lines. The truce was afterward extended and in the end nearly 500 families, including about 2,000 people, were removed from the city.

The union loss in the campaign from Chattanooga to Atlanta was 4,423 killed, 22,822 wounded, and 4,442 missing, 31,687 in all. The confederate loss was 3,044 killed, 18,692 wounded, 12,983 prisoners, 34,979 in all. It was a fearful cost that was paid for the capital of the "empire state of the south."

CHAPTER XXIX.

EVENTS OF 1864. SHERMAN'S MARCH TO THE SEA.

ATLANTA had been captured, but Hood and the confederate army had escaped after its defeat. Jefferson Davis was so alarmed by the turn affairs had taken in the south-west that he went from Richmond to the neighborhood of Jonesborough to investigate for himself. He found matters as bad as they could be, but Hood was hopeful and he proposed to Mr. Davis to take the offensive by attacking Sherman's lines of communication. It was a dangerous thing to try, but as there was nothing else to do, the confederate president gave his consent.

The latter was so imprudent while on his way back to Richmond as to make a speech at Macon, in which he gave the plans of Hood's proposed campaign. This speech was reported in the southern papers and republished in the North. In a short time General Sherman read all about it, so that the important news which proved of so much value to him was obtained, as may be said, from the lips of the confederate president himself.

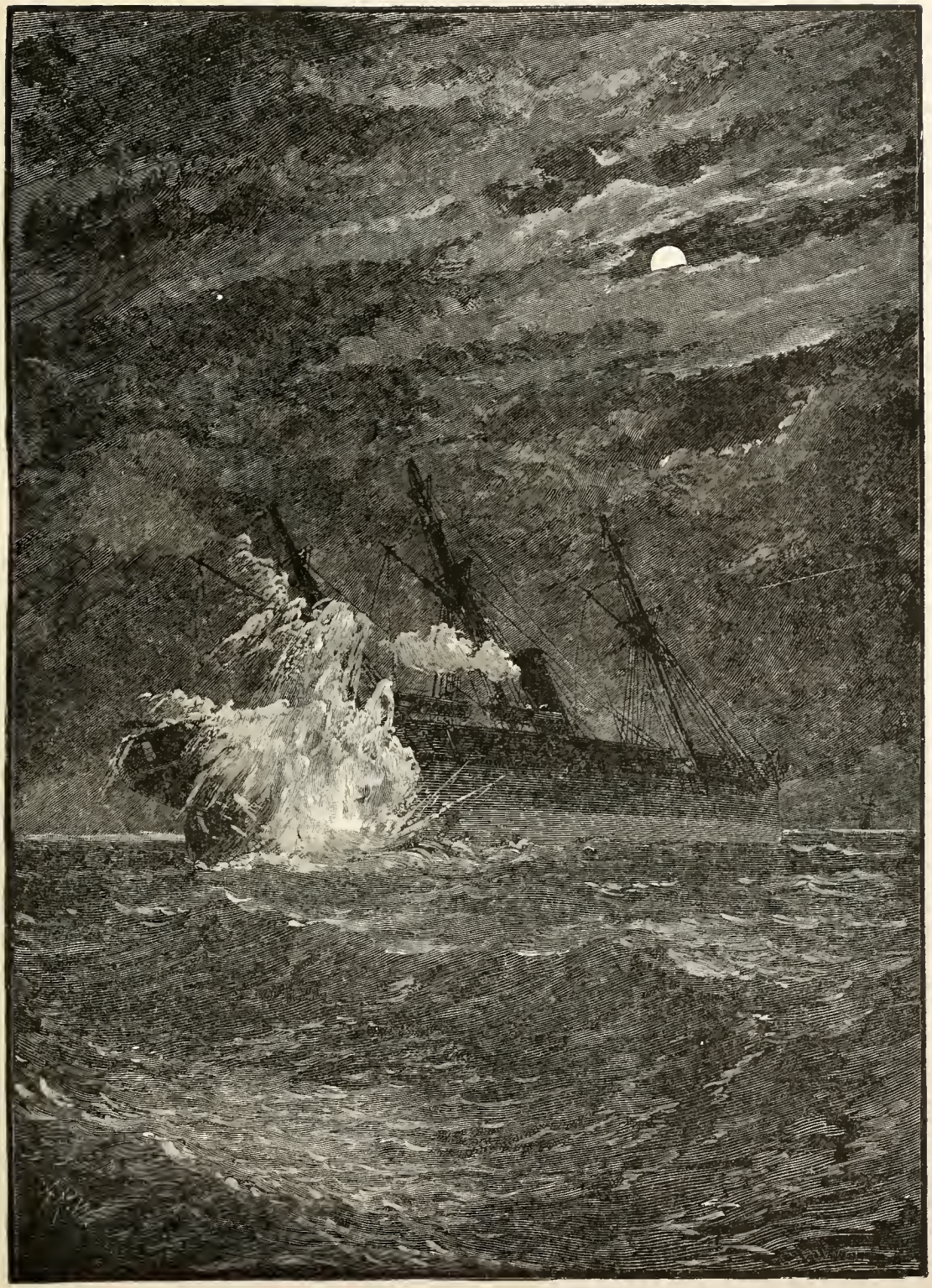
Hood's policy may be summed up by saying that it was to advance into Tennessee, and by endangering Sherman's communications, compel him to withdraw from Georgia. Sherman, however, had no thought of giving up the vast gain he had made. After following Hood to the north of the Chattahoochee, he turned back to Atlanta.

Hood swept up through northern Alabama, crossed the Tennessee at Florence and marched on Nashville. General Thomas with the army of the Cumberland had been detached by Sherman from Atlanta and sent north to attend to Hood in Tennessee. General Schofield, commanding the forces in the southern part of the state, fell back before the approach of the confederates and took position at Franklin, eighteen miles south of Nashville.

On the 30th of November, he was attacked in this place by Hood and his veterans. The battle was hard fought, but the confederates were held in check until night, when Schofield escaped across the river and took refuge in Nashville. General Thomas rapidly gathered all his forces at this place, and a line of intrenchments was drawn around the city to the south. Many of the civilians were armed and additional troops were brought by rail from Chattanooga.

Hood arrived in front of Nashville on the 2d of December and began throwing up works and counter batteries. He was confident of capturing the place by a regular siege and he set about doing so. Forrest in command of a body of cavalry and infantry was sent toward Murfreesboro' to secure the garrison, but a part of his troops did not behave well, and their absence from before Nashville weakened Hood's forces.

All this time, Thomas was steadily gathering re-enforcements and carefully



130 LOSS OF THE U. S. SLOOP OF WAR HOUSATONIC.

forming his plans. He would not allow himself to be hurried nor would he stir until he was fully prepared. On the 15th of December he felt the time had come for him to strike a blow.

In the dim light of the early morning, he made a feint on Hood's right and a real attack on his left. He captured several redoubts and guns, routed the confederates and drove them back for a distance of several miles. The next day Thomas renewed the attack, and after a fierce engagement the confederates were routed again—this time even more completely than before. They fled in confusion toward Franklin, their flight compelling Forrest to withdraw from before Murfreesboro' and to join in the stampede. Thomas pushed the pursuit with all possible energy, Hood's legions fleeing over Duck River toward the Tennessee, which they crossed on the 27th of December.

Hood's army was ruined. In the two days' fight before Nashville, he had lost 54 guns, 4,460 prisoners and his whole loss during the campaign is said to have been 13,189 prisoners alone, including a number of general officers. At the same time, over 2,000 deserters entered the union lines. Sensible of his utter failure, Hood asked to be relieved of his command, and was succeeded by General Taylor, who was transferred from the trans-Mississippi department.

General Sherman did not wait until Hood was disposed of before setting out on his famous march from Atlanta to the sea. His design was kept a close secret from every one except the corps commanders and General Kilpatrick, who was at the head of the cavalry. He made several demonstrations that led the confederates to think that he meant to move toward them, but all the time he was perfecting his preparations to march eastward toward the Atlantic, hundreds of miles away. About 60,000 men were brought together and divided into two columns, the right under General Howard and the left under General Slocum. The garrisons were called in from Kingston, Rome, Resaca and Dalton; all forces north of Kingston were gathered around Chattanooga; the railways to the south-east of the Oostenaula were destroyed and the country turned into a desert. His purpose was to cut entirely loose from his communications with the north and to head straight across the country to the Atlantic Ocean. The Confederacy had been cut in two by the opening of the Mississippi and Sherman now meant to split the eastern half in two.

To do this it would be necessary to live off the country through which they marched. It was taking a great risk, but Sherman did not hesitate. He was confident, and to his resistless legions it was like entering upon a grand jubilee. Atlanta was fired on the evening of the 15th and burned all night. The sky was brilliantly lit up, and as the rear guard marched out it was to the sound of the exploding shells and magazines. Sherman did not leave Atlanta until the 16th, when he started with the left wing. General Howard with the right wing marched due south for the purpose of destroying the Macon railway at different points, while General Slocum with the left was to threaten Augusta and tear up the Georgia Central railway.

The forces opposed to the federals were insignificant. They were mostly militia under the command of Howell Cobb, secretary of the treasury under President

Buchanan. They did not number more than 10,000, while Wheeler's cavalry were but a fraction of those under Kilpatrick. Sherman knew before he started that no serious force could be got together to oppose him.

You may imagine the consternation in the south when it became known that a union army had swung loose from its communications and was marching through a part of the Confederacy that had never before seen an invading army. On the 18th of November, General Beauregard, from his headquarters at Corinth, appealed to the Georgians to obstruct and destroy all the roads in Sherman's front, flank and rear "and his army will soon starve in your midst. Be confident; be resolute." On the same day Senator B. H. Hill wrote from Richmond, with the warm indorsement of the secretary of war: "You have now the best opportunity ever presented to destroy the enemy. Put every thing at the disposal of our generals. Every citizen with his gun, and every negro with his spade and ax can do the work of a soldier. You can destroy the enemy by retarding his march." The Georgia members of the lower house of congress issued a similar appeal, and Governor Brown ordered a levy in mass of the whole white population (with few exceptions) between the ages of sixteen and forty-five. He offered pardon to such convicts as would volunteer. These frantic appeals amounted to little in the way of hindering the march of the union army. Now and then there was a skirmish, but the opposing forces were brushed aside without trouble. The bridges that where burned were soon repaired, and the roads broken up by the retreating troops were speedily put in order again.

Milledgeville, the capital of Georgia, was reached on the 21st. The legislature was in session when Sherman started from Atlanta, and it made one of the quickest adjournments on record. Governor Brown and the members hurried to Augusta; two days later Sherman's advanced scouts arrived there and the city was surrendered by the mayor. Augusta was treated badly; it was plundered and partly destroyed, and a large number of the slaves were set free.

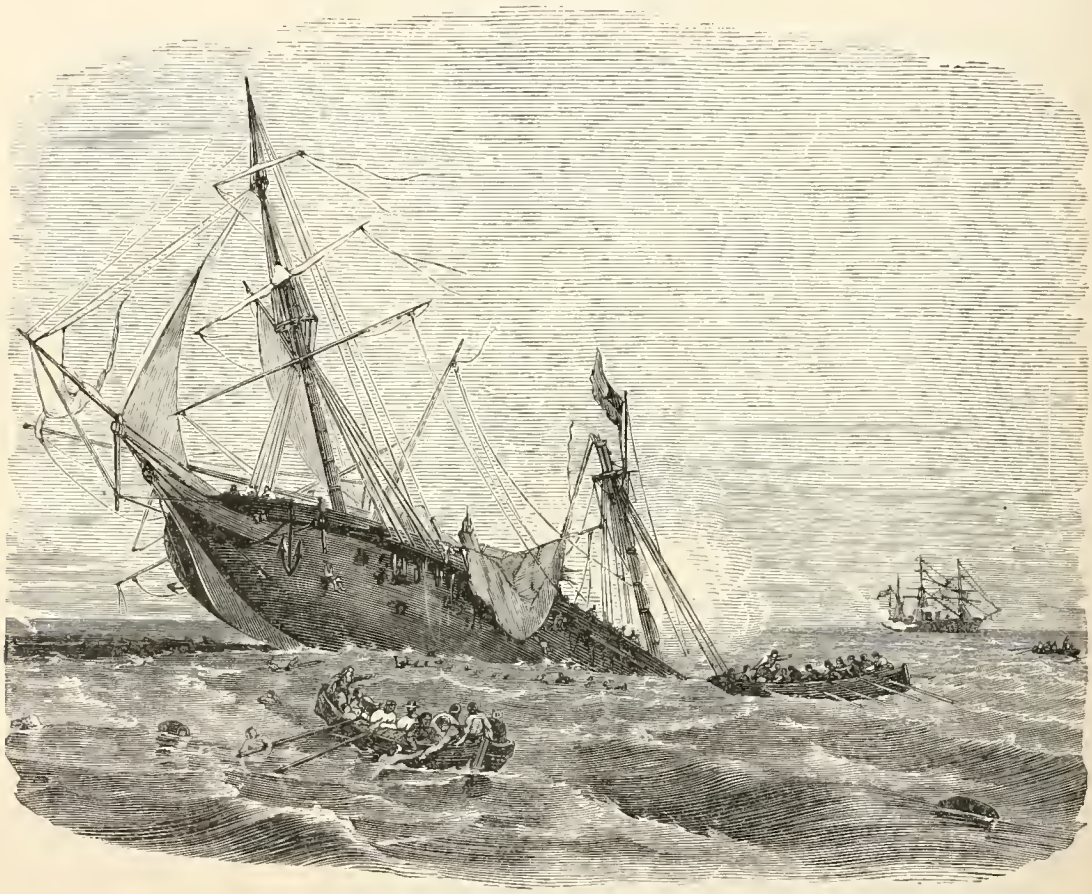
Kilpatrick had been sent toward Macon with the cavalry. A sharp fight took place with a body of confederate troops who were driven back. Kilpatrick could have captured Macon had such been the plan of Sherman, but the movement in that direction was intended merely to distract the attention of the confederates.

General Hardee obstructed the roads toward Savannah by every means at his command, but nothing conld stop the steady advance of the invading army. The right wing, marching from Milledgeville and Gordon, arrived at the Oconee on the 24th of November. The Georgia militia were drawn up here, and it looked as if, aided by the natural defensive nature of the ground, they would give the federals a serious check. Little resistance, however, was encountered, and the federals passed over. Kilpatrick entered Waynesborough on the 27th, tore up the railway connecting that town with Augusta and then headed toward the left wing of the army. Before he reached it he was involved in a brisk fight in which he and his command narrowly escaped being taken prisoners.

Sherman was steadily nearing the sea, and the rich cultivated fields were succeeded by the sterile wastes and the pine trees of eastern Georgia. Hundreds of negro men and

women flocked after the mighty host tramping across the country. They looked upon them as deliverers sent by the Lord; they sang their glad songs of freedom, believing that the "Day of Jubilee" had come, and pressed after them like so many happy children. Many of the poor people were doomed to sorrowful disappointment, for they dropped by the wayside from weariness and hunger and scores of them died in the dismal pine woods where there was neither food nor water.

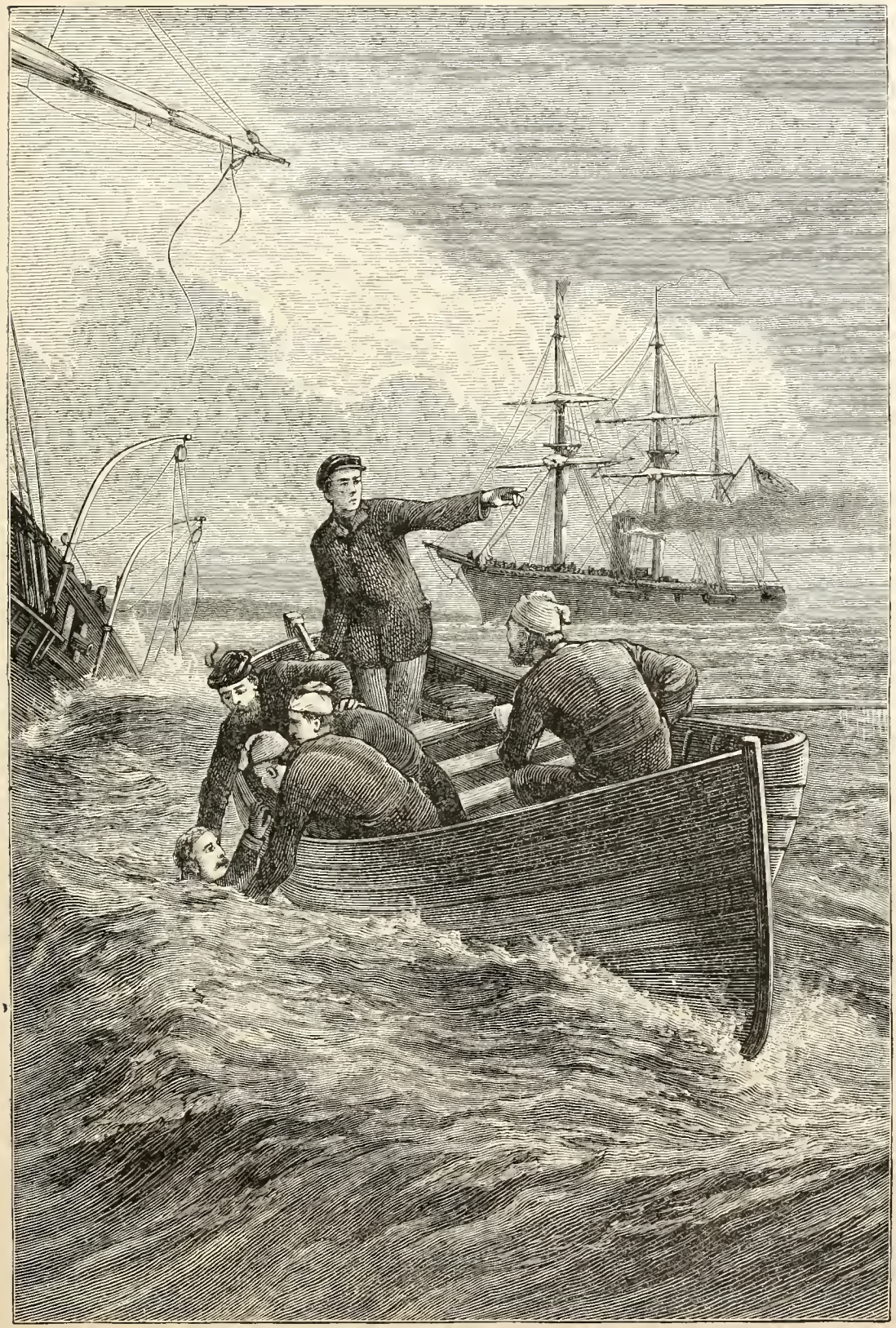
Sherman and the center of the army was at Millen on the 3d of December. From



SINKING OF THE ALABAMA.

that point he made demonstrations against Augusta and Savannah, so as to puzzle the confederates as to his destination. Moving down the peninsula formed by the Ogeechee and Savannah, he drew near Savannah, which had been his destination from the first. He was now advancing through rice fields and swamps, and the rain fell in torrents, so that in many places they had to build roads before the army could pass. Felled trees and field-works were met, but they were easily turned and the enemy driven away. By the 10th of December, all the confederate troops had been forced within their lines, and Sherman's whole army was massed in front of Savannah.

The march from Atlanta to the sea had been finished, but much remained to be



BOAT OF THE "DEERHOUND" RESCUING CAPTAIN SEMMES. (*See page 249.*)

done. The union army had marched more than three hundred miles in about twenty-five days; it had met with very slight loss, and when the legions caught sight of the beautiful city rising above the flat, watery landscape and could almost hear the boom of the Atlantic breakers beyond, they broke into cheers and were ready to take Savannah by storm.

But the grim, iron soldier who had led this army through the Confederacy was never carried away by enthusiasm. He had nothing but field-artillery, while the walls of the defenses were surmounted by heavy cannon. Within the city was Hardee with 15,000 men able to make a strong resistance. Instead of making a direct attack, Sherman decided to starve out the garrison.

Admiral Dahlgren was lying not far off with his fleet, but Fort McAllister commanded the mouth of the Ogeechee, and it was almost impossible to communicate with the fleet. Nevertheless, Sherman sent three scouts to make the attempt. They paddled stealthily down the river at night, and when daylight came crept into the rice fields and watched and waited for darkness again. Finally they got far enough to catch the attention of a gun-boat which steamed out and picked them up. They carried to Admiral Dahlgren this dispatch from General Howard: "We have had perfect success, and the army is in fine spirits."

This was the first tidings received from Sherman. It was immediately telegraphed to Washington, and as you may well believe, caused the greatest excitement and rejoicing. A month before, General Sherman, with an army of 60,000 brave men, had disappeared. It was known that he had started to march through the middle of the Confederacy, but whether or not he would succeed was a question that no one could answer. Now and then rumors from southern sources reached the North, but these were all of a boastful nature, and had they been believed no one would have had any hope. It was said that Sherman would find a lion in his path before he could reach the coast, and that his army would be starved to death.

When, therefore, the news was flashed northward that the whole army was in front of Savannah, the relief and rejoicing passed all bounds. There was much to be thankful for in the achievement of the union army, but it meant a good deal more. It showed the weakness of the Confederacy, and proved that the final collapse was at hand.

Fort McAllister, fifteen miles below Savannah, was such an obstacle to the co-operation of the fleet that Sherman determined to capture it. It mounted twenty-four guns and had a garrison of 200 men. It was taken on the 13th of December by General Hazen's division of the Fifteenth Corps. This opened the way for free communication with the fleet, and Sherman made arrangements for a supply of ammunition and heavy guns from Hilton Head. General Forster, who commanded that department, was directed to occupy the railroad between Savannah and Charleston. This was the side toward the north, and when secured Savannah would be completely surrounded.

Sherman on the 17th demanded the surrender of the city, but Hardee refused. Sherman expected a desperate resistance and made preparations for bombardment and assault. But Hardee had already decided to abandon the city while he could save his army. The confederates still had command of the Savannah River, and across that stream on the night of December 20 the confederate army fled.

Reaching the other shore, they followed a little-known road through a swamp and tramped into South Carolina. The next day Sherman entered the city, and sent the following telegram to President Lincoln: "I beg to present you, as a Christmas gift, the city of Savannah, with one hundred and fifty heavy guns, and plenty of ammunition; also about twenty-five thousand bales of cotton." It was a remarkable Christmas gift indeed, and one which was fully appreciated by the president, who received it on Christmas eve.

Sherman was gratified on entering Savannah to find a good deal of union sentiment. The people were civil to the soldiers, and made no attempt to destroy cotton or any other kind of property. On the invitation of the mayor a meeting of the citizens was held on the 28th of December, at which resolutions were adopted without opposition looking to a return to the Union. General Geary, who was appointed commandant by Sherman, ruled with such tact and kindness that the city could not have been more quiet and prosperous.

The march of Sherman from Atlanta to Savannah was, as you have been told, more than three hundred miles in extent. The total loss in killed, wounded and missing was 785. There were 1,338 confederate prisoners taken, but there never was any record of their killed and wounded. During the march more than twenty thousand bales of cotton were burned and a vast amount of other valuable property destroyed. Most important of all, three hundred and twenty miles of railway had been torn up. By this means the last link that joined the confederate armies in the east to those in the west was broken.

CHAPTER XXX.

EVENTS OF 1864. THE CAMPAIGN AGAINST RICHMOND.

YOU have already learned that General Grant, in the month of March, 1864, was given the command of all the armed federal forces. On the 1st of May the available military strength was a little short of 800,000. By this time, incompetent officers had been weeded out and the ablest were in control—so that it was certain that this enormous force would be handled with intelligence and skill.

Before giving an account of Grant's overland campaign against Richmond I must

LIEUTENANT CUSHING'S ATTACK ON THE "ALBEMARLE."

tell you about a couple of ill-advised demonstrations made previous to his taking charge.

General Sedgwick was sent February 5, on a reconnoissance across the Rapidan, so as to distract the enemy while General Wister of Butler's command moved toward the Chickahominy in the hope of surprising Richmond. Wister found the confederates so well prepared for him that he went back as fast as he could.

The wildest raid of all was made on the 27th of February. It was with the view of

TROOPS TEARING UP A RAILWAY. (*See page 260.*)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

setting free the union prisoners in Richmond, and capturing President Davis. This you will observe was some time before Sherman started on his raid, and General Kilpatrick was selected to lead the chief column. He was to march direct on Richmond, while Colonel Dahlgren, son of the admiral, and General Custer were to threaten the city from other points, so as to divide the forces of the defenders.

The raiders had one advantage in the fact that the enterprise was a surprise to the confederates, who had received no hint of any such intention on the part of their enemies. Custer drew off Stuart toward Charlottesville and then fell back across the Rapidan to the main army. Kilpatrick rode hard through a desolated country, tearing up rails and burning bridges, and on the 1st of March he was within sight of Richmond.

It had been arranged that Dahlgren should make his demonstration against the city from the south side of the James, but there were no signs of his presence there. Kilpatrick did not dare to wait, but retreated across the Chickahominy pursued by Wade Hampton and his cavalry.

Meanwhile, Colonel Dahlgren was unable to cross the James, and he was close to the west side of Richmond on the evening of March 2d. Finding himself confronted by a powerful force, he strove to rejoin Kilpatrick, but was overtaken and killed, together with several of his men.

I have pointed out to you in another place the chief points of difference between Grant's methods of war and those of McClellan. The former believed in pushing operations in all kinds of weather and with all possible energy. He thus gave the enemy no time to rest, and would win, if in no other way, by the continual hammering of superior numbers.

Grant now proposed to march against Richmond with the armies of the Potomac and the James, while Sherman with his vast force made the campaign which has just been described to you. General Lee had less than 58,000 men with which to protect the capital of the Confederacy. It is impossible to give the number of soldiers in the south, but careful estimates make it 220,000, which was less than one-third of the federals. At that time, therefore, there were about one million men under arms in the United States.

The army of the Potomac consisted of three instead of five corps. Hancock, having recovered from the wound received at Gettysburg, had command of the Second, Warren of the Fifth and Sedgwick of the Sixth. In addition, there was under Burnside the newly organized Ninth Corps, containing many colored troops. The first intention was to send this to North Carolina, but it was attached to the army of the Potomac. In addition to the 140,000 in the latter, there were 42,000 in and about Washington, 31,000 in West Virginia, 59,000 in the department of Virginia and North Carolina. Of the last, 25,000, known as the army of the James, under General Butler, were ready for service in the field. There were 38,000 more in South Carolina, Georgia and at other points, the whole amounting to 310,000 under Grant that were to be pitted against the 125,000 confederates in the same region.

The command of the army of the Potomac remained with General Meade, and

General P. H. Sheridan had charge of the cavalry corps. The army was composed of veterans, brilliantly officered, and a feeling of confidence pervaded the rank and file.

Long before the opening of the final campaign, the army of Northern Virginia had reached what may be called its "dead point," in the matter of numbers. No more re-enforcements could be got from anywhere in the Confederacy, for there was none to be obtained. On the 1st of May, Longstreet, who had been fighting in Tennessee, brought only two divisions to Lee. But as you have learned, he had more than 50,000 men, and the line he defended was so strong that he had no fear of a direct attack. The line of the Rapidan was held by small detachments chiefly for observation. The army itself was distributed from Somerville Ford on the Rapidan to Gordonsville. Longstreet was at the latter place, Ewell on the Rapidan and A. P. Hill at Orange Court House. It was Lee's duty to keep vigilant watch in order to be ready to concentrate at any threatened point.

Grant's plan was to cross the Rapidan, attack Lee's right, cut his communications and force him to fight between his line and Richmond. Should the union leader win, he would follow his opponent to Richmond and capture both his army and the city. Simultaneously with this attempt, Butler was to go up the James River from Fortress Monroe, seize City Point, and marching up the south bank of the river cut the confederate communications south of the James, and if possible capture Petersburg.

It was Grant's intention in case of failure to move his whole army to the south side of the James and make his attack from that quarter, using Butler's column to cover the transfer. While these movements were under way, the army of General Sigel was to be organized into two expeditions, one in the Kanawha Valley under General Crook, and the other in the Shenandoah Valley under Sigel himself. He was to cut the Central railway, one of the great avenues by which Lee received supplies, while Crook, by capturing the Virginia and Tennessee road, would close the other avenue in southwestern Virginia. The plan of campaign was a grand one, and if it succeeded the days of the Confederacy were numbered.

The army of the Potomac began moving at midnight on the 3d of May. It advanced in two columns. The right, consisting of Warren's and Sedgwick's corps, crossed the Rapidan at Germania Ford, and the left, which was Hancock's corps, crossed six miles below at Ely's Ford. The army bivouacked on the night of the 4th, between the Rapidan and Chancellorsville.

Of course Lee quickly read the purpose of Grant and determined to attack him in the Wilderness. In the deep shadow of those thickets, where Grant could not use his artillery, Lee believed he could destroy his army. While the federals, therefore, were crossing the Rapidan, the corps of Ewell and Hill were sent forward and Longstreet was ordered to move down on the right of Ewell so as to fall upon the federal advance while it was in motion. Thus it came about that while Warren's corps, which was the advance, was encamped that night at Old Wilderness Tavern, the camp fires of Johnson's division of Ewell's corps were blazing only three miles away and neither suspected the truth.

Two roads wind through the Wilderness from north to south and about half a

dozen miles from each other, uniting finally at a point near Spottsylvania Court House. Grant's plan was to move his two columns over these roads and to unite them at the point where the roads come together.

Running east and west, so that they cross these roads at right angles, are two other roads, and it was by these that Lee arranged to assail the union army on the flanks, hoping to cut the columns in two and utterly rout them. Grant had no suspicion of the plan of his enemy.

Johnson learned of Warren's presence the next morning, and hurrying forward secured some high ground where he began forming his line. Grant believed he could easily sweep aside the opposing force. About noon three divisions of Warren's corps furiously attacked Johnson's division. They were received with a hot fire, but pushed heroically on and broke the line where it crossed the turnpike and was held by Jones's brigade. This commander was killed while trying to rally his men, and the whole division would have been overrun had not the brigade of General Stewart been brought from its position in line of battle and launched against the federal column. The latter was checked and two pieces of artillery captured. The confederates receiving more re-enforcements drove the federals still further and took a whole regiment.

The utmost bravery had been shown on both sides and Grant saw that Lee meant to force him to battle in the Wilderness. It was not a favorable spot, but the union commander prepared to accommodate his opponent.

Both Grant and Lee made ready to renew the attack at an early hour the next day, and Lee was a few minutes ahead of the union commander. The army of the latter was drawn up across the Orange and Fredericksburg road—Sedgwick with the right covering Germania Ford, Warren with the center posted at Wilderness Tavern, and the left under Hancock drawn up to the south-east of Chancellorsville. Burnside, who had crossed the Rapidan with the reserve the night before, was in the rear with orders to support Sedgwick, should such support be needed and should the army be worsted he was to cover its retreat toward its base.

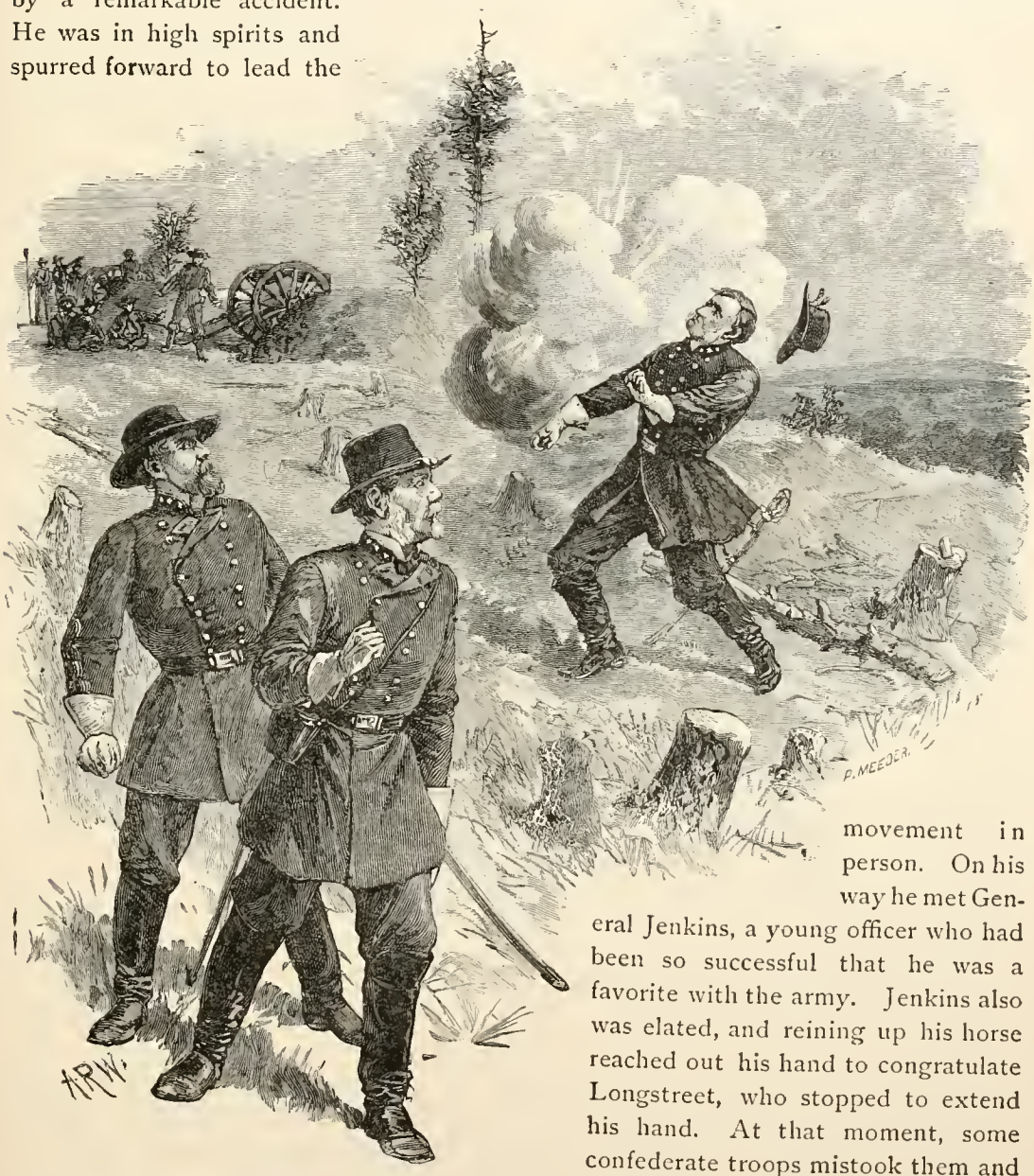
The federals,as you have learned,were caught in the last position which they would have chosen for battle. Their line was five miles long and was wholly within the tangled woods, where neither the cavalry nor artillery could be used with effect. The fighting therefore was hand-to-hand and of the most furious nature.

Grant was in the rear of the center acting in concert with General Meade and he now ordered an advance of the whole line. The battle raged for some hours with irrestrainable ferocity; but the confederate brigades of Heth and Wilcox were tumbled backward and over upon Longstreet's column, which had not yet formed in battle line. The rush of the federals was so resistless that the masses were driven within a hundred yards of the spot where Lee had established his headquarters. Lee was startled as never before, but Longstreet saved the confederates from irretrievable disaster. He drove back the assailants, captured many prisoners and re-established his line.

Having Grant in the Wilderness, Lee determined to give him no rest. Before noon Longstreet fell upon Hancock's left with such fierceness that it was forced to the Brock Road, which Longstreet determined to seize. Should he succeed in doing so, Grant

would be forced to retreat to the Rapidan under as disastrous circumstances as those under which his predecessors had invariably fallen back before Lee.

The success of Longstreet in making this highly important movement was prevented by a remarkable accident. He was in high spirits and spurred forward to lead the movement in person. On his way he met General Jenkins, a young officer who had been so successful that he was a favorite with the army. Jenkins also was elated, and reining up his horse reached out his hand to congratulate Longstreet, who stopped to extend his hand. At that moment, some confederate troops mistook them and their escorts for federal cavalry and fired a volley into them.



DEATH OF GENERAL POLK.

Longstreet waved his hand and shouted to them to stop firing. They did so, but not until General Jenkins had fallen dead from his horse and a bullet had passed through Longstreet's throat, coming out through the shoulder. He fell from his horse beside the

body of General Jenkins and was believed to be dead. Seeing that he was alive, however, his staff got a litter and carried him to the rear, the troops showing their sympathy by loud cheers as he was borne along the line. It was a strange coincidence that Stonewall Jackson and Longstreet should have been shot by their own men.

Such a calamity spread dismay for a time in the confederate ranks, and prevented the success of the movement. A disastrous repulse seemed inevitable. It was at this crisis that General Lee rode to the Texas brigade, determined to lead them in a charge that should be decisive. Let me quote the words of J. D. McCabe, Jr., in describing the incident:

"Those who saw him at that moment describe his appearance as inexpressibly grand. He had removed his hat, and, bareheaded, with his hair floating in the wind and his features glowing with the fire of a true soldier, he pointed in silence toward the federal line with a gesture far more eloquent than words could have been. For a moment the troops paused and gazed first at their commander and then at one another, as if hesitating whether to allow him to incur such danger. Then a ragged, scarred veteran, approaching the commander-in-chief, seized his bridle-rein and turned his horse's head, saying respectfully but firmly, 'You must not expose yourself, General Lee. You must go to the rear. We will obey your orders; we have never faltered yet, and will not do so now. Will we, boys?' he added, turning to his comrades. Instantly the whole line took up the cry, 'No! no! General Lee to the rear!' and the men refused to move until General Lee had withdrawn to a safer position. Touched to the heart by this affecting proof of the devotion of his troops, General Lee bowed and rode back, while the line, with deafening cheers, moved forward to the charge."

Finding that he had failed to turn Lee's left and that his own right was in danger, Grant decided, on the 7th, to shift his position so as to make Fredericksburg his base of operations, and to give up Germania Ford, while holding the other passes of the river. This was done, and the next day General Lee withdrew from the position he had obtained.

Neither Grant nor Lee showed any wish to renew the battle on the morrow. The union position was too strong to be carried, and Lee could not be forced out of his position. Grant, however, was not the one to turn back or give up. He spent the day in hunting for some weak point where he could fly at his enemy. He decided that Spottsylvania Court House was the spot, and on the night of the 7th his army was marched thither by way of Todd's Tavern.

While making this movement, Sheridan was sent with orders to make a dash toward Richmond and to cut Lee's communications. Sheridan rode to the right of the confederate army, cut the Central railway at Beaver Dam Station, and then hurrying to Ashland, struck the Fredericksburg road. Stuart and his cavalry were in pursuit, and Sheridan was overtaken at Ashland and driven out while making ready to burn the place. Sheridan then headed toward Richmond, but Stuart, knowing the country better, took a shorter route and reaching the Yellow Tavern, within seven miles of the city, attacked the federals when they came in sight. In this skirmish the famous confederate cavalry leader, who had taken part in so many battles and done so much service for the Confed-

eracy, received a wound from which he died in Richmond the next day. Sheridan returned across the Chickahominy and galloped down the Peninsula.

Lee, knowing that Grant meant to seize Spottsylvania Court House, had sent Longstreet's corps, now commanded by General Anderson, to that point, and they were in possession when a large body of federals arrived. Lee dispatched re-enforcements to the point and the fighting of the 8th ended in the confederates holding the position.

The next day was spent in preparations, the confederates keeping up a heavy fire on the union lines wherever they saw batteries going up. General Sedgwick rashly exposed himself while placing one of these batteries in position, and was killed by a rifle ball, which passed through his head.

Late in the day Grant ordered another advance. The right wing crossed over to the south bank of the Upper Po, but after some skirmishing the federals withdrew to the north side of the stream.

On the morning of the 10th, Grant's forces held very nearly the same position as on the day before. The line reached about six miles on the north bank of the Po, with the wings somewhat in advance of the center. There was severe fighting and the federal losses were enormous, but the confederates were driven to their breastworks. Grant was so well satisfied that on the morning of the 11th he telegraphed to the secretary of war: "I propose to fight it out on this line if it takes all summer."

The rain fell in torrents that day, and little was done by either army. After dusk, Hancock with the Second Corps moved from the right to the left of the federal line, and before light the next morning he was opposite the right and right center of the confederates. The latter were hardly aware of their danger when their first line of rifle pits was carried and a whole division was captured, including General Johnson. The second line was stormed, but later Hancock was driven out; he held fast to the first line, however, and was able to carry off some of the cannon that he had secured. The federal attacks in other directions were failures.

Lee determined to retake the position secured by Hancock, and he made five charges against it, but was repulsed each time. The fighting was ferocious, and the slaughter awful. The ground was covered with dead and wounded, in some places two, three and four deep. Nothing of the kind had ever before been seen. There is to-day preserved in Washington the trunk of a tree, eighteen inches in diameter, which was shot in two by the bullets at Spottsylvania. The federal loss during the preceding three days in killed, wounded and missing was 10,000, and on the last day it was fully as great.

The blow struck by Grant had staggered but not crushed Lee. The union commander now spent a week in hunting for a point weak enough to invite attack, but everywhere the intrenchments were impregnable. During this period, his government sent him re-enforcements fully equal in numbers to those that he had lost.

On the morning of the 22d Lee found that Grant and his army had vanished. He knew, however, where they had gone. Seeing no prospect of success in assailing Lee in front, the union leader had again resorted to his flanking tactics. Lee instantly broke up his camps and hurried off to throw himself between Grant and Richmond.

Two days of fast marching brought Grant to the North Anna. When he got there, the confederate army was drawn up in battle array on the opposite bank. Well aware of his enemy's destination, Lee took the interior and shorter route, and reached the ground first. His policy was not to make a strong opposition to the crossing of the stream, but to fortify himself a short distance away from it and there await attack.

The corps of Hancock and Warren were sent across the river at points four miles apart. Lee immediately drove his army between, so as to wedge them asunder and give

GENERAL McPHERSON.

a chance to overwhelm each in detail. Before he could do so Grant saw his mistake and brought back the two corps.

Sigel, as you will remember, had been sent to operate in the Shenandoah Valley. He collided with Breckinridge on the 15th of May, and was utterly routed. His failure indeed was so bad that he was removed from command, and was succeeded by Hunter. He did not do any better, and as he retreated from the valley, Breckinridge took his

army of 15,000 men and joined Lee at the time he was confronting Grant on the North Anna. Had the union leaders done their duty in the Shenandoah Valley, these re-enforcements never would have been sent to the confederate commander-in-chief.

You know that other movements had been arranged against Richmond. With two corps of infantry, under Gillmore and W. F. Smith, a large body of cavalry, five ironclads and a fleet of transports, Butler was doing what he could against Petersburg and the capital. The headquarters were at Yorktown and Gloucester Point, on the York River. Butler's purpose was to threaten Richmond by water, at the same time that Grant and Meade were pounding in front.

On the same day that Grant crossed the Rapidan, Butler sent his infantry up the

SAVANNAH.

James, and placing a detachment at City Point to protect the line of the river, he landed most of his force four miles above the mouth of the Appomattox, which enters the James a short distance north-east of Petersburg. Intrenchments were thrown up, and on the 12th of May he advanced toward Richmond, where Beauregard was in command of 19,000 men, many of whom had lately been brought from the south.

Butler was no match for Beauregard. The latter soon "bottled him up" (as Grant expressed it) at Bermuda Hundred, a peninsula formed by the James, about twenty miles below Richmond. Beauregard sent a few re-enforcements to Lee, though he was also obliged to keep a large force on hand to watch the movements of Butler.

Although Grant had been baffled in his effort to cut Lee's communications with Richmond, he resolved on another attempt before the confederate army could reach the defenses of the capital. Accordingly, he hurried down the north bank of the Pamunkey toward Hanovertown, Sheridan's cavalry in front. He crossed at Hanovertown and sent a strong force to Hanover Court House to cut off Lee's retreat or to find out what he was doing. Nothing was learned, for Lee had marched across the country by the direct road to Cold Harbor. Arriving at Tottapotomoi he formed his line on the main highway between Hanovertown and Richmond.

Grant was seeking some path by which he could pass around the terrible lion that forever crouched before him. It seemed that his best course was to move further to the left and to cross the Chickahominy near Cold Harbor. His cavalry, therefore, were sent thither, and he followed with his infantry. Lee was quick to read his purpose, and Longstreet's corps was sent to throw itself between the union army and Richmond.

Grant now determined to assail Lee in his intrenchments — an absolutely hopeless undertaking, and sure to result in awful loss of life. The whole army assaulted at early light on the morning of June 3. The struggle was one of the most bloody in all history. During twenty minutes, when it was at its height, the federals lost five hundred men for each minute! Can any thing more horrible be imagined?

No courage could have surpassed that shown by the army of the Potomac, but they might as well have charged the mouth of a volcano. The fighting continued for several hours. The federals were defeated at every point, and had lost ten times as many as the confederates, and every federal soldier knew that the assault never ought to have been made.

Some hours after the awful repulse, General Meade issued orders to the corps commanders to renew the attack without reference to the other troops. When the time came to move not a man stirred. It was not cowardice, but each soldier saw that there was not a particle of hope. When the surprised Meade came to examine the lines in his front, he admitted that they were right. Lee had so strengthened his works that they could no more be taken by assault than could the rock of Gibraltar.

The loss of Grant during the campaign from the Rapidan to the Chickahominy was 60,000 men — greater than all of Lee's army. The latter lost less than one-third as many.

The sacrifice of life sent a shudder through the North. You would think that when every one saw that the Confederacy was near its collapse there would be renewed energy on the part of the unionists, but it was not so. People began to ask more seriously than they had ever done before whether they were not paying more than the Union was worth. It looked as if the army was worn out. The loss of officers was so great that many captains commanded regiments, and majors brigades. You would be surprised could you understand how near the war for the Union came to being given up in the summer of 1864.

Grant saw that it would not do to renew active operations, but he held on to that which he had gained. Counter works were erected, and he threw up a line of intrenchments of unusual strength. An attempt to turn the right flank of the confederates

failed, and a cavalry expedition that sought to cut the confederate communication between Lynchburg and Petersburg came back with the loss of a good many prisoners, and with nothing substantial accomplished.

The weather became extremely hot. A long drought set in, and every movement of the opposing armies was followed by clouds of suffocating dust. The depression throughout the army and the entire North, as you have been told, was great, and many of the most ardent in the cause of the Union were ready to yield.

The slaughter at Cold Harbor had made clear another important truth: Richmond could not be taken by the "overland route." Grant therefore decided to move swiftly upon Petersburg, seize that place, and thus shut off the confederate capital from all communication with the south.

Petersburg is twenty-two miles south of Richmond, and is connected with the south and west by the Weldon and Southside railways. The latter road crosses the Danville line, which is the main avenue between the capital and the Gulf States. You will thus see that if Grant could gain and hold these roads Richmond would become untenable. The army and indeed all the people there would have to surrender or starve to death, and that of course would be the end of the Southern Confederacy.

Grant held his position in front of Lee until June 12, when moving again by the left flank, he crossed the Chickahominy and advanced to City Point. He passed over the James on pontoon bridges and pushed toward Petersburg. Butler, as you will remember, was "bottled up" at Bermuda Hundred.

Grant reached the neighborhood of Petersburg on the 15th of June, and the next day the whole union army was south of the James. Petersburg was attacked at once, but the defenders repulsed every assault, and night ended the struggle.

Next morning when the bright sun rose every eye was turned toward the city, where they saw an amazing sight. Long files of soldiers were marching into the breastworks. Above the forest of gleaming bayonets fluttered the myriad battle flags of the army of Northern Virginia. Lee was there again confronting the advance of the legions of the Union upon Richmond.

General Lee set to work at once to draw a regular line of breastworks on the east and south of the city. He had hardly begun to do so, when Grant fell upon him with such vehemence that the confederates were driven out of their advanced position and compelled to take shelter behind the second line of works. Grant assailed this second line with the same desperate valor, and part were taken, but they were retaken before dark.

The strong line of works closer to the city on which Lee had been engaged were so nearly done by the 18th that he withdrew into them. Within a few hours he was attacked by Grant, who was repulsed. Twice again was the assault renewed, but the federals were driven back each time with great loss.

It was clear that Petersburg could be taken only by a regular siege. The muskets were therefore thrown aside and spades taken up. The multitude of men toiled like beavers, and the federal army was soon intrenched from the river to the Norfolk railway. This done, the left wing began stealing around so as to encompass the whole city.

The advance had to be made with great care, for the confederates knew what it meant. When Richmond should be surrounded, then it would be strangled to death. They were not the men to sit still and allow that to be done.

On the 21st, a powerful federal column was pushed toward the Weldon railway, but General Mahone dashed with his division between the two federal corps, doubled them up, repelled the attack, and when he went back, he took with him a large number of small arms, eight stands of colors, four pieces of artillery and sixteen hundred

EMBARKING COTTON AT SAVANNAH.

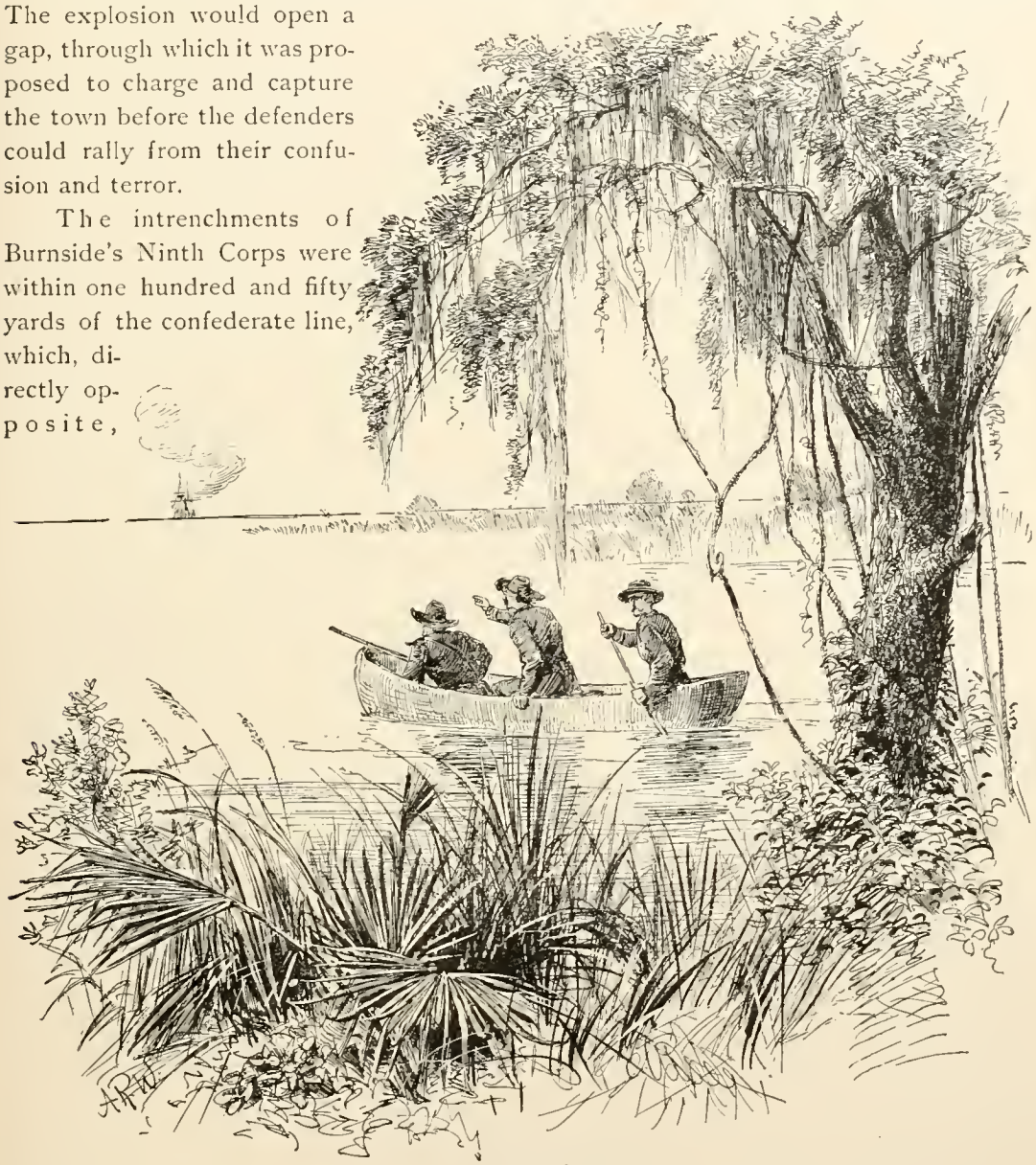
prisoners. The late Senator Mahone was one of the hardest fighters in the war for the Union.

The next day after the cavalry expedition named, Sheridan set out with orders to go from the White House to the camp before Petersburg. He was attacked on his way thither, and lost five hundred men.

All this time, Lee kept strengthening his defenses, until by the 1st of July the federal engineers declared them impregnable against any assault. About this time a

remarkable proposal was made to and accepted by General Grant. Lieutenant-colonel Pleasant, belonging to a Pennsylvania regiment of Burnside's corps, urged that a mine be run under one of the approaches to the confederate intrenchments before Petersburg. The explosion would open a gap, through which it was proposed to charge and capture the town before the defenders could rally from their confusion and terror.

The intrenchments of Burnside's Ninth Corps were within one hundred and fifty yards of the confederate line, which, directly opposite,



GENERAL SHERMAN'S SCOUTS.

formed an angle covered by a fort. It was under this fort that four tons of powder were stowed without any suspicion on the part of the defenders. The vast charge was fired between four and five o'clock on the morning of July 30.

The effect was prodigious. A compact mass of earth rose two hundred feet in air, where it crumbled to fragments and came down to the earth in a shower of dirt. The

thunderous boom was plainly heard in Richmond, and, as had been expected, spread dismay among those in the immediate vicinity. It left a cavity nearly two hundred feet long, sixty feet wide, and thirty feet deep. The federal batteries instantly opened upon those of the enemy, quickly silenced them, and then the assaulting column charged.

But the advance was in a broken fashion, and when the cavern was reached the column sought shelter in it. Other troops were hurried after them, but they too huddled in the yawning chasm or shrank behind the breastworks, from which the confederates had fled in consternation; but seeing the panic-stricken federals in the pit, the gunners returned to their pieces and opened upon them. No words can describe the fearful scene that followed. The huge pit swarmed with terrified white and black soldiers, upon whom the confederates centered a plunging fire until General Mahone was so overcome by the sight that he ordered it stopped. The result of the whole "miserable affair," as Grant called it, was the loss of 4,000 men, of whom 800 were taken prisoners.

You can readily see that since the army of the Potomac was besieging Petersburg, Washington was once more exposed to the danger of an attack by the confederates. The invitation to the enemy to make an advance from that direction was so tempting that it could not be refused.

While Lee was at Cold Harbor, he detached General Early with 8,000 men with orders to attack the federals in the Shenandoah Valley. General Early appeared close to Martinsburg on the 2d of July, and Sigel, of course, left the place, losing some of his stores. Early continued to advance, and Sigel continued to retreat, until across the Potomac, when he took up a position on Maryland Heights.

Early now advanced up the Monocacy into Maryland opposite the heights on which Sigel had intrenched himself. Great alarm was felt in Washington when it became known that a confederate force had once more invaded the North. In a short time, however, re-enforcements were sent to the endangered section, though scattered bodies of confederates appeared here and there and laid waste many neighborhoods in revenge for the desolation Hunter had caused in the Shenandoah Valley.

President Lincoln called upon Pennsylvania, New York and Massachusetts for militia with which to repel the invasion. The soldiers were quickly brought together and sent forward. They were not the kind with which to meet the confederate veterans. So it was that when General Lew Wallace, their commander, was attacked on the 9th of July, at Monocacy Junction, he was routed. His ill-disciplined troops gave way and fled in a panic toward Baltimore, with the confederate cavalry whooping and slashing at their heels.

By this time, as you may well suppose, Washington was in a state of consternation. Early attacked Rockville, only fourteen miles west of Washington, and Colonel Harry Gilmor, the famous confederate cavalry leader, whose home was in Baltimore, cut the communications between that city and Philadelphia. He captured a railway train in which was General Franklin, who having been wounded in the south was on his way north for rest and a change of air. Gilmor's men were worn out from their hard riding and did not keep close watch of the prisoners, who managed to get away.

Early was so elated by his success that he now galloped toward Washington, before which he appeared on the 11th of July, and engaged the batteries of Fort Stevens. You can understand the alarm in the national capital, when in the dusk of evening they saw the flash of the confederate guns and the circling of the horsemen from Lee's army.

General Grant had been communicated with on the first alarm, and he sent a corps from before Petersburg. Re-enforcements had reached Washington when Early began skirmishing before it, and they now sallied out under General Augur and attacked the confederates with great spirit. The latter were speedily defeated and withdrew, leaving a hundred dead and wounded behind.

Early withdrew up the Potomac, crossing it at Edward's Ferry, and then passed through Snicker's Gap to the western side of the Shenandoah. Defeating General Wright, who had been sent in pursuit, Early established his headquarters at Winchester and repelled an attack by Averill, who was forced to seek shelter at Harper's Ferry.

Early had had a taste of invasion, and he tried it again. Crossing the Potomac, on the 29th of July, a force of confederates passed into Maryland and advanced to Chambersburg, Pennsylvania. At that place Gilmor's cavalry demanded 200,000 dollars in gold, which was not brought forth. The city was then set on fire. When Averill, riding hard, reached the town, he found it burning, while the confederate raiders, after some close escapes, reached the southern bank of the Potomac.

These raids were so annoying to the national government that it was determined to put a stop to them. Grant being before Petersburg could not give the matter the personal attention necessary. The departments of western Virginia, Washington and the Susquehanna were united into one division and placed under the command of Sheridan, at whose disposal was a force of 40,000 men.

Early had only about 13,000 troops with which to hold his position at Winchester. You would think that under such circumstances the federals had nothing to fear, but for a time Grant refused to allow any offensive movement on the part of Sheridan through dread of disaster. The commander-in-chief of the union armies fully realized the critical state of the country and he felt that he could afford no more reverses. Finally, he told Sheridan that he might go ahead on condition that he would so desolate the Shenandoah Valley that there would be nothing left to invite invasion.

Early and Sheridan had been watching each other from opposite sides of the Opequan, a small stream that enters the Potomac west of the Shenandoah. Early, who was covering Winchester, sent a division toward Martinsburg so as to threaten the right of the federal line. By doing so he exposed his own right to attack. Sheridan at once crossed the stream and assailed Early. The latter immediately recalled the division sent away and a long and furious engagement followed. At first it was favorable to the confederates, but a timely charge by Sheridan shattered the southern battle line and the rout was complete. Early's army became a wild mob of cavalry, infantry and artillery which scrambled headlong through Winchester with Sheridan's force driving them like so many terrified sheep. General Rhodes of the confederate army was killed and three other general officers wounded. Five pieces of artillery, nine flags and 2,500 prisoners were taken. The confederates had fought well and the losses on the part of

their opponents were also severe. Having driven the enemy through Winchester, the federals were too much exhausted to keep up the pursuit, and Early re-formed his shattered ranks and took position at Fisher's Hill near Strasburg.

Early felt secure in this place, but when attacked by Sheridan on the 21st of September he was routed with heavy loss and forced to retreat still further up the valley. Sheridan followed, sending his cavalry to Staunton, where they destroyed a railway bridge. About this time Early received a re-enforcement of a division from Longstreet's corps, and he intrenched himself at Brown's Gap, in the Blue Ridge Mountains, where he was safe against any attack.

Sheridan now proceeded to carry out the orders of General Grant, to devastate the Shenandoah Valley to such an extent that nothing would be left to tempt invasion. How well he did the fearful task let him tell in his own words: "The whole country from the Blue Ridge to the North Mountain has been rendered untenable for a rebel army. I have destroyed over two thousand barns filled with wheat and hay and farming implements, over seventy mills filled with flour and wheat. I have driven in front of the army over four thousand head of stock, having killed and issued to the troops not less than three thousand sheep; a large number of horses have been obtained."

On the return of Sheridan down the valley, he was closely followed by a confederate force. The latter made an attack and was repulsed. A more important engagement took place at Cedar Creek on the 19th of October. The federals were intrenched on the north bank of that stream, which runs into the Shenandoah, when at daylight the confederates made their attack with great fury. Most of the pickets were captured and the rest, roused from sleep, were driven in headlong confusion back toward Middletown. Early seized eighteen of the federals guns and turned them on the fugitives. At last General Wright, the commander of the federals, succeeded in rallying them, and the flight was checked.

At this time the confederates were in the federal camps, where the sight of food and drink was too tempting to be resisted. They stopped chasing the federals and gave themselves up to feasting, and their enjoyment was such as only famishing men placed in a similar situation can appreciate.

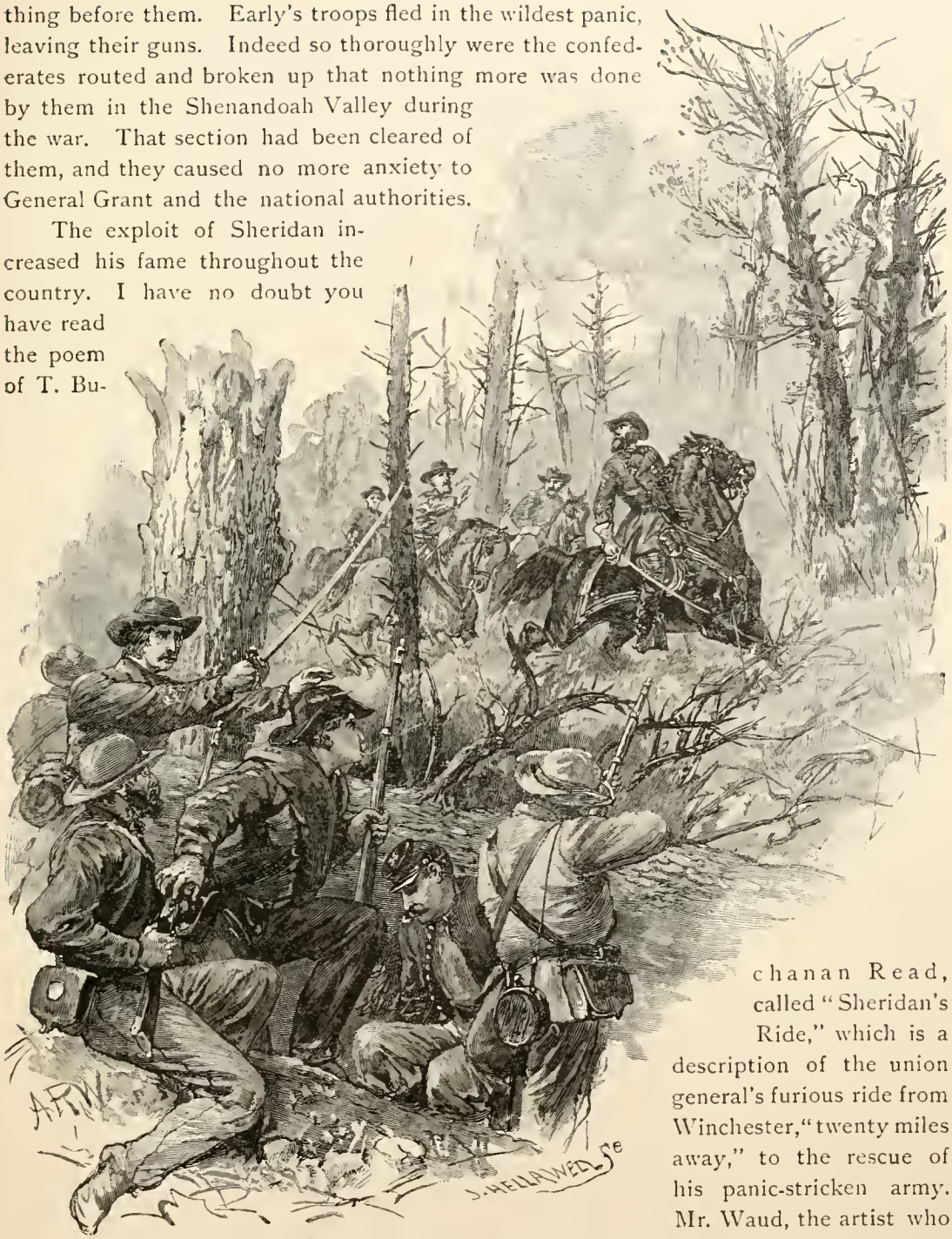
Sheridan was not in this battle. Some time before, believing his army fully safe, he had gone to Washington to consult with the government. He was on his return and had reached Winchester, twenty miles from the army, where he slept the night before the battle. Mounting his horse the next morning to continue his ride, he heard the boom of artillery. He knew at once that a battle was in progress, and spurred his horse to a swift gallop. In the course of an hour or two he began to meet stragglers. He reproved them in his well-known vigorous language, and spurred his horse to a dead run. Many of the stragglers, feeling the magnetism of his example, turned about and followed him. He burst like a meteor among the men whom General Wright was trying to form into line and inspired them all with his own dashing heroism. He was cheered to the echo as he galloped down the line and assured them that they were going right back to retake the camps from the enemy.

He kept his word. Back to Cedar Creek he led his men and they swept every

SHERIDAN'S RIDE.

thing before them. Early's troops fled in the wildest panic, leaving their guns. Indeed so thoroughly were the confederates routed and broken up that nothing more was done by them in the Shenandoah Valley during the war. That section had been cleared of them, and they caused no more anxiety to General Grant and the national authorities.

The exploit of Sheridan increased his fame throughout the country. I have no doubt you have read the poem of T. Buchanan Read, called "Sheridan's Ride," which is a description of the union general's furious ride from Winchester, "twenty miles away," to the rescue of his panic-stricken army. Mr. Waud, the artist who was with the army and made the first drawing which suggested the poem, has drawn our illustration for us which is on page 293.



WOUNDING OF GEN. LONGSTREET BY HIS OWN MEN.

Meanwhile, General Grant held fast to what he had gained in front of Petersburg and was on the watch for some weak spot in the lines through which to force his way. His strongly fortified lines, nearly thirty miles in length, reached from a point near the Weldon railway on his left, across the James River, to the vicinity of Newmarket on his right. Skirmishing and fighting took place almost daily, but Lee, occupying the inner part of this great circle, was able successfully to meet every attack.

When Lee weakened his forces by sending a detachment to Early in the Shenandoah Valley, Grant decided to make an offensive movement. He believed that no more than 8,000 men were guarding the approaches to Richmond from the north-east and a strong detachment was sent in that direction under General Hancock. Lee anticipated the movement, however, and after some sharp fighting the federals were repulsed. To do this, Lee was obliged to withdraw a large part of his men from his right flank, knowing which, Grant dispatched Warren in that direction with the Fifth Corps. The latter secured a position beyond the Weldon railway. Lee attacked and drove them back, but the federals were re-enforced and recovered the ground from which they had been forced and proceeded to fortify themselves. They were again attacked by the confederates, but without success, and on the same day—August 21—Hancock reached the Weldon railway, four miles south of Warren's intrenchments. Four days later A. P. Hill attacked Hancock and obtained possession of Reams Station, compelling Hancock to retreat. The federals, however, held to the Weldon railway and succeeded in connecting it with the center of the army in front of Petersburg. They kept up a continued shelling of Petersburg and the confederate batteries on the James retaliated by firing upon the union gun-boats.

Convinced that only a small part of Lee's army was in the intrenchments on the northern side of the city, Grant ordered Meade to make a feint against his right, while two corps of the army of the James under Butler were to move against the confederate works north of Chaffin's Bluff, opposite Drury's Bluff, on the James. The movement began on the night of September 28, when General Ord, with the Eighteenth Corps, was directed to cross the James at Aiken's Landing, eight miles above Deep Bottom, and to advance at daylight against the works in his front. General Birney, at the same time, was to move with the Tenth Corps on Bermuda Hundred and to cross the river during the night. The detachments were to secure the Newmarket road and unite in front of Richmond.

The plan was carried out, and the outer line of the intrenchments was captured by the two commanders, who prepared to assail the inner line. Before they could do so, the defenders were re-enforced, and the attack was repulsed.

On the 30th of September more of the confederate lines were seized, but the attempt to recapture the works failed. On the 7th the confederates tried to turn the right flank of the federals, but they were finally repulsed. Fighting went on without special result, and Grant extended his lines from opposite Dutch Gap to the Newmarket road. Meade's attempt against the right was kept up for three days, and ended in his securing a position across the Squirrel road parallel with the Weldon railway, after which the confederates withdrew within their main intrenchments.

Grant was always on the alert, and he soon made another attempt to capture Petersburg. Meade was instructed to occupy the Boydton road and the Southside railway, both being to the south-west of the city. Hancock did this on the 27th of October, with such swiftness and secrecy that the enemy knew nothing of the attempt until it was completed. The Second Corps moved around the confederate flank and was carrying out the plan as arranged when Hancock received orders to halt.

Warren and Parke with the Ninth Corps had been ordered to engage the enemy in front, but Parke failed to capture the works against which he was sent, and Warren was directed to form a junction between Hancock's right and Parke's left. The dense woods, the numerous faintly marked roads, and the imperfect knowledge of the section rendered it impossible for Warren to do this. A. P. Hill took advantage of the confusion, and with his usual impetuosity attacked Hancock and Warren, but darkness closed with no advantage to either side. The federals, however, saw that their designs must fail. They retreated across Hatcher's Run and succeeded, after much trouble, in getting back to their own lines.

General Butler had tried at the same time to help by a similar movement on the north side of the James, but he too failed with heavy loss. These completed the important movements made by Grant during the year.

Both sides, as I have said, were growing weary of the struggle. There were many desertions from the federal and confederate armies, but the former could suffer this depletion better than the latter. Despite the enormous numbers under his command, Grant saw the necessity of filling the gaps made by the progress of the war. Writing to Secretary Stanton, he said, "Prompt action in filling our armies will have more effect upon the enemy than a victory over them. They profess to believe, and make their men believe, there is such a party north in favor of recognizing southern independence that the draft can not be enforced. Let them be undeceived."

General Sherman wrote to the same effect from Atlanta, Georgia, and the government, realizing that the collapse of the Southern Confederacy was at hand, strained every nerve to strengthen the armies that from the necessity of the case must deliver the fatal blow.

CHAPTER XXXI.

EVENTS OF 1864. MINOR INCIDENTS.

THERE were other occurrences during this eventful year to which we must give attention.

In the month of February, Congress modified the Enrollment Bill, as it was called. The president was authorized to call into service as many men as might be needed, and when the quotas were not filled drafts were ordered to take place. Those who were enrolled were allowed to furnish substitutes; all citizens between the ages of eighteen and forty-five years were to be enrolled; and commuters were exempted only from the special draft. All males of African descent, between twenty and forty-five, whether citizens or not, were to be enrolled and colored troops were not to be assigned as state troops, but were to be mustered into regiments or companies as United States volunteers.

In the following month, Congress established a bureau of freedmen's affairs. All questions relating to persons of African descent were to be referred to this bureau, which had authority to make regulations for the use and treatment of abandoned plantations. In the course of time a great deal of fraud crept into the organization and the act was repealed.

You were told that Congress passed an act reviving the grade of lieutenant-general, which was conferred on Grant. Some time after a bill passed creating the rank of vice-admiral, of equal grade with that of lieutenant-general in the army. This honor was conferred on Admiral Farragut.

The Fugitive Slave Acts of 1793 and 1850, which had caused so much trouble between the North and South, were repealed by Act of Congress, approved by the president on the 28th of June.

You know what a prodigious expense was caused by the prosecution of the war for the Union. The government could not get along without money, its daily expenses running into millions of dollars. To meet this demand a system of severe and far reaching taxation was devised. The internal revenue law imposed a tax upon every trade and profession, varying according to the supposed profits. Discrimination was made against liquor dealers, shows, lotteries, gift-enterprises and the like. No legal document was valid without a stamp upon it. Those whose professions were not named were obliged to pay a license fee of ten dollars, provided their income amounted to one thousand dollars; nearly every manufactured article that could be thought of was subjected to a special tax, amounting to about five per cent. on the value. Railways, express companies, and similar branches of business were compelled to pay a tax of from two to five per cent. of their gross receipts. All persons having an annual income above a thousand dollars were required to pay a tax on the excess, while the

TROOPS CROSSING TO THE SHENANDOAH VLLLEY. (*See page* 287.)

Pen drawing by W. L. Jumel.

tariff act that went into effect on the 4th of July imposed enormous duties on such articles as are generally considered luxuries. Thus tea was taxed twenty-five cents a pound; sugar from three to five cents; brandies two dollars and fifty cents per gallon, spirituous liquors not named one hundred per cent. on their value; cigars from seventy-five cents to three dollars a pound, and so on.

The steady progress of the union arms led to the passage of an act guaranteeing to those states whose governments had been overthrown or usurped a republican form of government, and authorizing the president to appoint a provisional governor for such states until a regular state government should be established.

To show the giant steps that were taken to prosecute the war, I need only to tell you that on the 1st of February President Lincoln ordered a draft of five hundred thousand men, to begin service on the 10th of March, and to serve for three years or the war. On the 15th of March there was a call for two hundred thousand volunteers; on the 18th of July for five hundred thousand; and on the 20th of December for three hundred thousand.

Authority was given to organize the territory of Montana, and on the last day of October Nevada was admitted into the Union as a state.

Detroit, which you know is close to Canada, was thrown into a panic in October by the rumors that a confederate raid was to be made on that city. Soldiers were called out; artillery was posted on the streets; the steam fire-engines were held ready for use, and all the public buildings strongly guarded. If a band of confederates had really planned such a raid, it was given up in the face of such preparations.

The money-order system, which has proven such a convenience, went into operation in the month of November. The postal-car service—the assortment of mail while on the road—began on the Iowa division of the Chicago and Northwestern railway on the 28th of August. It was next used between New York and Washington.

I have told you in another place that in the North as well as in the South the people had become weary of the war, and it is proper that you should learn something about the different peace negotiations that were put on foot. Most of these attempts were made by parties that had nothing to do with either the United States or confederate government, though the prominence of some gave a dignity to the efforts which otherwise they could not have had.

Colonel James F. Jacques of the 78th Illinois Volunteer Infantry and Mr. J. R. Gilmore, of Massachusetts, in the month of July, obtained an interview with Colonel Ould, confederate commissioner for the exchange of prisoners. General Grant asked and secured a pass from General Lee, which allowed the two gentlemen to pass through the confederate lines. Reaching Richmond on the 17th of July, they sent a letter to Judah P. Benjamin, secretary of state, in which they said that although they had no official character or authority, they were fully possessed of the opinions of the United States as to the adjustment of existing differences, and they believed that a free interchange of views between them and President Davis would bring peace to the two sections.

President Davis gave the interview asked for. The plan of his visitors was that

the question of peace with southern independence, or peace with union, emancipation, no confiscation and universal amnesty should be submitted to the people of the United States, as those states existed before the war, and be by them settled. President Davis reminded his visitors that their proposition was nothing less than that the South should give up all that it had been striving for, and surrender at discretion. In fact, the visit of these two gentlemen was a piece of presumption from which there was never the least prospect of any good result, unless it was the courteous snubbing they received.

About the same time four distinguished gentlemen from the Confederacy, who were staying at a hotel in Canada, just across from Niagara Falls, secured through the aid of Horace Greeley a safe conduct from President Lincoln, which would have allowed them to go to Washington had they chosen to do so. These gentlemen had no authority to treat for peace, but they were high in the confidence of the confederate government, and claimed to know its wishes and views on the question of peace.

The trouble, however, lay in the fact that they had come not to arrange terms for submission, but to treat on the basis of southern independence. Their errand, therefore, came to naught. President Lincoln published a letter in which he made it clear that the only terms he could consider were those looking to a complete restoration of the Union and the extirpation of slavery. At the beginning of the war, he took no such advanced position respecting slavery, but the point had been reached when he saw clearly that freedom and slavery could not live side by side on this continent.

We must not forget that a presidential election took place this year. Mr. Lincoln was asked and consented to accept a second nomination, though he had gone through sufferings and trials enough to wear out any man. It would have been strange had he been without rivals in his own party. There were some that urged the nomination of Secretary Chase, of the treasury, and no doubt the gentleman himself was anxious to receive the nomination. The extreme abolitionists were not satisfied with Mr. Lincoln. They called a convention in Cleveland on the 31st of May, and nominated General Fremont for the presidency, and General Cochrane for the vice-presidency.

The regular republican convention met in Baltimore on the 7th of June. It declared in its platform that the war for the Union should be vigorously pressed to the end; that an amendment should be added to the constitution in order totally to abolish slavery; that President Lincoln and his measures had deserved their confidence; that the government was bound to insist that the laws of war in their protective operation should be applied equally to white and to black soldiers; and that foreign immigration should be encouraged. Among other declarations was a clear threat against France for the part she had taken in placing the Austrian archduke Maximilian on a throne in Mexico. The platform in its essentials was quite similar to that adopted a short time before in Cleveland. Mr. Lincoln was renominated for the presidency and Andrew Johnson of Tennessee for the vice-presidency.

The national democratic convention was held in Chicago on the 29th of August. In the ranks of this powerful party, were those that were known as "war" and as "peace" democrats. Their respective names will tell you their political beliefs. General McClellan was the candidate of the former, and Horatio Seymour of New

York of the latter. A sort of compromise was finally agreed upon by which McClellan was nominated for the presidency and George H. Pendleton of Ohio for the vice-presidency.

The democratic platform condemned the government for its arbitrary course during the war, and called for a cessation of hostilities that a convention of the states might be held with a view to reconstruction. It declared in effect that the prosecution of the war had been a failure, and denounced the open disregard of state rights by the administration.

It was only a short time after the holding of this convention that news reached the

THE JAMES RIVER AND COUNTRY NEAR RICHMOND.

North of the fall of Atlanta. This, as you can readily understand, intensified the war feeling. Indeed McClellan, on the 8th of September, thought it wise to address a letter to his committee in which he declared that the one great question was the re-establishment of the Union in all its integrity. This letter was an honor to McClellan, but if he had ever had any chances of election, they were destroyed forever by it. Before long, Fremont withdrew from the campaign, and there could be no doubt of the result.

McClellan received the electoral votes of New Jersey, Delaware, and Kentucky,

twenty-one in all, while Lincoln was given the electoral votes of twenty-two states, two hundred and thirteen in all.

There could be no mistake as to the meaning of the election.

Despite the discouragements and the low ebb of hope, the vast majority of the

PLAN OF PETERSBURG AND VICINITY, SHOWING THE CONFEDERATE AND FEDERAL FORTS.

Names of Union Forts around Petersburg.

A. Fort McGilvery.
B. " Steadman.
C. " Hascall.
D. " Morton.
E. " Meikle.
F. " Rice.
G. " Sedgwick.
H. " Davis.
I. " Prescott.
K. " Alex. Hayes.
L. Fort Hnward.
M. " Wadsworth.
N. " Dushane.
O. " Davison.
P. " McMahon.
Q. " Stevenson.
R. " Blaisdel.
S. " P. Kelley.
T. " Bross.

Forts on the Prolongation of the Lines West of the Weldon Railroad.

A. Fort Keene.
B. " Urmston.
C. " Conahey.
D. " Fisher.
E. " Welch.
F. " Gregg.
G. Fort Wheaton.
H. " Sampson.
I. " Cummings.
K. " Emory.
L. " Siebert.
M. " Clarke.

Forts protecting City Point.

O. Fort Abbott.
P. " Craig.
Q. " Graves.
R. " McKeen.
S. Fort L. O. Morris.
T. " Merriam.
U. " Gould.
V. " Porter.

Confederate Forts around Petersburg.

a. Colquit's salient.
b. Pegram's battery.
c. Reeves' salient.
d. Fort Mahone.
e. " New Orleans.
f. " Lee.

North would not consent to any abandonment of the efforts to restore the Union and to destroy slavery. During the month of October, when there could be no doubt of the result of the pending election, the confederate congress published a manifesto addressed to foreign courts, in which they said that all they asked was freedom from interference with their internal peace and prosperity, or in other words, the recognition of their independence by the United States, which was the very issue of the war.

Great Britain and France had shown in many ways their sympathy for the Southern Confederacy, but inasmuch as they had refused to intervene when its prospects were bright, they were not likely to do so now, when every sign pointed to its downfall.

The confederate congress convened on the 7th of November. The message of the president showed that he felt the critical condition of his country. Of course he assumed all the hope he could. He spoke of the successes of the confederate armies beyond the Mississippi, though as you know they took place in the spring, and he made light of the triumphs of Sherman.

There was one serious truth, however, which he could not hide, viz: the urgent need of more soldiers. He said that there were altogether too many exemptions from the conscription act. He referred to another matter about which leading minds in the South had been exercised for a long time: that was the employment of their negroes as soldiers. It may well be doubted whether the slaves even in their ignorance could have been persuaded to fight against the northern armies. Indeed, President Davis did not recommend their enlistment as soldiers, but he advised the creation of a force of 40,000 black men to act as teamsters, pioneers and assistants. He thought the hour might come when it would be advisable to use them as soldiers, but he did not think that time had yet arrived.

The question of arming the negroes was discussed in both branches of the confederate congress. No action was then taken, but it may as well be said that it passed in the March following. The bill was shorn of several wise recommendations made by General Lee, and it never accomplished any thing.

The desperate straits of the Confederacy were shown by the question asked in many places whether the time had not come for a military dictatorship. President Davis was a man of ability, but he had his weaknesses, and there were many that were dissatisfied with his administration of affairs.

I must not forget to mention certain incidents that caused much feeling. The town of St. Albans, Vermont, as you may know, is within fifteen miles of Canada. There were a great many confederates at that time in the provinces, as there are to-day a great many defaulters and criminals fleeing from justice in the United States. On the 19th of October, a party of armed confederates came down into St. Albans, robbed the bank of a large sum of money, stole several horses, burned a hotel and fired into a crowd of people. They then rode back to Canada, where thirteen of them were arrested and confined at St. John's.

The legal proceedings that followed were lengthy, and resulted in the discharge of all the prisoners, on the ground that the warrant for their arrest was not under the hand

of the governor-general of Canada, as the law required. You can readily see how flimsy the excuse was, and can understand the indignation it caused in the United States.

Major-general Dix was in command of the department of the east. He issued an order that in such cases as I have mentioned, the marauders should be shot down if possible while in the commission of their crimes, but if necessary they were to be pursued into Canada and captured, no matter where they might take refuge, and under no circumstances were they to be surrendered, but to be sent to his headquarters for trial.

Had the orders of General Dix been carried out we could not have escaped a war with Great Britain, for that nation would never submit to such an invasion of its territory. The cabinet at Washington saw the peril and disavowed the order of the general, while the Canadian authorities took steps to prevent any more outrages, and there were no more.

Another disagreeable incident arose from a subscription amounting to over $80,000, which was taken up in England for the relief of confederate prisoners in the federal places of confinement. Lord Wharncliffe was chairman of the committee, and asked the national government for permission to send an agent to distribute the money that had been collected by the British sympathizers. The reply of Secretary Seward to this insolent request was a biting piece of sarcasm. He said the American public were well aware that while the United States had ample means for the support of its prisoners the latter were suffering no privation that appealed for relief to charity either at home or abroad. At the same time the American people would reflect that the sum collected in the name of humanity was only a small part of the profits which the contributors had derived from the insurgents, by exchanging with them arms and munitions of war for the production of slave labor. The secretary added that the sum so ostentatiously offered was not too generous pay for the desolation which a civil war, promoted and protected by British subjects, had spread through the states. As you can well believe that was the last that was heard of Lord Wharncliffe and his relief fund.

President Lincoln's annual message was delivered to Congress on the 6th of December. Naturally it was full of elation over the great progress made by the armies during the past year. He said that we had more men than when the war began; the armies were not exhausted nor in the process of exhaustion; they were gaining strength continually, and if necessary could continue the war indefinitely. He stated what every one knew was the truth, that it was idle to attempt any communication with the confederate leader, since he would listen to nothing but southern independence, to which under no circumstances would the North consent.

The report of the secretary of the treasury, which accompanied the message, was one that could not fail to cause serious thought on the part of all. It was estimated that the debt at the close of the fiscal year would be $2,645,320,682. The daily expenditures amounted to more than two and a half million dollars.

You know that the price of gold during this year reached the highest point ever known in this country. In the month of July, it was at a premium of 285, or, as I have explained, a paper dollar was worth only about thirty-five cents in gold. The premium fell somewhat toward the close of the year.

CHAPTER XXXII.

EVENTS OF 1865. MOVEMENTS TO THE SOUTH OF RICHMOND.

AFTER what has been told, you would hardly think that any thing more would be said about peace between the leaders north or south until after some decisive operations, but the most important step of all was taken early in January of this year.

Three commissioners, among whom were Alexander H. Stephens, vice-president of the Confederacy, and Senator Hunter, were charged with power to arrange with federal agents the terms on which peace could be concluded. The preliminary discussions resulted in nothing, and finally President Lincoln and Secretary Seward went together to Fortress Monroe, where the previous meetings had taken place. It was noticeable that the confederate commissioners were cheered by the union soldiers, as they passed between the lines. They knew the errand of these men, and brave as were the boys in blue and those in gray, they were eager to shake hands and forget their quarrels—or rather the quarrels of others, for there was no real difference between them.

As before, the conference brought no result, because the positions of the respective parties were just what they had been all along.

We have now, it may be said, but a single campaign to consider: that is the movement against Richmond. The resistance in the other parts of the Confederacy was of no account. There were but two armies left, the one under Lee at Petersburg, and the other under J. E. Johnston to the south of Richmond.

The confederate congress, February 5, 1865, created General Lee commander-in-chief of all the confederate forces. One of his first acts was to restore Johnston to the command of the army that was still confronting Sherman, and which included all the troops in Georgia, South Carolina and Florida.

At the opening of the year, Beauregard was at Augusta on the Savannah River trying to rake together from the surrounding country enough troops to offer opposition to the advance of Sherman. After all his efforts he was able to get only a few thousand. He urged that the garrisons from Charleston and Wilmington should be given to him, but for a time the confederate government would not consent.

After the death of Stuart, Wade Hampton succeeded to the command of the cavalry and he and D. H. Hill gave Beauregard what aid they could, but that, while effective at times, was not enough to stay the sweep of the northern army.

You remember that Sherman took possession of Savannah in the latter part of December, 1864. When ready to leave that point on his march northward, he had 60,000 infantry, 10,000 cavalry and a corresponding amount of artillery. He left a detachment at Savannah, and with the greater part of his force set out for Goldsborough, North Carolina. In order to mislead the enemy he made feints against Charleston on his right and Augusta on his left.

The march northward began on the 1st of February. For a time it was a dismal tramp indeed. The lands over which they plodded in the middle of winter were flooded, and the confederate cavalry had done their best to ruin the roads and bridges. There was a vast amount of property destroyed by the federals, and especially in South Carolina, the cradle of secession, little consideration was shown. The distinguished author, William Gilmore Simms, lived some miles from Columbia, the capital. He had the finest library in the south, containing more than 10,000 volumes. He told me that finding his home was near the line of Sherman's march, he moved to Columbia with his family till he went by. After the army had passed, he came back to see whether any thing had been disturbed.

EXPLOSION OF MINE BEFORE PETERSBURG.

"The surrounding landmarks," he said, "enabled me to locate the site of my home, but all that remained was a heap of ashes. The pianos had been chopped to pieces and

used as kindling wood with which to start the fire. All that was left of my library were several hundred letters that I had intrusted to a neighbor."

The confederates were forced back from the line of the Salkahatchie behind the Edisto at Branchville, where they burned several bridges. Sherman continued to advance, and, on the 16th of February, received the surrender of Columbia. It had been occupied by Wade Hampton, and was burned on the following night. Hampton insisted that the place was fired by Sherman's men, while Sherman was as positive that the conflagration resulted from the firing by Hampton of a large quantity of cotton and lint stored in the town, blazing fragments of which were carried a great distance by the high wind then prevailing.

The left wing of Sherman's army under Slocum reached Winnsborough on the 21st of February, with Kilpatrick and his cavalry behind. The latter moved on Lancaster, so as to keep up the impression that Sherman intended to advance on Charlotte, North Carolina, whither Beauregard and all the confederate cavalry had withdrawn.

General Hardee had a garrison of 11,000 at Charleston. On the night of February 17, the confederates set fire to the city, preferring that it should be destroyed rather than fall into the hands of those who had tried for so long a time to capture it. The government stores, the railway stations and the iron-clads in the harbor were blown up; and the guns on the ramparts were burst. Charleston, where the first ordinance of secession was passed, where the flag of the Union was first fired upon, where the United States government was defied, after withstanding the most determined assaults against it, had fallen at last, and was now one mass of roaring flame kindled by her own defenders when they retreated before the coming conquerors, whose tread was already heard.

General Gilmore entered Charleston the next morning, and his soldiers did what they could to put out the fire. Only a small part of the city, however, could be saved, and the flags that were run up floated over only the ruins of the fort.

Wilmington, North Carolina, had been one of the most important cities of the Confederacy. The blockade-runners that managed to dodge in and out of the place, despite the watchfulness of the union fleet, brought valuable supplies for the army. Fort Fisher, a strong work, guarded the mouth of Cape Fear River. General Butler had tried to take it in December, but failed. Then General Alfred Terry captured the fort on the 15th of January. The garrison joined the army of Johnston to help in the vain effort to stay the advance of Sherman.

The latter, after leaving Winnsborough, turned to the east toward Cheraw on the Great Pedee and the terminus of the railway to Charleston. His supplies were running low, and since nothing could be procured in the desolate country through which he was passing, it was necessary that he should open communications with the sea. Chilling rain was continually falling, and the roads were so soft with icy mud and ooze, that in many places the troops were obliged to make long causeways over which to drag the wagons. Marching could not have been more difficult, but the veterans were used to all manner of privations, and they pushed cheerily on.

Cheraw was reached on the 2d of March, and Sherman stayed there several days, sending out detachments of cavalry to destroy the railways within reach. There were

Attack on Charleston, S. C.

ATTACK ON CHARLESTON

many sharp fights with the confederate cavalry, but the latter were obliged to fall back. Having crossed the Great Pedee on the 6th of March, Sherman advanced toward Fayetteville.

With a view of separating the infantry under Hardee from the cavalry under Wade Hampton, Kilpatrick divided his force into three detachments and on the night of March 8, took position on the roads by which he expected the enemy to advance. By some means Hampton learned the purpose of the cavalry leader, and gathering all his cavalry, he launched them against a single division of the federals.

The assault was a surprise to the latter, who were driven back in confusion. Kilpatrick bounded out of his tent with no garments on except those in which he had been sleeping. I have heard him say that for three hundred yards there wasn't a horse in either army that could have made better time than he did, with the shouting troopers at his heels.

The plucky little fellow, however, succeeded in rallying his flying men and held the enemy in check until the arrival of a brigade of infantry, when the confederates in turn were driven back. The federal columns were soon concentrated at Fayetteville, to which place supplies were sent from Wilmington by means of the river.

Sherman resumed his advance on the 15th of March, and found Hardee strongly intrenched at a point where the road turns off toward Goldsborough, by way of Bentonville. The confederates were immediately attacked and driven off. The whole body withdrew toward Smithfield, where Hardee effected a junction with Johnston. Inasmuch as the latter had been joined by the fragments of the army from Columbia, by the garrison of Augusta, and by Cheatham's corps from the west, it will be seen that he had a respectable force, and one that was sure to give Sherman a deal of trouble. The federal leader was well aware of this, and his advance was made with greater caution than before. Two old antagonists—masters in the art of war—were pitted against each other, and the contest was of a brilliant character.

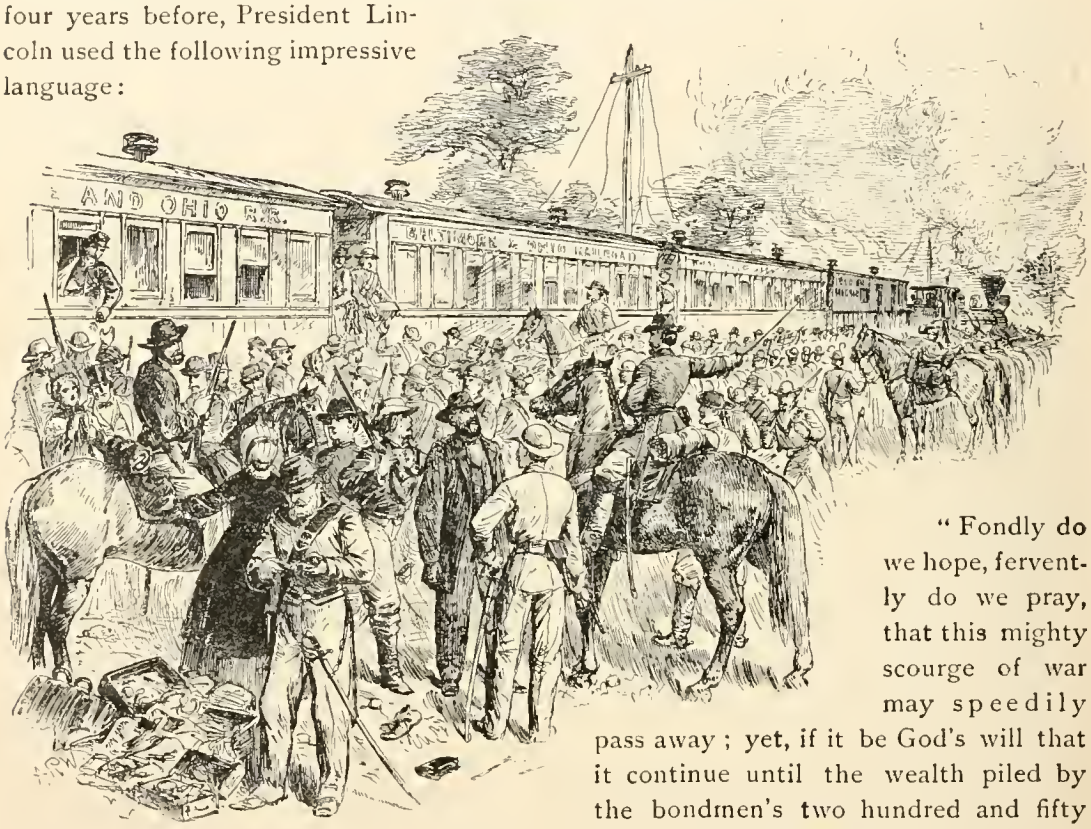
Johnston moved swiftly from Smithfield, without his heavy guns, hoping to crush Sherman's left flank before it could be relieved. But Sherman had been expecting for several days such a movement, and was prepared. Fighting lasted all day on the 19th, and Slocum, commanding the left wing, repulsed six attacks made with the impetuosity so often shown by the confederates. Holding their ground, the federals hastily intrenched themselves, and, having received re-enforcements during the night, they were in good form the next day.

The armies remained inactive during the day, but the battle was resumed on the 21st by the federals, and severe fighting lasted for several hours. In the end, the confederates were driven toward Smithfield and Sherman remained master of the field. Schofield, whose advance had been delayed by repeated attacks, now joined Sherman, and on the 21st of March the army entered Goldsborough. Feeling himself master of the situation, Sherman turned over the command of the army for the time to General Schofield, while he went north to consult with General Grant. He reached his headquarters on the 27th, and these two great men held a long consultation over the military situation.

It was the first chance that Sherman had been given for months to learn all the "news," and you need not be told how deeply he was interested in what fell from the lips of the commander of the union armies.

The forces of Sherman and Grant were now so near each other that they could unite whenever it was thought necessary in order to prosecute any campaign fixed upon by the leaders.

There were interesting events of another nature that were going on at this time. An extraordinary session of the United States senate was called for the 4th of March, and President Lincoln was inaugurated for his second term of office on that day. In contrasting the position of the Union with its position just four years before, President Lincoln used the following impressive language:



CAPTURE OF RAILWAY TRAIN BY COL. HARRY GILMOR.

"Fondly do we hope, fervently do we pray, that this mighty scourge of war may speedily pass away; yet, if it be God's will that it continue until the wealth piled by the bondmen's two hundred and fifty years of unrequited toil shall be sunk, and until every drop of blood drawn by the lash shall be paid by another drawn by the sword,—as was said three thousand years ago, so still it must be said that the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether. With malice toward none, with charity for all, with firmness in the right, let us strive on to finish the work we are in, to bind up the nation's wounds, to care for those who shall have borne the battle, and for their widows and orphans, to do all which may achieve and cherish a just and lasting peace among ourselves and with all nations."

On the 1st of February, Congress passed the act which abolished slavery throughout

the whole United States. By this time, the condition of the Southern Confederacy was hopeless. In his message to the confederate congress on the 15th of March, President Davis used these words: "The country is environed with perils, which it is our duty calmly to contemplate, as thus alone can the measures necessary to avert the threatened calamity be wisely devised and efficiently enforced. Richmond is now threatened and

GENERAL SHERIDAN AT CEDAR CREEK.

in greater danger than heretofore during the war. No choice remains but to continue the contest to its final issue. The people of the Confederacy can have but little love for him who supposes it possible they would ever consent to purchase, at the cost of degradation and slavery, permission to live in a country garrisoned by their own negroes, and governed by officers sent by the conqueror to rule over them."

CHAPTER XXXIII.

EVENTS OF 1865. SURRENDER OF LEE.

ON the 5th of February, General Grant resumed his operations against Petersburg and Richmond, by an attempt to turn the confederate right. Petersburg and the works had been bombarded for several days, and the Second and Fifth Corps with Gregg's cavalry divisions moved against the works at Hatcher's Run. The attack was repulsed, but several miles additional of country were secured, and several observatories were put up, from which the federals were able to inspect an area into which as yet they had not dared to venture. The next morning Pegram's division moved down the right bank of the stream to reconnoiter, but it was attacked by the Fifth Corps and driven back. In this fight General Pegram was killed.

Sheridan soon after destroyed the Richmond and Lynchburg railway, and then broke the locks of the James River canal. Sheridan meant to join Sherman's army at Goldsborough, but a sudden rise in the James prevented, and on the 24th of March he united his forces to those of the army operating on the James.

At this time Lee's army numbered less than thirty-five thousand men. General Longstreet, who had come back to his post some time before, commanded the left wing north and south of the James ; A. P. Hill the right, reaching from Petersburg to Hatcher's Run, and General Gordon the center at Petersburg. The cavalry, so far as they could, covered the flanks. The line, thin and weak, was forty miles in length.

The small army of Lee had to do picket and guard duty and cover this entire stretch of ground, shifting continually from one duty to the other, for there were no reserves to relieve them. Sherman with his powerful army was at Goldsborough, only one hundred and fifty miles away, and was pushing directly northward on Lee's line of retreat. Johnston was making the best fight he could, but was obliged to keep falling back before the resistless advance of Sherman's legions. When Sherman should unite with Grant, the latter would have two hundred thousand under his immediate control. The army of Lee if re-enforced by that of Johnston would be about one-fourth that number. But Grant did not mean to let Johnston unite with Lee.

Lee's plan was to evacuate the line then held by his army, fall back toward Danville, unite with Johnston and take a strong position in the interior. Johnston had received orders to fall back before Sherman and to maneuver with his left so as to bring it in communication with Lee's right. A large supply of provisions was ordered to be sent to Amelia Court House, west of Petersburg, to which point Lee meant to retreat.

The Cox road connects Petersburg with Amelia Court House, and it was by this road that Lee proposed to march. The extension of the federal left had now reached Hatcher's Run, which was dangerously close to the Cox road. In fact it was so close that Lee felt he did not dare to withdraw until he had opened the path by driving back that

part of the line. He decided that the way to do this was by attacking Grant's right, and he fixed upon Fort Steadman as the point of assault.

Fort Steadman was the second work from the extreme right of the federal defenses and was close to the south bank of the Appomattox, and less than two hundred yards from the federal breastworks. In the faint light of the early morning of March 25, Gordon's two divisions emerged like specters from their works, dashed across the open space, flung aside the abatis, leaped into Fort Steadman and secured the work before the garrison understood what was going on. The captured guns were turned on the nearest federal works and several batteries were abandoned by the frightened gunners.

No opening could have been more brilliant, but Gordon did not receive the support that had been promised. The attack on Fort Haskell on his right was so weak that it was easily repulsed; other troops refused to advance at the critical moment or huddled into the breastworks. The federals concentrated their fire on Fort Steadman, and Gordon's position in some respects was similar to that of the federals caught in the mine in front of Petersburg. So terrible was the converging fire that two thousand confederates threw down their arms and surrendered, and Gordon with a few others ran back to his own works, pursued by the federals, who established themselves in a position more advanced than before.

The confederate army had suffered not only a repulse but a loss of three thousand men—one that it could ill afford to bear. Nothing had been accomplished, and Grant still clung to Hatcher's Run close to the Cox road, over which Lee wanted to retreat and join General Johnston.

It was only two days after that Sherman arrived at City Point on the James River to consult with Grant. Some time later these two leaders, with General Meade, General Ord and President Lincoln, held a long conference in front of Petersburg and considered the steps necessary for extinguishing the Confederacy. It was clear that the armies of Lee and Johnston must not be allowed to unite, for if they did their strength would be such that by falling back in the interior the fight might be kept up for an indefinite time.

To prevent this junction, Grant proposed to attack Lee at the earliest moment, and to do it in such force that it could not be resisted. The 29th of March was fixed upon for a simultaneous assault at many different points. It would seem that this could be effected, for Sheridan, having cleared the Shenandoah Valley of all confederates, had joined Grant, who had now more than a hundred and fifty thousand men under his immediate control.

The movement began as arranged on the 29th, when the Second Corps, under Humphreys and the Fifth under Warren arrived in front of the confederate breastworks near Hatcher's Run. That same night Sheridan was ordered to act with the main army, instead of striking at the enemy's lines of communication. The next day it rained so hard that nothing was done, but Lee concentrated a number of his brigades opposite Humphreys and Warren.

On the 31st, Lee assailed the federals with such fury that a part of Warren's force

was driven back with great slaughter; but beyond and behind the federals there rose such a forest of bayonets that Lee knew it would be destruction to advance. He therefore fell back to his works.

Lee now turned on Sheridan, who had taken position in front of Dinwiddie Court House at Five Forks. Sheridan was driven back, but his men rallied, and taking their assailants in flank, compelled them to retire. At night the federals had regained all the ground lost, and at some places they were futher advanced than before. That night a part of Warren's corps was sent to the support of Sheridan. They arrived at daybreak, just in time to see the confederate cavalry in full flight. Sheridan was now strong enough to take the offensive, and he did so, driving the confederates in confusion toward Petersburg.

On the 1st of April, Grant began a cannonade along his whole line. The corps of Wright, Parke and Ord were ordered to attack Petersburg the next morning. At that time Lee's right wing had been destroyed, and he was left with only the fragments of Gordon's and A. P. Hill's divisions. Longstreet still faced his foe and no troops could be taken from the north side.

At daylight, on Sunday, April 2, the federals advanced upon the confederate works, and in a few minutes the flame of battle ran along the whole line from the Appomattox to Hatcher's Run. General Gordon, holding the left on the Appomattox, resisted with his usual heroism the attack by Parke and the Ninth Corps, but he was compelled to fall back within his works. The left of A. P. Hill, on the right of Gordon, was the weakest part of the confederate position, because the infantry for its defense had been withdrawn the day before, and it was now held only by the artillerists and a thin picket line. When, therefore, the Sixth Corps assailed it, they had little difficulty in capturing the works, including the batteries and artillerists. This had hardly been accomplished when the Second Corps routed out the small confederate forces from there doubts at Hatcher's Run. Then they connected with the Sixth and Twenty-fourth corps and the federal army had its folds almost entirely around Petersburg.

There were now left only two strong works in the hands of the confederates. These were forts Alexander and Gregg, commanding the ground over which the federals must advance to reach the river. Fort Alexander was close to the federal line and it was overrun and captured with a hurrah.

This left only Fort Gregg, and for a time the fate of the army of Northern Virginia depended on that; for if it could not be held until Lee had time to take a new position, his army was doomed.

The garrison numbered two hundred and fifty, made up of the Fourth Maryland battery, with two three-inch rifles and thirty men, a body of dismounted artillery drivers, Virginians and Louisianians, carrying muskets, a part of Harris's Mississippi Brigade and a few North Carolinians, all under the command of Captain Chew of the Maryland battery.

Fort Alexander having fallen, General Ord immediately sent Gibbon's division to storm Fort Gregg. It charged in fine order, but within fifty yards received such a murderous volley that it fell back. This repulse was so admirably made that the

thousands of confederates who were watching broke into ringing cheers, though they could not send a musket to the help of the little band of heroes.

A second charge was made and repulsed, and then a third, but the fourth prevailed. The federals swept over and into the works and found that out of the two hundred and

THE PEACE COMMISSIONERS.

fifty comprising the garrison, only thirty were unhurt. All the rest were killed or wounded. The fort had been held for several hours, and for the time the confederate army was saved.

The confederate line was short but strong, reaching directly around Petersburg,

with the right flank extending to the river above, and the left resting on the same stream below the city. This line was assaulted many times by the federals without success. At last Heth's division, under General A. P. Hill, charged the Ninth Corps on the federal left, near the river, in the hope of recovering ground. The movement was executed with great dash and heroism, but the federals were re-enforced and they held their position.

In this fight, Lieutenant-general A. P. Hill was killed. It seems strange that he and Stuart, after fighting so long, should meet their death almost at the very close of hostilities.

That day was Sunday. Jefferson Davis was sitting in his pew at church when a messenger hurriedly entered, called him out, and handed him a telegram. It was from General Lee, and made known the startling truth that his outer lines had been forced and that he could hold Petersburg but a few hours longer. His intention was to withdraw from Petersburg that night at eight o'clock. He told President Davis to make every thing ready for the authorities to leave Richmond, unless he should send another message advising the contrary.

Darkness came, and Lee and his scant and weary army still held Petersburg, but as he had said in his message to the president of the confederate states, he could stay but a few hours longer. He must retreat or he and his soldiers were doomed.

No further message was sent to Jefferson Davis, and the news spread that the union soldiers would soon be in Richmond. The president, members of his cabinet and the leading citizens made hasty preparations, and before it was too late left the city by train for Charlotte, North Carolina. But thousands could not get away, and they awaited the coming of the conquerors. There was no longer any law. The wildest rioting took place in the streets, which were lit up by the glare of the burning government buildings and storehouses, to which the torch had been applied before the departure of the chief officers of theConfederacy. Dram shops were burst open and scores of intoxicated men reeled hither and thither, plundering wherever the chance presented and helping to make the scene one of the most dreadful that the mind can picture. Continued explosions shook the earth, while the crimson glow that lit up the heavens extended many miles in every direction.

General Weitzel, occupying the federal works to the north of Richmond, learned of its abandonment the same evening. He approached the city at daylight, and, meeting with no opposition, entered the streets. The scenes could not fail to impress his veterans, accustomed though they were to all the experiences of war. The smoking buildings, the evidences of the wild scenes of the hours of darkness, and the proofs of suffering were on every hand.

The news of the fall of Richmond was telegraphed at once to Washington. The next day President Lincoln arrived in the city and was quartered in the house belonging to Jefferson Davis, which was then used as the military headquarters. Martial law was proclaimed for the time, and the people were advised to remain in their houses and to avoid all public meetings or assemblages on the streets.

At the same time strict orders were issued for the government of the victorious

soldiery. Pillaging was forbidden under the severest penalties. The federals were warned against using any gestures or words that would wound the feelings of those around them. It is creditable that the troops showed such consideration toward those who had so long fought them.

But though Richmond had fallen, General Lee and his gaunt army had not yet surrendered. They had beaten back the union legions many a time, and no men since the world began had shown greater heroism than they; but the end was at hand.

General Lee on the fateful Sunday found every line of retreat closed except one: that was the route westward. Even that route was almost within the grasp of the enemy, who was steadily stealing toward it. The Fifth federal corps was at Sutherland's Station, ten miles west of Petersburg, on a line parallel with the one over which Lee must pass, while Sheridan and his strong cavalry and infantry force encamped the next night ten miles further west.

The darkness settled over the city, the earth trembled with the boom of cannon and exploding magazines, and the glare of the heavens was like that of Richmond at the same hour. It was near midnight. and the streets were still crimsoned with the glow, when the confederates began to leave their trenches and steal out toward the river. By three o'clock all had left the city, and the Petersburg force had reached the north side of the Appomattox. Tramping northward to Chesterfield Court House, they were joined by the division that had held the front of Bermuda Hundred. The rest of the troops on the Richmond side were drawn in and the retreat westward began.

Grant showed wonderful energy in the pursuit, but by the time he got the machinery of his army in motion, the confederate army was sixteen miles away. Knowing that a retreat was intended, the union commander had been making his preparations for some hours before he learned that his antagonist was no longer in Petersburg. Leaving a garrison in the city, Grant hurried the army of the James, under General Ord, along the line of the Southside railway to Burkesville Junction, while Sheridan, with the Fifth Corps and his cavalry, hastened to the Danville and Richmond road just north of Burkesville. If you will glance at the map you will see that although Lee had sixteen miles the start, he was following a longer line, and there was every reason to believe that his pursuers would be able to shut him off from all chance of joining Johnston, and compel him to surrender or take refuge in the mountains.

Lee in his flight was subjected to exasperating trials. In the first place, the fugitive authorities in Richmond had turned over to him a wagon train thirty miles long, with instructions to take the best care of it. It was a great drag to him, but he did the best he could, and crossing the Appomattox at Goode's Bridge, he arrived at Amelia Court House, thirty-eight miles west of Petersburg, on the 4th of April.

You may recall that Lee had issued orders some days before, when he had settled on the line of retreat, for a train of supplies to be sent him at Amelia Court House. His soldiers were in rags and on the point of starvation. They had been living on a

few grains of corn apiece for several days, but were cheered by the promise that they would soon have provisions in abundance.

The train loaded with food reached Amelia Court House on Sunday afternoon, April 2. There the officer in charge was met by an order to bring the train without delay to Richmond, as the cars were needed for transporting the public and private property. The officer interpreted the order to mean that not only the train but its contents were required, a conclusion that was entirely wrong. Accordingly, without opening a single car, the whole train steamed on to Richmond. There the stores were carefully unloaded, but helped only to swell the bonfire that was kindled that night in the confederate capital.

This blow was the most fearful that the army of Northern Virginia had yet received, and it had been struck by its own friends. Lee flamed with indignation, but suppressing his tempestuous rage as best he could, he sent out detachments to hunt for food and forage. They spent that day and the following one in the search, and then came back empty-handed, for they had been hunting for that which did not exist.

This delay of Lee gave Grant an opportunity which he pushed with the same prodigious vigor that he had shown from the first. By straining every nerve, Sheridan reached Jetersville on the same day, and only a few hours after Lee arrived at Amelia Court House. This strong union force, therefore, was only seven miles to the southwest of the confederate line of retreat.

Let me urge you to follow carefully on the map the movements of the two armies, for you have now reached one of the most important epochs in the history of our country.

It had become impossible for Lee to get to Burkesville, for a force fully equal to his own was intrenched in the road, so he pushed west toward Farmville. That town was thirty-five miles away, but it was in a hilly country, and if he could get that far, he had reason to believe he could reach the mountains beyond, where a successful pursuit was out of the question.

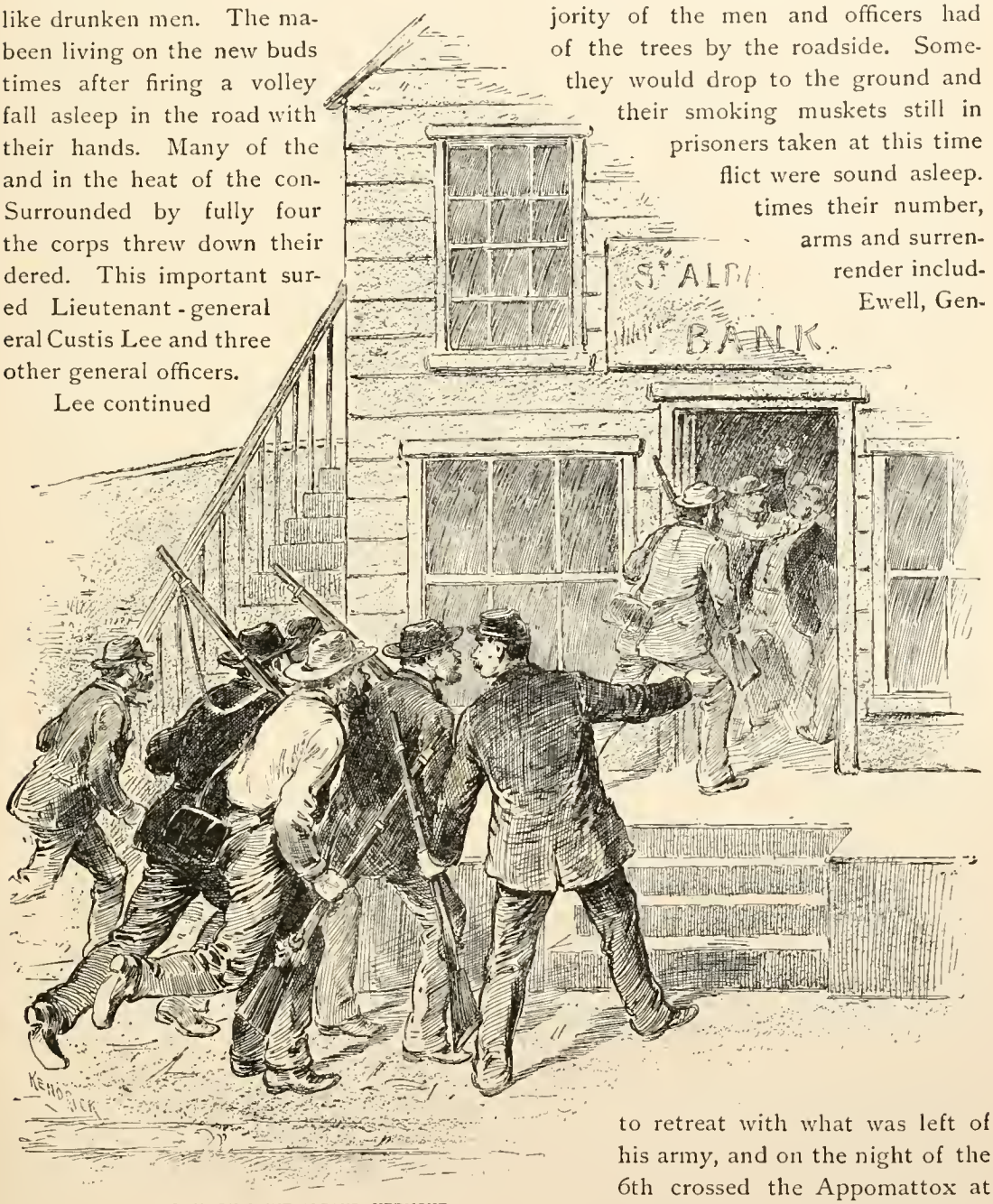
The army of the Potomac intrenched itself at Jetersville, and awaited the assault which Lee was not rash enough to make. Then Meade advanced upon Amelia Court House to attack Lee, but found he was making for Farmville, by way of Deatonsville. Thereupon Meade sent the Second Corps direct to Deatonsville, while the Fifth and Sixth corps moved by parallel routes to the north and south of that village. General Ord had reached Burkesville with the army of the James, and he was directed to hasten to Farmville.

While these movements were in progress, Sheridan was doing as he pleased with the confederate wagon train. He attacked it again and again, and at Sailor's Creek captured sixteen pieces of artillery, a lot of prisoners, and destroyed more than four hundred wagons. Pickett's famous division was reduced to eight hundred men. He found himself so hotly pressed that he sent to Ewell for re-enforcements to help him save the rest of his train. Ewell hurried to his relief with his corps of forty-two hundred men, but while taking position he saw that Gordon's corps, forming the rear guard of the army, was following the wagon train by another road. The consequence,

therefore, was that Ewell was cut off from the rest of the army. He was assailed on all sides, but the heroism shown by his soldiers could not have been excelled.

The confederate soldiers were so weak from exhaustion that many of them reeled like drunken men. The majority of the men and officers had been living on the new buds of the trees by the roadside. Sometimes after firing a volley they would drop to the ground and fall asleep in the road with their smoking muskets still in their hands. Many of the prisoners taken at this time and in the heat of the conflict were sound asleep. Surrounded by fully four times their number, the corps threw down their arms and surrendered. This important surrender included Lieutenant-general Ewell, General Custis Lee and three other general officers.

Lee continued to retreat with what was left of his army, and on the night of the 6th crossed the Appomattox at High Bridge, near Farmville, and bivouacked on the western bank. His general officers gathered around a camp-fire to decide what course ought to be followed. They agreed that one of three things must



RAID ON SAINT ALBANS, VERMONT.

be done: disband the army and instruct the troops to meet again at some distant rallying point; abandon the trains and with the infantry cut their way through the federal lines; or surrender.

The objection to the first plan was that if the army were once disbanded it could never be brought together again, and to turn such a horde of famishing men loose upon the country would be a scourge for which there was no justification. The second proposal, that of cutting their way through the lines of General Grant, was impossible: one soldier was the equal of his opponent in courage and skill, and it was folly, therefore, to hope that one confederate could vanquish five federals.

Consequently there remained but the one course,—to surrender. This decision was reached with great reluctance, but it could not be escaped, and General Pendleton, the chief of artillery, was appointed to make it known to General Lee. The commander-in-chief listened respectfully to his subordinate and then shook his head; he decided that the time had not yet come for surrender.

As soon as the confederate army was across the Appomattox, the bridge in the rear was fired, but the brigade left by Gordon to see that the work was done was driven off by the Second Corps, who saved the stage bridge and part of the railroad bridge. Then a dash was made at the wagon train, but Gordon galloped back, drove off the assailants, and took two hundred prisoners.

The next day there were repeated attacks on the wagon train. The Second Corps was pushing on when it was brought to a halt at noon by the main body of Lee's army, strongly intrenched a few miles to the north of Farmville. Humphreys did not dare attack in front, and he sent back for re-enforcements. While awaiting them he was tempted to assail the confederate left. He was repulsed with a loss of six hundred killed and wounded. When the re-enforcements came up the hour was so late that it was decided to defer the assault until next morning.

General Grant, having occupied Farmville, sent a messenger to General Lee with the following letter:

"*April* 7, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"The result of the last week must convince you of the hopelessness of further resistance on the part of the army of Northern Virginia in this struggle. I feel that it is so, and regard it as my duty to shift from myself the responsibility of any further effusion of blood by asking of you the surrender of that portion of the Confederate States army known as the army of Northern Virginia.

"U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-general.

"GENERAL R. E. LEE."

This letter was handed to General Lee on the night of the day on which it was written. He sent at once this reply:

"*April* 7, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"I have received your note of this date. Though not entertaining the opinion you express of the hopelessness of further resistance on the part of the army of

Northern Virginia, I reciprocate your desire to avoid useless effusion of blood, and, therefore, before considering your proposition, ask the terms you will offer on condition of its surrender.

"R. E. LEE, General.

"LIEUTENANT-GENERAL U. S. GRANT."

General Lee continued his retreat that night in the direction of Lynchburg, and was several miles on the road when his letter reached General Grant, who without delay forwarded the following communication:

"*April* 8, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"Your note of last evening, in reply to mine of same date, asking the conditions on which I will accept the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, is just received. In reply, I would say that, *peace* being my great desire, there is but one condition I would insist upon—namely, that the men and officers surrendered shall be disqualified from taking up arms against the government of the United States until properly exchanged. I will meet you, or will designate officers to meet any officers you may name for the same purpose, at any point agreeable to you, for the purpose of arranging definitely the terms upon which the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia will be received.

"U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-general.

"GENERAL R. E. LEE."

You can hardly picture any more desperate straits than the situation of General Lee; but he was not yet ready to surrender unconditionally.

"*April* 8, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"I received at a late hour your note of to-day. In mine of yesterday I did not intend to propose the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, but to ask the terms of your proposition. To be frank, I do not think the emergency has arisen to call for the surrender of this army; but, as the restoration of peace should be the sole object of all, I desired to know whether your proposals would lead to that end. I can not, therefore, meet you with a view to surrender the army of Northern Virginia; but, as far as your proposal may affect the Confederate States forces under my command and tend to the restoration of peace, I should be pleased to meet you at 10 A. M., to-morrow, on the old stage-road to Richmond, between the picket-lines of the two armies.

"R. E. LEE, General.

"LIEUTENANT-GENERAL U. S. GRANT.

The foregoing reached General Grant late at night, and early the next morning he replied:

"*April* 9, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"Your note of yesterday is received. I have no authority to treat on the subject of peace; the meeting proposed for 10 A. M. to-day could lead to no good. I will state,

however, General, that I am equally anxious for peace with yourself, and the whole North entertains the same feeling. The terms upon which peace can be had are well understood. By the South laying down their arms they will hasten that most desirable event, save thousands of human lives and hundreds of millions of property not yet destroyed. Seriously hoping that all our difficulties may be settled without the loss of another life, I subscribe myself, etc.,

"U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-general.

"GENERAL R. E. LEE."

There was no cessation of operations on either side during this correspondence between the leaders of the respective armies. Grant continually pressed Lee, who kept falling back.

You will remember that the confederate army left its intrenchments on the night of April 7, and the next day was near Appomattox Court House. There was little firing on the 8th, and it looked as though there was a prospect of Lee reaching Lynchburg; but that evening Sheridan arrived at Appomattox station, five miles south of the court house, and captured four trains of cars loaded with supplies that had been sent from Lynchburg for Lee's army. Then Sheridan threw his command across the line of retreat and braced himself for the expected attack by the fugitive army. He knew that Ord with the army of the James would be up in the morning, and the army of the Potomac was stepping on the heels of the confederate forces.

Lee was quick to see that all retreat was cut off, and he had to choose between surrender and cutting his way through Sheridan's lines. He chose the latter.

Gordon was selected to make the last desperate move, and he was ordered to carry it out at all hazards the next morning at sunrise. That fiery soldier did not hesitate. He formed his thin battle-line in front, the remnants of Longstreet's corps made up the rear, while between the two were the fragments of a few wagons left of the enormous train, while several thousand gaunt confederates, too weak to carry muskets, straggled among them. The three thousand cavalry looked as if horses and riders must drop from simple weakness. They were a pitiful sight indeed; but the sun was not yet risen, when Gordon advanced to cut his way through the union lines.

Charging as Gordon always did, he forced back the cavalry that had dismounted to resist the attack on Ord's infantry. At that moment Sheridan arrived from Appomattox station, to which point he had gone to hasten the army of the James. By his orders the troopers slowly fell back until the infantry had time to form. Only a few minutes were required, when Gordon saw the myriad bayonets approaching. Then he in turn gave way, and sent word to General Lee that the enemy were forcing him back.

General Grant had ordered Sheridan to "press things," and he was doing so with a will. The order to mount was sounded and the cavalry dashed into position on the confederate left flank. Just as the command to charge was about to be given, a white flag was seen coming from the confederate lines. The messenger bore a note from General Lee asking that hostilities might be suspended with a view to surrender. He bore also the following letter to General Grant:

"*April* 9, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"I received your note this morning on the picket-line, whither I had come to meet you and ascertain definitely what terms were embraced in your proposition of yesterday with reference to the surrender of this army.

"I now request an interview in accordance with the offer contained in your letter of yesterday for that purpose.

"Very respectfully,

"Your obedient servant

"R. E. LEE, General.

"TO LIEUT-GENERAL GRANT,

"Commanding Armies of the United States."

General Grant replied:

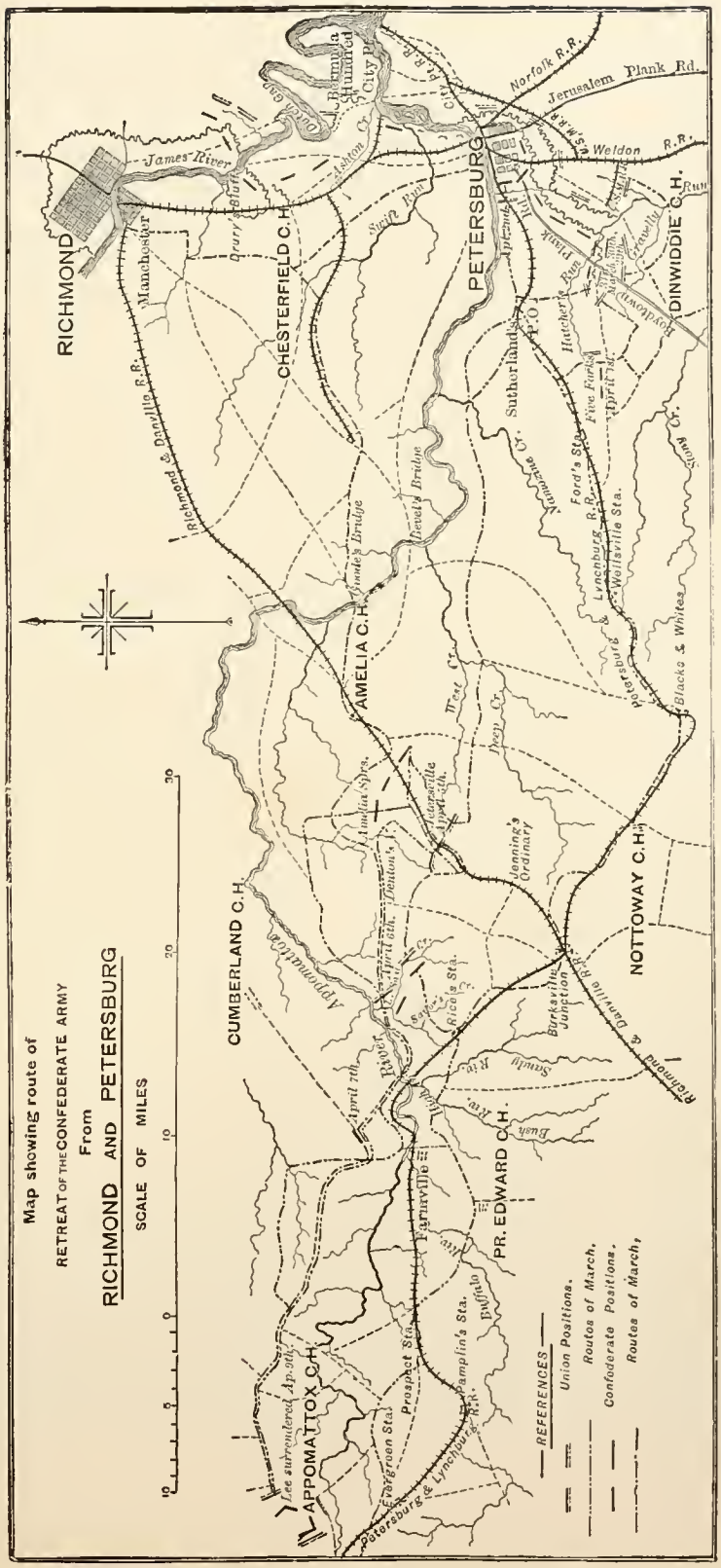
"*April* 9, 1865.

"GENERAL R. E. LEE,

Commanding Confederate States Armies:

"Your note of this date is but this moment, 11.59 A. M., received.

"In consequence of my having passed from the Richmond and Lynchburg road to the Farmville and Lynchburg road, I am at this writing about four miles west of Walters Church, and will push forward to the front for the purpose of meeting you.



PLAN OF THE CONFEDERATE RETREAT FROM RICHMOND AND PETERSBURG.

"Notice sent to me on this road where you wish the interview to take place will meet me.

"Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

"U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-general."

Generals Grant and Lee met at the house of Major Wilmer McLean, in the little village of Appomattox Court House. It is an interesting fact that the first battle of Bull Run was fought on the farm of Major McLean, who to escape the scourge of war removed with his family to Appomattox. Thus the gentleman, who died a short time since, actually saw the beginning and the end of the war for the Union.

The two illustrious leaders greeted each other courteously, and every thing was done in the best of taste. General Lee did not offer his sword nor did General Grant ask for it. After a few exchanges common between gentlemen, they sat down and signed the following two papers which dissolved forever the confederate army of Northern Virginia:

"APPOMATTOX COURT HOUSE, VA.

"*April* 9, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"In accordance with the substance of my letter to you of the 8th instant, I propose to receive the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia on the following terms, to wit: Rolls of all the officers and men to be made in duplicates, one copy to be given to an officer to be designated by me, and the other to be retained by such officer or officers as you may designate. The officers to give their individual paroles not to take up arms against the United States until properly exchanged, and each company or regimental commander to sign a like parole for the men of their commands. The arms, artillery and public property to be parked and stacked and turned over by the officers appointed by me to receive them. This will not embrace the side-arms of the officers, nor their private horses or baggage. This done, each officer and man will be allowed to return to his home, not to be disturbed by United States authority so long as they observe their paroles and the laws in force where they may reside.

"U. S. GRANT, Lieutenant-general.

"GENERAL R. E. LEE."

"HEAD-QUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA,

"*April* 9, 1865.

"GENERAL:

"I have received your letter of this date containing the terms of the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, as proposed by you. As they are substantially the same as those expressed in your letter of the 8th instant, they are accepted. I will proceed to designate the proper officers to carry the stipulations into effect.

"R. E. LEE, General.

"LIEUTENANT-GENERAL U. S. GRANT."

The surrender included all the forces operating with the army of Virginia on the 8th of April. The conduct of General Grant and his officers and men could not have been more considerate or thoughtful. They shared their rations with their late antagonists, all

SURRENDER OF GENERAL LEE.

mingling together like so many brothers. The following day General Lee issued his farewell address to his army. "After four years of arduous service, marked by unsurpassed courage and fortitude," said he, "the army of Northern Virginia has been compelled to yield to overwhelming numbers and resources. I need not tell the survivors of so many hard-fought battles, who have remained steadfast to the last, that I have consented to this result from no distrust of them; but, holding that valor and devotion could accomplish nothing that could compensate for the loss that would attend the continuation of the contest, I have determined to avoid the useless sacrifice of those whose past vigor has endeared them to their countrymen. By the terms of agreement, officers and men can return to their homes, and remain there until exchanged. You will take with you the satisfaction that proceeds from the consciousness of duty faithfully performed; and I earnestly pray that a merciful God will extend you His blessing and protection."

On the same day, April 10, Lee went with an escort of federal cavalry to Richmond, where he visited the quarters of General Longstreet, and afterward took leave of his staff before setting out for his home. The parting between the confederate commander-in-chief and his men was affecting. When he rode back from his meeting with General Grant, his troops crowded about him to wring his hand, tears streaming down their bronzed and bearded cheeks. As they gave expression in broken words to their grief, Lee himself was deeply stirred.

"Men," said he, "we have fought through the war together; I have done the best I could for you. Good-by; good-by; God bless you!"

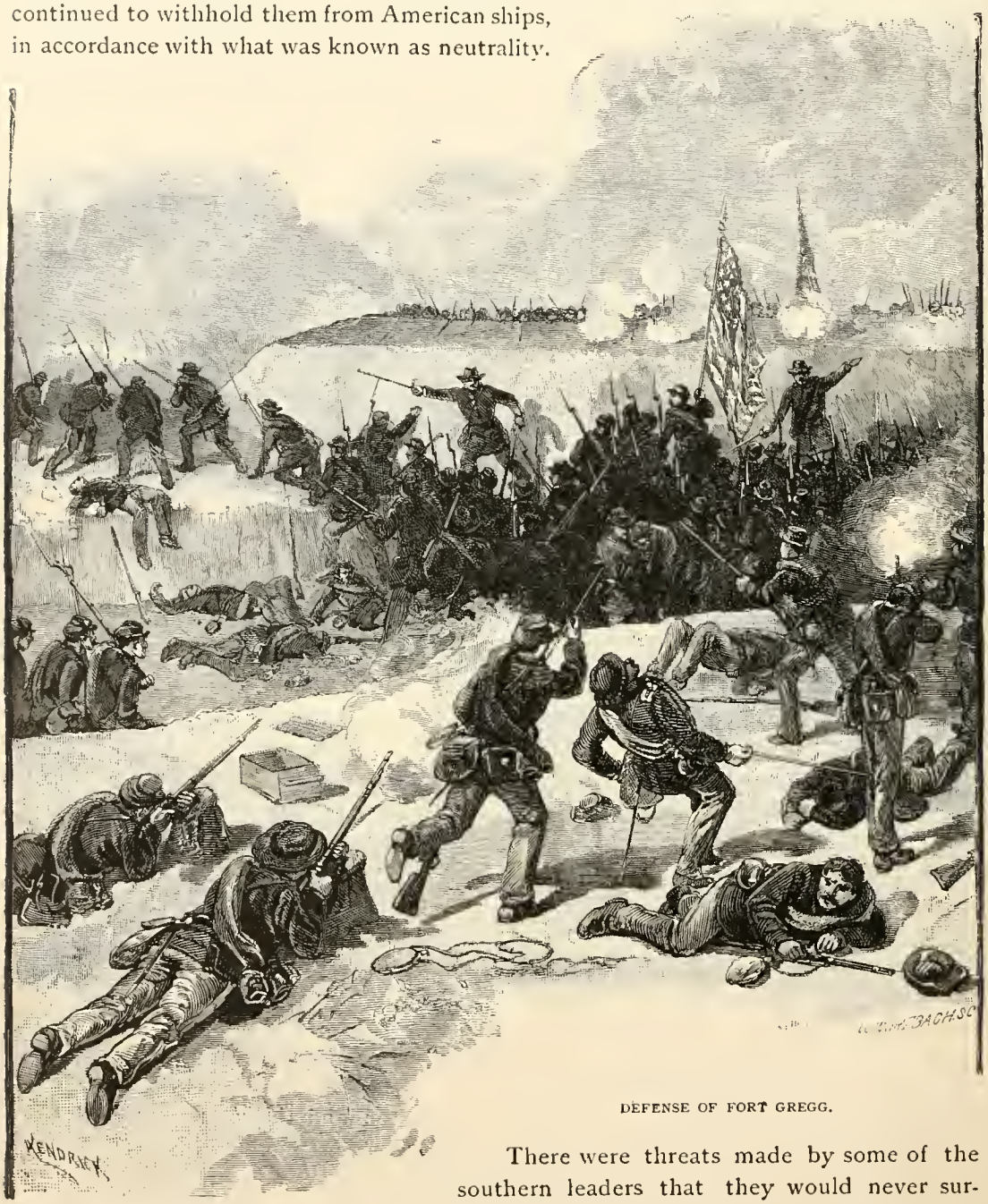
The number of officers and men that surrendered with Lee is not exactly known. It is estimated that when he vacated Richmond his army consisted of nearly 50,000 men. It was probably less, but its loss to the Confederacy was one that could never be replaced. On the retreat its numbers continually decreased, for every soldier saw that utter failure was at hand. The muskets given up by Lee numbered about 10,000, and there were thirty pieces of artillery. During the last series of battles 170 guns and 350 wagons were captured. The number paroled was 28,805, the majority of whom had thrown away their muskets in their weary flight.

On receiving the news of the surrender, the war department at Washington ordered a salute of 200 guns to be fired at the headquarters of every army and department, at every port and arsenal in the United States, and at the Military Academy at West Point.

Bells were rung, bonfires kindled, ringing speeches made, and men embraced each other in the transports of joy. The news was expected in the North, but it may be said that it had been hoped for and expected for years, until many a time patriotic hearts gave way to despair. The tidings had come at last and it can not be wondered that the rejoicing was so general and widespread.

The people did not forget that General Johnston and the western confederate armies were still in the field, but the most ardent secessionist could not fail to see that for months, if not for years, the Southern Confederacy had been upheld by the bayonets of the army of Northern Virginia, and that when they were withdrawn the final crash must follow.

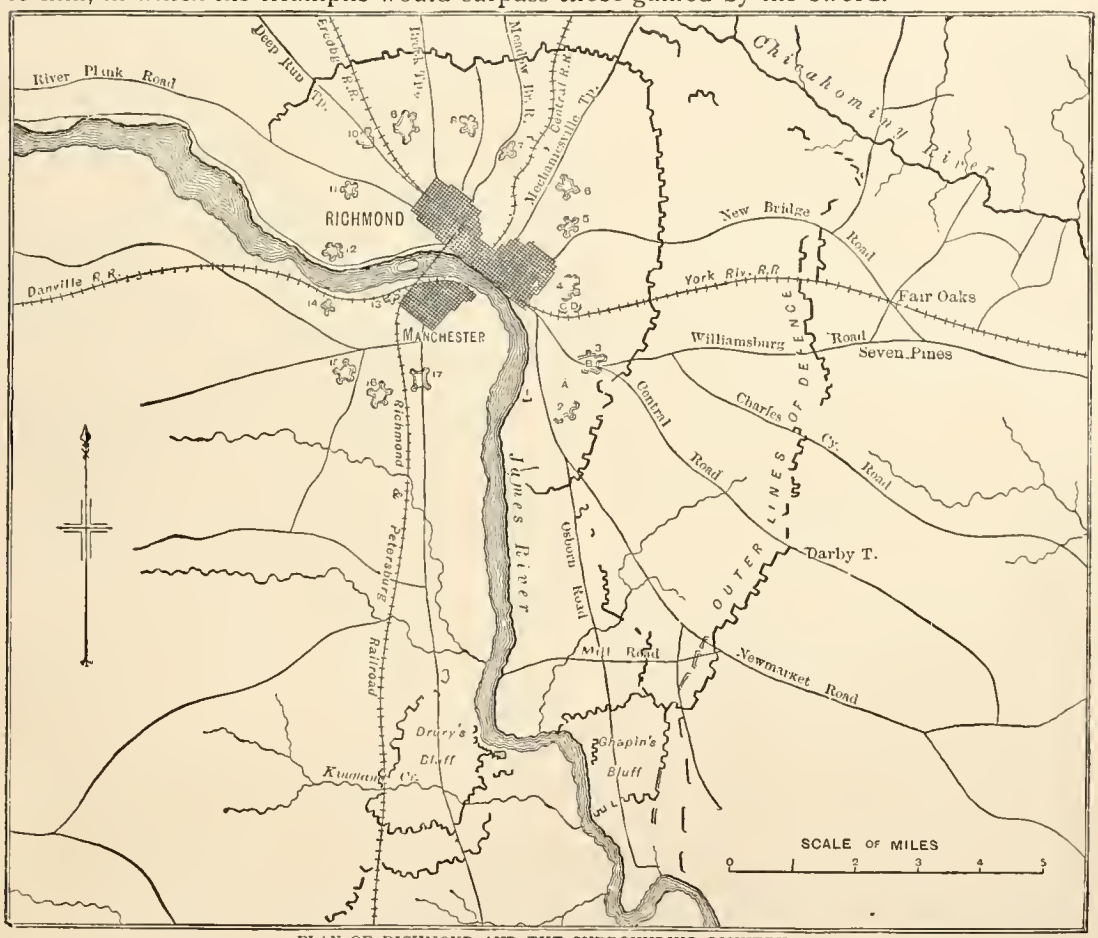
On the 11th of April, President Lincoln issued a proclamation saying that after a proper time, the usual privileges and immunities granted to vessels of war in foreign parts would be withheld by the United States from the ships of those countries which continued to withhold them from American ships, in accordance with what was known as neutrality.



DEFENSE OF FORT GREGG.

There were threats made by some of the southern leaders that they would never surrender, but, withdrawing into the interior with bodies of armed men, would defy the union armies, until their own terms were agreed to. There were many able confederate

officers in the west, and doubtless, if they chose to do so, they could prolong hostilities for a long time. But, on the other hand, the rank and file of those who struggled so bravely and so long, and who had lost, were composed of men of sense and judgment. The grizzled confederate, fighting and starving and continually falling back, would begin to ask himself what he expected to gain by such a course, or why he should leave his family hundreds of miles away to take care of themselves, when he was at liberty to go to their help. And the brave officer himself, shivering by his dismal camp-fire, would be likely to ask himself questions of similar meaning. He would realize too that with the restoration of the Union, new fields for enterprise and success would be opened to him, in which his triumphs would surpass those gained by his sword.



PLAN OF RICHMOND AND THE SURROUNDING COUNTRY.

The hour too had passed when England and France could say that the American Union naturally tended to disunion, or that the model republic would be as short lived as many others that had figured on the pages of the world's history. The United States had gained its independence from one of the most powerful of all nations: it had since maintained itself on land and sea, and now it had gained its greatest victory by overcoming the foes from within.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

EVENTS OF 1865. DEATH OF PRESIDENT LINCOLN.

THE month of April was one of the most memorable in the history of our country. Before half the month was gone Richmond, the capital of the Confederacy, had fallen into the possession of the union forces, and President Lincoln himself had visited the city and occupied the very house that belonged to Jefferson Davis. The latter was now a fugitive, fleeing into the interior and hard pressed by the union cavalry that were soon to overtake and capture him.

The last straggling confederate army was still falling back before Sherman, who was soon to receive its surrender. The end of the Confederacy had come.

The North was thrown into transports of delight by the news of the fall of Richmond and the end of the war, but the joy was tempered by the sorrowful memories of those who had fallen, and by a feeling of sympathy for the brave foe, who had striven so heroically through the four years only to be compelled to yield at last.

On the 14th of April, President Lincoln breakfasted with his son Captain Robert T. Lincoln, and listened with the closest interest as the young man, who had just come back from the surrender of Lee, described the particulars of that great event. After breakfast the president remained for an hour with Schuyler Colfax, speaker of the house of representatives, talking about the policy that he was soon to submit to his cabinet. He spent the afternoon with Governor Oglesby, Senator Yates and other friends from Illinois.

In the course of the day the president received an invitation from the manager of Ford's theater, in Washington, to attend a performance of the play, "Our American Cousin," with Laura Keene as the leading lady. The president was disposed to decline the invitation, but yielded to the wishes of his wife.

They took with them Miss Harris and Major Rathbone, daughter and step-son of Senator Harris, of New York. General Grant was to join them in the course of the evening, but business kept him away. The presidential party entered the box at twenty minutes past nine. The theater was crowded, and the moment the tall, spare figure of the president was seen, the audience broke into applause. He bowed in acknowledgment and seated himself.

It was a little past ten o'clock, when John Wilkes Booth, son of the great actor Junius Brutus Booth, entered the theater and quietly worked his way around to the outer passage of the box in which sat the president. At the end of this passage was stationed one of the president's messengers, to prevent the intrusion of unwelcome persons. When checked by the servant, he showed a card in his hand and said the president had sent for him. Thereupon he was admitted.

Booth stepped within so softly that none of the party looked around. Gently

closing the door behind him, he put the end of a short plank that he had prepared and brought with him into an indentation in the wall and the other end against the molding of the door panel a few inches higher up. This made such a strong brace that it would have required an unusual force from the outside to shove the door inward.

After entering this door, Booth had to walk a few steps through a dark passage and pass through another door. Each had spring-locks, and to guard against their being fastened he had loosened the screws with which the bolts were fastened. The criminal had arranged every thing with so much deliberation that even the seats in the box were as he had wished. Indeed, an attache of the theater, Spangler by name, was suspected of having helped Booth.

The president sat in the left hand corner of the box, nearest the audience. On his right and close to him sat his wife. A little further to the right was Miss Harris, with Major Rathbone at her left and a short distance behind her and Mrs. Lincoln. The latter was deeply interested in the play, and was bending forward with one hand resting on her husband's knee. The president was leaning upon one hand, while the other idly toyed with the drapery. He seemed as much interested in the audience as in the stage, and was half smiling as though at the recollection of some of those humorous incidents with which he used to throw aside for a few moments the load of care that weighed him down.

With a small Derringer pistol in his right hand and a long two-edged dagger in his left, Booth rested the former on the back of the president's chair and with the muzzle pointed at his head, pulled the trigger. The ball entered just behind the left ear, driving fragments of bone before it, and lodged in the brain. The president swayed slightly forward and his eyes closed, but there was no other change in his position. He became unconscious at once.

Major Rathbone turned his head on hearing the report of the pistol, and through the smoke saw a strange man between him and the president. He sprang up to seize him. Booth dropped the pistol, struck a vicious blow at Rathbone with the dagger, severely wounding him in the arm, wrenched himself loose, and resting his left hand lightly on the railing of the box, leaped over upon the stage. In jumping, Booth caught his spur in the folds of the flag that draped the president's box, stumbled, and sprained his ankle. He quickly recovered, and springing up, stepped out upon the stage, brandished the dagger and shouted,

"*Sic semper tyrannis!* The South is avenged!"

He strode to the side opposite that by which he had entered, passing Miss Keene as he went out, and vanished. Lawyer Stewart of Washington was the only one in the audience who realized the awful crime that had been committed. He sprang upon the stage and ran after Booth, but he was too late. The assassin had a saddled horse waiting outside, and leaping upon his back, he quickly galloped out of the city.

When the audience realized what had been done, they were thrown into consternation. Women screamed, sobbed and fainted. Men cursed in a frenzy of rage or stood, white with horror, too bewildered to grasp the fearful truth. Miss Keene stepped to the front of the stage and begged the audience to be calm. Then she entered the

president's box with water and stimulants. Surgeons had been sent for and they came with flying feet, but it was too late.

The president had not stirred in his chair nor spoken a word. He was carried to the house of Mr. Peterson, opposite the theater. There he died at twenty-two minutes past seven the next morning.

Just about the time the president was assassinated, a man presented himself at the residence of Secretary of State Seward, who was lying in his bedroom suffering from injuries received by a fall from his carriage. Being refused admission, the stranger

RUINS OF RICHMOND AFTER THE WAR.

said he had come with medicine for the secretary, and pushed by the servant. The slight disturbance aroused several others in the house. The foremost was a son of the secretary, who, trying to stop the intruder, was struck such a violent blow on the head with a pistol that he fell insensible with his skull fractured. By this time, the stranger was at the door of Mr. Seward's room on the third floor. Within were the daughter of Mr. Seward and George Robinson, a sailor, who was attending the invalid. Hearing the noise, Robinson opened the door and was struck by the assassin as he burst into

the room and rushed for the bed in which Mr. Seward lay. Robinson grappled with him and a fierce struggle followed. The stranger was a powerful man and he was determined to reach the sick man. He managed to strike him several times in the face and neck, inflicting severe wounds, and during the struggle Mr. Seward rolled out of the bed to the floor.

By this time the whole house was aroused, and the assassin, breaking away, dashed down stairs, stabbed Major Seward, the eldest son of the secretary, mounted his horse, and galloped away.

THE FLAG OF TRUCE.

In the consternation following these crimes, the belief was general that a wide conspiracy existed for the assassination of the leading officers of the government. General Grant took measures to protect the city against any wild outbreak, and the general direction of affairs was assumed for the time by Secretary of War Stanton. Guards were placed about the persons of Andrew Johnson, the vice-president, and the other members of government, and precautions were taken not only to prevent the confederate prisoners in the jail from escaping, but to protect them from the fury of the populace.

The whole detective force of the government was called into service to unearth the

criminals concerned in the conspiracy. There were several reasons for believing that the assailant of Mr. Seward was John Surratt, whose mother lived in Washington and whose house was the rendezvous for disloyalists. Her house was seized. Before daylight on the 18th a man came to the door and was arrested. He said his name was Payne, that he was a common laborer in Virginia and had been employed to repair a gutter of the house. His statements were confusing, and when he was examined more closely, it was discovered that his naturally light hair had been dyed black. Being in disguise he was held as a suspicious character. It was not long before he was identified as the man that had assailed Secretary Seward. It may be stated here that the latter in time fully recovered from his wounds.

Meanwhile, every energy was directed to the pursuit of Booth. He had ridden into Maryland, accompanied by another conspirator named David E. Harrold. Cavalrymen scoured the country in every direction for eleven days. The fugitives had fled into Virginia from Maryland, and on the 26th of April they were run down. They had taken refuge in a barn on Garrett's farm, near Port Royal on the Rappahannock.

The barn was quickly surrounded by soldiers and Booth and Harrold were ordered to surrender. On the second demand, Harrold, in spite of the curses of Booth, complied. The latter, who was suffering from his wounded ankle, sought to parley with his pursuers.

"Captain," said he, addressing the commanding officer, "give me a chance; draw off your men and I will fight them singly; I could have killed you six times to-night, but I believed you to be a brave man and I would not murder you. Give a lame man a show."

The captain of course did not accept any such wild challenge, and, finding that Booth would not surrender, he set fire to the barn. The flames lit up every recess of the building, showing even the cobwebs and wasps' nests. In the midst of the glow, Booth was seen standing with the aid of a crutch, carbine in hand, his eyes gleaming. Looking eagerly for a chance to shoot, he made his way toward the door.

At that moment, contrary to orders, Sergeant Boston Corbett fired through a crevice and shot Booth in the neck. He was brought out of the blazing barn and laid on the grass, where, after four hours of intense suffering, he died. "Tell mother I died for my country; I thought I did for the best," was the message he left.

Booth's body was taken to Washington, and a post-mortem examination was held on board the steamer *Montauk*. On the night of the 27th of April the body was given in charge of two men in a row boat. It is said that they sank it in the Potomac, but no one beside themselves can answer that question truly.

Five of the conspirators were tried, and four, Payne, David E. Harrold, George A. Atzeroot, and Mrs. Mary E. Surratt, were hanged. Dr. Samuel A. Mudd, who dressed Booth's wounded limb, and who was believed to be in sympathy with the conspirators, was sent to the Dry Tortugas for a term of years. He there rendered such service during an epidemic of yellow fever that he was pardoned, and coming back to this country died a few years since at his home in Maryland, near Washington. John Surratt fled to Italy and joined the Papal Guards. He was discovered there by Archbishop Hughes.

There was no treaty to cover his case, but the Italian government out of courtesy delivered him to the United States for trial. On the first trial the jury disagreed and on the second he escaped on the plea of limitations. At the present time he is said to be living in Baltimore. Edward Spangler, the scene shifter, who was an accomplice of Booth, was also sent to the Dry Tortugas, where he died.

Ford's Theater was never again used for the presentation of plays. Ford made an attempt to open it but, Secretary Stanton would not permit. The government bought it for $100,000, and it was converted into a medical museum. Alison Taylor, the man who let Booth have the horse on which he fled, is at the present time living in Washington. Major Rathbone, who was in the box with President Lincoln, Stewart, the lawyer who jumped on the stage to follow Booth, and Laura Keene, the actress, have been dead for several years.

The assassination of President Lincoln took place on Friday evening, and on the following Sunday services were held in nearly every church in the land. Public buildings, school houses, private dwellings, and indeed it may be said that every thing that would permit it was draped: the whole land was in mourning for one of the greatest and best presidents our country has ever had.

The body of Mr. Lincoln was embalmed, and on the following Wednesday funeral services were held in the east room of the White House. Thence the body was taken to the rotunda of the capitol, where it was viewed by tens of thousands of sorrowing people. The funeral train left Washington on the 21st of the month, going first to Philadelphia and New York, and then westward, mourned by the multitudes through every mile of the somber journey. The train reached Springfield, Illinois, on the morning of the 3d of May, and on the following day the body was laid away in the grave and shut from the sight of man forever.

I have said that Abraham Lincoln was one of the greatest and best presidents that the United States ever had. As the years pass he becomes more firmly imbedded in the love and reverence of the American people. He was honest, patriotic, wise and one of the kindest hearted men that ever lived. On his shoulders was laid a burden such as no one before or since has ever borne. He was patient, hopeful, even cheerful, under the weight of care, and he never wavered in his faith that in God's own good time the clouds would roll by and the sunlight of peace and prosperity would shine again upon our re-united country. He issued the emancipation proclamation, and saw more clearly the sweep of events than did the statesmen around him. To him more than any other man was due the success of the war for the Union.

A leading journal referred to him as follows:

"No one who personally knew him but will now feel that the deep, furrowed sadness of his face seemed to forecast his fate. The genial gentleness of his manner, his homely simplicity, the cheerful humor that never failed, are now seen to have been but the tender light that played around the rugged heights of his strong and noble nature. It is small consolation that he dies at the moment of the war when he could best be spared, for no nation is ever ready for the loss of such a friend. But it is something to remember that he lived to see the slow day breaking. Like Moses, he had marched

through the wilderness. From the height of patriotic vision he beheld the golden fields of the future waving in peace and plenty. He beheld and blessed God, but was not to enter in."

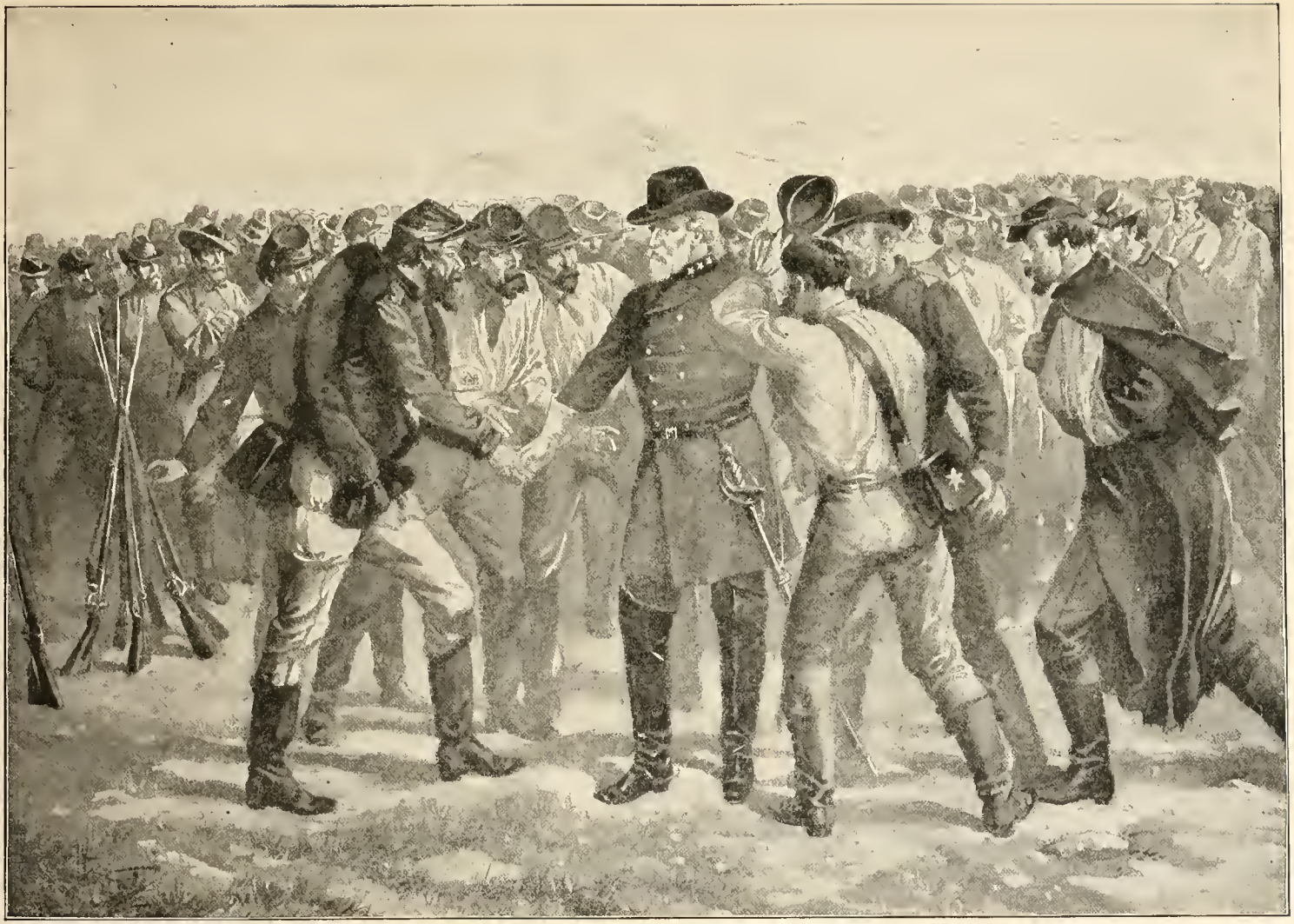
In a discourse delivered shortly after the president's death, Henry Ward Beecher said:

"And now the martyr is moving in triumphal march, mightier than when alive. The nation rises up at every stage of his coming. Cities and states are his pall-bearers, and the cannon speaks the hours with solemn progression. Dead, dead, dead, he yet speaketh. Is Washington dead? Is Hampden dead? Is any man that was ever fit to

THE HOUSE WHERE GENERAL LEE SURRENDERED.

live dead? Disenthralled of flesh, risen to the unobstructed sphere where passion never comes, he begins his illimitable work. His life is now grafted upon the infinite, and will be fruitful, as no other life can be. Pass on, thou that hast overcome. Ye people, behold the martyr whose blood, as so many articulate words, pleads for fidelity, for law, for liberty."

Among the bitterest assailants of President Lincoln was the famous paper known as the London *Punch*. It had cruelly abused him for years. Now seized with remorse for its unjust course, it published on the 6th of May the following touching tribute:



COPYRIGHTED, 1905, BY GEO. T. FINN, N. Y.

GENERAL LEE'S FAREWELL TO HIS SOLDIERS. (*See page* 319.)

Drawn by Francis Christy.

He had been born a destined work to do,
And lived to do it; four long-suffering years —
Ill-fate, ill-feeling, ill-report lived through —
And then he heard the hisses change to cheers,

The taunts to tribute, the abuse to praise,
And took them both with his unwavering mood;
But as he came on light from darkest days,
And seemed to touch the goal from where he stood,

A felon hand between that goal and him,
Reached from behind his head, a trigger prest,
And those perplexed and patient eyes were dim,
Those gaunt, long-laboring limbs were laid to rest!

The words of mercy were upon his lips,
Forgiveness in his heart and on his pen,
When this vile murderer brought with swift eclipse
To thoughts of peace on earth, good-will to men.

The Old World and the New, from sea to sea,
Utter one voice of sympathy and shame!
Sore heart, so stopped when it at last beat free,
Sad life, cut short just as its triumph came!

A deed accurst! Strokes have been struck before
By the assassin's hand, whereof men doubt
If more of horror or disgrace they bore;
But thy foul crime, like Cain's, stands darkly out:

Vile hand! that branded murder on a strife,
Whate'er its grounds, stoutly and nobly striven,
And with the martyr's crown crownest a life
With much to praise, little to be forgiven!

On the 4th of July, 1864, the soldiers' monument had been dedicated at Gettysburg to commemorate the great victory won there a year before. Edward Everett delivered an eloquent oration, but the speech of President Lincoln was an inspiration that will live as long as our country endures. It has become one of the classics of our language, and there can be no more fitting close to what has been said than to quote those beautiful words: "Four score and seven years ago our fathers brought forth upon this continent a new nation, conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal. Now we are engaged in a great civil war, testing whether that nation—or any nation so conceived and so dedicated—can long endure. We are met on a great battle-field of that war. We are met to dedicate a portion of it as the final resting-place of those who here gave their lives that that nation might live. It is altogether fitting and proper that we should do this.

"But, in a larger sense, we can not dedicate, we can not consecrate, we can not hallow, this ground. The brave men, living and dead, who struggled here, have consecrated it far above our power to add or detract. The world will very little note nor long remember what we say here; but it can never forget what they did here.

"It is for us, the living, rather, to be dedicated here to the unfinished work that they have thus far so nobly carried on. It is rather for us to be here dedicated to the great task remaining before us; that from these honored dead we take increased devotion to that cause for which they here gave the last full measure of devotion; that we here highly resolve that these dead shall not have died in vain; that the nation shall, under God, have a new birth of freedom, and that government of the people, by the people, for the people, shall not perish from the earth."

CHAPTER XXXV.

EVENTS OF 1865. SURRENDER OF THE LAST CONFEDERATE ARMY.

YOU know that when we are so unfortunate as to have a president die in office the vice-president immediately succeeds him. Andrew Johnson, therefore, took the oath on the 15th of April, which was the day that President Lincoln died.

Mr. Johnson was born December 29, 1808, at Raleigh, North Carolina. His father followed at different times the calling of a bank porter, constable and church sexton. The family was so poor that Andrew was not sent to school, and at the age of ten was apprenticed to a tailor. A charitable man used to read to the young men in the shop, and this roused the boy to spend his leisure time in learning to read. In 1826 he removed to Greenville, Tennessee, and there married a most excellent woman. Under her instruction he rapidly acquired book learning, and at the same time became interested in local politics. He was twice elected alderman, twice mayor of the city, was sent three times to the state legislature, and in 1843, to Congress.

Mr. Johnson remained there until 1853, when he was elected governor of Tennessee. He entered the United States senate in 1857. He was a democrat in principle and in 1860 supported the Breckinridge party, but he was neither an abolitionist nor a secessionist. He declared that those guilty of treason should be hanged, and took such a strong stand for the Union that he stirred up a storm of indignation among the secessionists in Tennessee. He was then United States senator, and, when he returned home in May, 1861, a mob entered the cars for the purpose of lynching him. He calmly awaited them with loaded revolver in hand and they retired.

In 1862, President Lincoln appointed Johnson military governor of Tennessee. He was so bold and vigorous in that office that he attracted the attention and admiration of the North to an extent that led to his nomination for the office of vice-president in 1864. The subsequent events of his administration will be told in another place.

You will bear in mind that when Andrew Johnson became president there was one confederate army still in the field, that of General Joseph E. Johnston, the antagonist of General Sherman. The latter, as you will recall, led his army safely to Goldsborough, North Carolina, where he left it while he went north to hold his consultation with General Grant. Johnston, after vainly trying to check the advance of the superior force, had fallen back to Smithfield, a few miles distant on the same line of railway.

No active operations took place for several days, but early in April a detachment of union cavalry galloped back and forth in different directions, destroying railways and bridges, burning depots and stores, and doing all they could to break up the lines of retreat that the confederates would be likely to take.

About the same time General J. H. Wilson with another cavalry force rode through Alabama and a part of Georgia, routing Forrest and capturing Selma, where the con-

federates had an arsenal, an armory and valuable depots. The Confederacy was now in such a state of collapse that the federals were free to go back and forth through any part of it. On the 12th of April, after a few days' siege, Mobile surrendered to General Canby.

Sherman advanced against Johnston on the 10th of April. He marched in a westerly direction along the northern bank of the Neuse River, and driving in without much difficulty the confederate rear guard, he entered Smithfield the next day. Johnston had crossed to the southern side of the river, and for the moment was beyond reach. At this point Sherman heard of the surrender of Lee, and he saw that it was now left to him to give the finishing stroke to the war by pressing Johnston to the wall.

Accordingly, Sherman abandoned his baggage-trains and other hindrances to rapid marching, and pushed swiftly toward Raleigh. When he reached that point the enemy was still in advance. The pursuers, therefore, turned toward the south, crossed the Cape Fear River, and made all haste to Greensborough, whither the confederates were retreating.

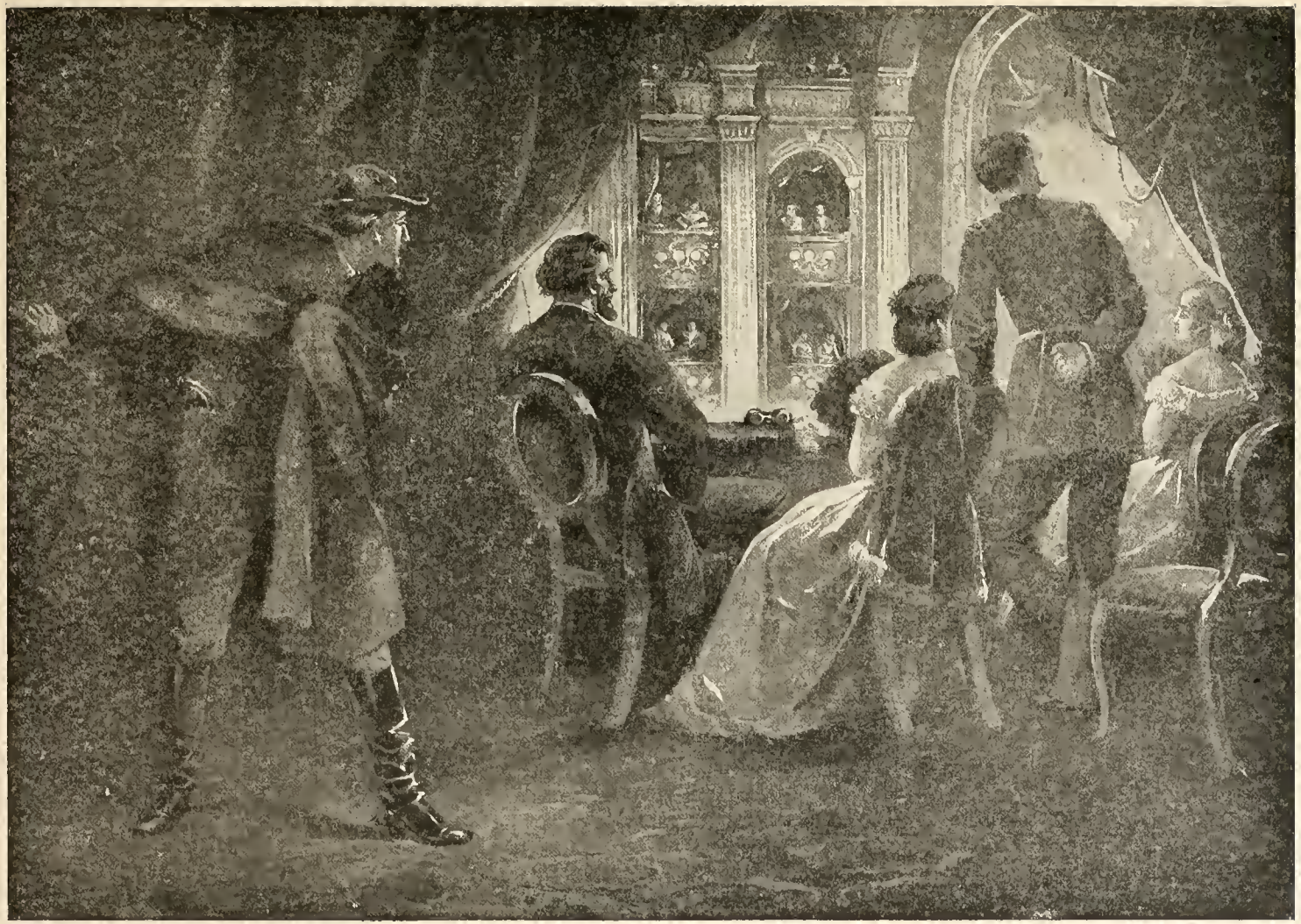
Johnston was wise enough to see by this time that his case was hopeless, and he now sent in a proposal to Sherman for negotiations. "The results of the recent campaign in Virginia," he wrote on the 14th of April, "have changed the relative military condition of the belligerents. I am therefore inclined to address to you in this form the inquiry whether, in order to stop the further effusion of blood and devastation of property, you are willing to make a temporary suspension of active operations, and to communicate to Lieutenant-general Grant, commanding the armies of the United States, the request that he will take like action in regard to other armies; the object being to permit the civil authorities to enter into the needful arrangements to terminate the existing war."

Sherman in reply proposed the same conditions that were given by Grant at Appomattox, and he sought to secure an order from him suspending the movements of any troops from the direction of Virginia.

On the 17th of April, Johnston and Sherman had a personal interview at a spot five miles from Durham Station. The two distinguished military officers had never met before, and their respect for each other was such that their meeting was of the most cordial character. Could you have seen them you would have found it hard to believe they had ever been enemies. Indeed I may say that since that meeting Sherman and Johnston have been the warmest of personal friends.

Johnston freely admitted that no hope remained for the Confederacy, and it would be a crime to resist any longer. He was anxious, however, to get some special concessions, and wanted to include in the general propositions the fate of all the confederate armies in the field. Sherman consulted with his officers, and they urged him to agree to what Johnston asked. They were worn out, and dreaded another long march through the south in pursuit of a foe that was always flying and never overtaken.

Another interview took place between the leaders, and Johnston convinced Sherman of his power to disband all the armed forces in Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana and Texas, in addition to those under his immediate command. He wanted to exer-



ASSASSINATION OF PRESIDENT LINCOLN.

cise some control over his men, lest the South, in its helpless condition, should be overrun with famishing hordes who would become robbers and murderers. He was afraid, too, that on the conclusion of peace the South would be dismembered and refused representation in Congress, and in fact shut off from any political existence whatever.

On the 18th of April the following basis of agreement was made:

First. The contending armies now in the field to maintain the *status quo* until notice is given by the commanding general of any one to his opponent, and reasonable time, say forty-eight hours, allowed.

Second. The confederate armies now in existence to be disbanded and conducted to their several state capitals, there to deposit their arms and public property in the state arsenal; and each officer and man to execute and file an agreement to cease from acts of war and to abide the action of both state and federal authorities. The number of arms and munitions of war to be reported to the chief of ordnance at Washington city, subject to the future action of the Congress of the United States, and in the meantime to be used solely to maintain peace and order within the borders of the states respectively.

Third. The recognition by the executive of the United States of the several state governments, on their officers and legislatures taking the oath prescribed by the constitution of the United States; and when conflicting state governments have resulted from the war, the legitimacy of all shall be submitted to the Supreme Court of the United States.

Fourth. The re-establishment of all federal courts in the several states, with powers as defined by the constitution and the laws of Congress.

Fifth. The people and inhabitants of all states to be guaranteed, so far as the executive can, their political rights and franchises, as well as their rights of person and property, as defined by the constitution of the United States and of the states respectively.

Sixth. The executive authority or government of the United States not to disturb any of the people, by reason of the late war, so long as they live in peace and quiet and abstain from acts of armed hostility, and obey the laws in existence at the place of their residence.

Seventh. In general terms, it is announced that the war is to cease; a general amnesty, so far as the executive of the United States can command, on the condition of the disbandment of the confederate armies, the distribution of arms, and the resumption of peaceful pursuits by officers and men hitherto composing said armies. Not being fully empowered by our respective principals to fulfill these terms, we individually and officially pledge ourselves to promptly obtain authority, and will endeavor to carry out the above programme.

W. T. SHERMAN, Major-general,
Commanding Army of the U. S. in North Carolina.
J. E. JOHNSTON, General,
Commanding Confederate States Army in North Carolina.

Now I would like you to study that "Memorandum" carefully and see whether you can discover any thing in it to which General Sherman ought not to have agreed. In other words, is there any thing in the basis of settlement that would give the South an advantage over the North?

Jefferson Davis and his cabinet, although fugitives, were within communicating distance of each other. The confederate president submitted the memorandum to his cabinet officers, and asked their views in writing. These were given in full. The letters, together with other papers, fell into the hands of our government, and it seems to me that they have enough interest to lay before you. Read them carefully, especially the letter of the postmaster-general. You will then see how much wiser and more cunning in a political sense is a professional politician than a military man, no matter how great the ability of the latter.

VIEWS OF THE CONFEDERATE CABINET.

OPINION OF JUDAH P. BENJAMIN.

CHARLOTTE, N. C., April 22, 1865.

To the President.

SIR: I have the honor to submit this paper as the advice in writing which you requested from the heads of the departments of the government.

The military convention made between General Johnston and General Sherman is in substance an agreement that if the Confederate States will cease to wage war for the purpose of establishing a separate government, the United States will receive the several states back into the Union with their state governments unimpaired, with all their constitutional rights recognized, with protection for the persons and property of the people, and with a general amnesty.

The question is whether, in view of the military condition of the belligerents, the Confederate States can hope for any better result by continuing the war: whether there is any reason to believe that they can establish their independence and final separation from the United States.

To reach a conclusion it is requisite to consider our present condition and the prospect of a change for the better.

The general-in-chief of the armies of the Confederacy has capitulated, and his army, the largest and finest within our country, is irretrievably lost. The soldiers have been dispersed, and remain at home as paroled prisoners. The artillery, arms, and munitions of war are lost, and no help can be expected from Virginia, which is at the mercy of the conqueror.

The army next in numbers and efficiency is known as the army of Tennessee, and is commanded by generals Johnston and Beauregard. Its rolls call for more than 70,000 men. Its last returns show a total present for duty of all arms, of less than 20,000 men. This number is daily diminishing by desertion and casualties. In a recent conference with the cabinet at Greensboro', generals Johnston and Beauregard expressed the unqualified opinion that it was not in their power to resist Sherman's advance, and that

as fast as their army retreated the soldiers of the several states in the line of retreat would abandon the army and go home. We also hear on all sides, and from citizens well acquainted with public opinion, that the state of North Carolina will not consent to continue the struggle after our armies shall have withdrawn further south, and this withdrawal is inevitable if hostilities are resumed.

This action of North Carolina would render it impossible for Virginia to maintain her position in the Confederacy, even if her people were unanimous in their desire to continue the contest.

In the more southern states we have no army except the forces now defending Mobile and the cavalry under General Forrest. The enemy are so far superior in numbers that they have occupied within the last few weeks Selma, Montgomery, Columbus, and Macon, and could continue their career of devastation through Georgia and Alabama without our being able to prevent it by any forces now at our disposal. It is believed that we could not at the present moment gather together an army of 30,000 men by a concentration of all our forces east of the Mississippi River.

Our seacoast is in possession of the enemy, and we can not obtain arms and munitions from abroad, except in very small quantities and by precarious and uncertain means of transportation. We have lost possession in Virginia and North Carolina of our chief resources for the supply of powder and lead.

We can obtain no aid from the trans-Mississippi department, from which we are cut off by the fleets of gun-boats that patrol the river. We have not a supply of arms sufficient for putting into the field even ten thousand additional men, if the men themselves were forthcoming.

The Confederacy is, in a word, unable to continue the war by armies in the field, and the struggle can no longer be maintained in any other manner than by a guerrilla or partisan warfare.

Such a warfare is not, in my opinion, desirable, nor does it promise any useful result. It would entail far more suffering on our own people than it would cause damage to the enemy, and the people have been such heavy sufferers by the calamities of the war for the last four years that it is at least questionable whether they would be willing to engage in such a contest, unless forced to endure its horrors in preference to dishonor and degradation.

The terms of the convention imply no dishonor, impose no degradation, exact only what the victor always requires, the relinquishment by his foe of the object for which the struggle was commenced.

Seeing no reasonable hope of our ability to conquer our independence, admitting the undeniable fact that we have been vanquished in the war, it is my opinion that these terms should be accepted, being as favorable as any that we, as the defeated belligerent, have reason to expect or can hope to secure.

It is further my opinion that the president owes it to the states and to the people to obtain for them, by a general pacification, rights and advantages which they would, in all probability, be unable to secure by the separate action of the different states.

It is natural that the enemy should be willing to accord more liberal conditions for

the purpose of closing the war at once, than would be granted if each state should continue the contest till separate terms could be made for itself.

The president is the chief political executive of the Confederacy, as well as the commander-in-chief of its armies. In the former capacity he is powerless to act in making peace on any other basis than that of independence. In the latter capacity he

THE CAPTURE OF BOOTH.

can ratify the military convention under consideration, and execute its provisions relative to the disbandment of the army and the distribution of the arms. He can end hostilities.

The states alone can act in dissolving the Confederacy and returning to the Union according to the terms of the convention.

I think that if this convention be ratified by the United States, the president should by proclamation inform the states and the people of the Confederacy of the facts above

recited; should ratify the convention so far as he has authority to act as commander-in-chief, and should execute the military provisions; should declare his inability, with the means remaining at his disposal, to defend the Confederacy or maintain its independence, and should resign a trust which it is no longer possible to fulfill.

He should further invite the several states to take into immediate consideration the terms of the convention, with a view to their adoption and execution, as being the best and most favorable that they could hope to obtain by a continuance of the struggle. Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

J. P. BENJAMIN, Secretary of State.

OPINION OF JOHN C. BRECKINRIDGE.

CHARLOTTE, N. C., April 23, 1865.

To his Excellency the President.

SIR: In obedience to your request, I have the honor to submit my advice as to the course you should take upon the memorandum or basis of agreement made on the 18th inst. by and between General J. E. Johnston of the Confederate States Army and Major-general W. T. Sherman of the United States Army, provided that paper shall receive the approval of the government of the United States.

The principal army of the Confederacy was recently lost in Virginia. Considerable bodies of troops not attached to that army have either disbanded or marched toward their homes, accompanied by many of their officers.

Five days ago the effective force in infantry and artillery of General Johnston's army was but 14,770 men, and it continues to diminish. That officer thinks it wholly impossible for him to make any head against the overwhelming forces of the enemy. Our ports are closed, and the sources of foreign supply lost to us.

The enemy occupy all or the greater part of Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee, Virginia, and North Carolina, and move almost at will through the other states to the east of the Mississippi. They have recently taken Selma, Montgomery, Columbus, Macon, and other important towns, depriving us of large depots of supplies and of munitions of war.

Of the small force still at command many are unarmed, and the ordnance department can not furnish five thousand stand of small arms.

I do not think it would be possible to assemble, equip, and maintain an army of 30,000 men at any point east of the Mississippi River.

The contest, if continued after this paper is rejected, will be likely to lose entirely the dignity of regular warfare. Many of the states will make such terms as they may; in others separate and ineffective hostility may be prosecuted, while the war, when re-waged, will probably degenerate into that irregular and secondary stage out of which greater evils will flow to the South than to the enemy.

For these and for other reasons which need not now be stated, I think we can no longer contend with a reasonable hope of success.

It seems to me that the time has arrived when, in a large and clear view of the situation, prompt steps should be taken to put an end to the war.

It may be said that the agreement of the 18th inst. contains certain stipulations

which you can not perform. This is true, and it was well understood by General Sherman that only a part could be executed by the confederate authorities. In any view of the case grave responsibilities must be met and assumed. If the necessity for peace be conceded, corresponding action must be taken.

The modes of negotiation which we deem regular and would prefer are impracticable.

The situation is anomalous, and can not be solved upon principles of theoretical exactitude.

In my opinion, you are the only person who can meet the present necessities.

I respectfully advise:

First. That you execute, so far as you can, the second article in the agreement of the 18th inst.

Second. That you recommend to the several states the acceptance of those parts of the agreement upon which they alone can act.

Third. Having maintained with faithful and intrepid purpose the cause of the confederate states while the means of organized resistance remained, that you return to the states and the people the trust which you are no longer able to defend.

Whatever course you pursue opinions will be divided. Permit me to give mine. Should these or similar views accord with your own, I think the better judgment will be that you can have no higher title to the gratitude of your countrymen and the respect of mankind than will spring from the wisdom to see the path of duty at this time, and the courage to follow it regardless alike of praise or blame. Respectfully and truly your friend,

JOHN C. BRECKINRIDGE, Sec. of War.

OPINION OF S. R. MALLORY.

MR. PRESIDENT: In compliance with your suggestion I have the honor briefly to present the following views upon the propositions discussed in cabinet council yesterday:

These propositions, agreed upon and signed by generals Joseph E. Johnston and W. T. Sherman, may fairly be regarded as providing for the immediate cessation of hostilities, the disbandment of our armies, and the return of our soldiers to the peaceful walks of life; the restoration of the several states of our Confederacy to the old Union, with the integrity of their state governments preserved; the security of their "people and inhabitants" in their rights of person and property under the constitution and the laws of the United States, equally with the people of any other state, guaranteed, and a general amnesty for and on account of any participation in the present war.

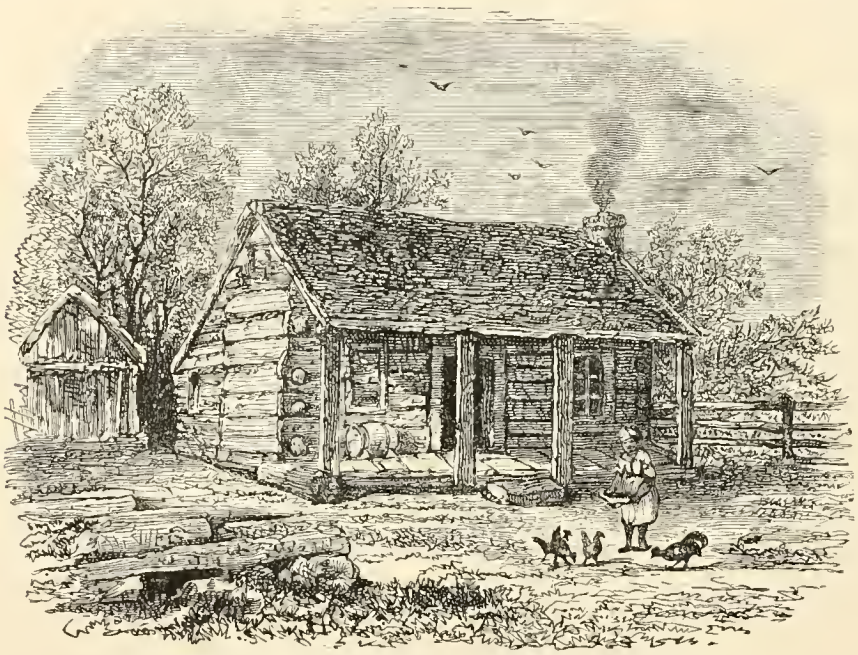
The very grave responsibility devolved upon you by these propositions is at once apparent. To enter at all upon their discussion is to admit that independence, the great object of our struggle, is hopeless.

I believe and admit this to be the case, and therefore do I advise you to accept these propositions so far as you have the power to do so; and my conviction is that

nine-tenths of the people of every state of the Confederacy would so advise if opportunity were presented them.

They are weary of the war, and desire peace. If they could be rallied and brought to the field, a united and determined people might even yet achieve independence, but many circumstances admonish us that we can not count upon their cordial and united action.

The vast army of deserters and absentees from our military service during the past twelve months, the unwillingness of the people to enter the armies, the impracticability of recruiting them, the present utter demoralization of our troops consequent upon the destruction of the army of Virginia, the rapid decrease by desertion of General Johnston's army, which, as it retreats south, if retreat it can, will retain in its ranks but few



EARLY HOME OF ABRAHAM LINCOLN, GENTRYVILLE, INDIANA.

soldiers beyond the by-paths and crossroads which lead to their homes, together with the recent successes of the enemy, the fall of Selma, Montgomery, Columbus and Macon, his forces in the field and his vast resources, all dictate the admission I have made.

I do not believe that by any possibility we could organize, arm, and equip, and bring into the field, this side of the Mississippi, fifteen thousand men within the next sixty days, and I am convinced that both General Beauregard and General Johnston are utterly hopeless of continuing the contest.

A guerrilla warfare might be carried on in certain portions of our country for a time, perhaps for years; but while such a warfare would be more disastrous to our own people than it could possibly be to the enemy, it would exercise little or no influence upon his military operations or upon his hold upon the country. Conducted upon our own soil

our own people would chiefly feel its evils, and would afford it neither countenance nor support. Guerrilla warfare never has been and never can be carried on by and between peoples of a common origin, language, and institutions.

Our seaboard and our ports being in the enemy's hands, we can not rely upon supplies of arms and other munitions of war from abroad, and our means of producing them at home, already limited, are daily decreasing. The loss of Selma and of Columbus, where much valuable machinery for the construction of ordnance and ordnance stores was collected, must materially circumscribe our ability in that respect.

LINCOLN'S GRAVE.

Our currency is nearly worthless, and will become utterly so with further military disasters, and there is no hope that we can improve it.

The arms of the United States have rendered the great object of our struggle hopeless; have conquered a reconstruction of the Union, and it becomes your duty to secure to the people, as far as practicable, life, liberty, and property.

The propositions signed by the opposing generals are more favorable to these great objects than could justly have been anticipated. Upon you, with a more thorough knowledge of the condition of our country, the character and sentiments of our people, and of our means and resources, than is possessed by others, is devolved the responsibility of promptly accepting or of promptly rejecting them.

I advise their acceptance, and that, having notified General Johnston of your having done so, you promptly issue, so soon as you shall learn the acceptance thereof by the authorities of the United States, a proclamation to the people of the Confederate States, setting forth clearly the condition of the country, your inability to resist the enemy's overwhelming numbers or to protect the country from his devastating and desolating march, the propositions submitted to you, and the reasons which, in your judgment, render their acceptance by the states and the people wise and expedient.

You can not under the constitution dissolve the Confederacy and remit the states composing it to the government of the United States. But the Confederacy is conquered. Its days are numbered. Virginia is lost to it, and North Carolina must soon follow, and state after state, under the hostile tread of the enemy, must re-enter the old Union.

The occasion, the emergency, the dire necessities and misfortunes of the country, the vast interests at stake, were never contemplated by those who framed the constitution. They are all outside of it; and in the dissolution of the Confederacy and the wreck of all their hopes the states and the people will turn to you, whose antecedents and whose present position and powers constitute you more than any other living man the guardian of their honor and their interests, and will expect you not to stand upon constitutional limitations, but to assume and exercise all powers which to you may seem necessary and proper to shield them from useless war, and to save from the wreck of the country all that may be practicable of honor, life, and property.

If time were allowed for the observance of constitutional forms, I would advise the submission of these propositions to the executives of the several states, to the end that, through the usual legislative and conventional action, the wills of the peoples of the states respectively might be known. But in the present condition of the country such delay as this course would involve would be the death blow to all hopes founded upon them.

The pacification of the country should be as speedy as practicable, to the end that the authorities of the states may enter upon the establishment and maintenance of law and order. Negotiations for this purpose can more appropriately follow upon the overwhelming disaster of General Lee than at a future time. The wreck of our hopes results immediately from it.

I omit all reference to the details which must be provided for by the contending parties to this agreement for future consideration.

Very respectfully your obedient servant,

S. R. MALLORY, Secretary Navy.

CHARLOTTE, N. C., April 24, 1865.

OPINION OF GEORGE DAVIS.

CHARLOTTE, N. C., April 22, 1865.

To the President.

SIR: The questions submitted by you to the members of your cabinet for their opinions are:

1. Whether the convention agreed upon on the 18th inst. by and between General

Johnston, commanding the confederate forces, and Major-general Sherman, commanding the forces of the United States, in North Carolina, should be ratified by you.

2. If so, in what way it should be done.

The terms of that convention are substantially as follows:

That the armies of the Confederate States shall be disbanded and their arms surrendered; that the several state governments shall be recognized by the executive of the United States upon their officers and legislatures taking the oaths prescribed by the constitution of the United States, and where there are conflicting state governments the question to be referred to the decision of the supreme court; that all political rights and franchises and all rights of person and of property shall be respected and guaranteed; that a general amnesty be granted, and no citizen be molested in person or property for any acts done in aid of the Confederate States in the prosecution of the war.

Taken as a whole, the convention amounts to this: that the states of the Confederacy shall re-enter the old Union upon the same footing on which they stood before seceding from it.

These states having in their several conventions solemnly asserted their sovereignty and right of self-government, and having established for themselves and maintained through four years of bloody war a government of their own choosing, no loyal citizen can consent to its abandonment and destruction as long as there remains a reasonable hope of successful resistance to the arms of the United States.

The question, therefore, whether the terms of the military convention should be accepted will depend upon whether the Confederate States are in a condition further to prosecute the war with a reasonable hope of success, and this question will be answered by a brief review of our military situation.

The army of Northern Virginia, for four years the pride and boast of the Confederacy, under the lead of the general-in-chief, whose name we have been accustomed to associate with victory, after having been defeated and reduced to a mere remnant by straggling and desertion, has capitulated to the enemy. All who were not embraced in the capitulation have thrown away their arms and disbanded beyond any hope of re-organization. Our only other army east of the Mississippi, the army of Tennessee, contains now about 13,000 effective men, of infantry and artillery, and is daily melting away by desertion. It is confronted by one of the best armies of the United States, 50,000 strong. Manifestly it can not fight, and if it retreats the chances are more than equal that, like the army of Northern Virginia, it will dissolve and the remnant be forced to capitulate. If it should retreat successfully, and offer itself as a nucleus for re-organization, it can not be recruited. Volunteering is long since at an end, and conscription has exhausted all its force.

East of the Mississippi, scattered through all the states, we have now about 40,000 organized troops. To oppose these the enemy has more than 200,000.

Persevering efforts for many months past have failed to overcome the obstacles to the removal of troops from the west to the east of the Mississippi. We can therefore look for no accession of strength from that quarter.

If a returning sense of duty and patriotism should bring back the stragglers and deserters in sufficient numbers to form a respectable army, we have not the means of arming them. Our supply of arms is very nearly exhausted, our means of manufacturing substantially at an end, and the blockade of our ports prevents their introduction from abroad, except in small quantities and at remote points.

In view of these facts our two generals highest in command in the field have expressed in decided terms our inability longer to continue the struggle.

Observation has satisfied me that the states of Virginia and North Carolina are finally lost to our cause. The people of the latter are utterly weary of the war, broken and despairing in spirit, and eager to accept terms far less liberal than the convention proposes.

In the absence of a general arrangement they will certainly make terms for themselves.

Abandoned by our armies, the people of Virginia will follow their example, and it will be impossible to arrest the process of disintegration thus begun.

This melancholy array of facts leaves open but one conclusion. I am unhesitatingly of the opinion that the convention ought to be ratified.

As to the proper mode of ratification greater doubt may be reasonably entertained.

The confederate government is but the agent of the states, and, as its chief executive, you can not, according to our governmental theory, bind the states to a government which they have not adopted for themselves. Nor can you rightfully without their consent dissolve the government which they have established.

But there are circumstances so desperate as to override all constitutional theories, and such are these which are pressing upon us now. The government of the Confederate States is no longer potent for good. Exhausted by war in all its resources to such a degree that it can no longer offer a respectable show of resistance to its enemies, it is already virtually destroyed, and the chief duty left for you to perform is to provide as far as possible for the speedy delivery of the people from the horrors of war and anarchy.

I therefore respectfully advise that upon the ratification of the convention by the executive of the United States, you issue your proclamation, plainly setting forth the circumstances which have induced you to assent to the terms proposed, disbanding the armies of the Confederacy, resigning your office as chief magistrate, and recommending to the people of the states that they assemble in convention and carry into effect the terms agreed on.

GEO. DAVIS, Attorney-general.

OPINION OF JOHN H. REAGAN.

CHARLOTTE, N. C., April 22, 1865.

SIR: In obedience to your request for the opinions in writing of the members of the Cabinet on the questions, first as to whether you should assent to the preliminary agreement of the 18th inst., between Gen. Joseph E. Johnston of the confederate army

and Major-general W. T. Sherman of the army of the United States, for the suspension of hostilities and the adjustment of the difficulties between the two countries; and if so, second, the proper mode of executing this agreement on our part, I have to say that, painful as the necessity is, in view of the relative condition of the armies and resources of the belligerents, I must advise the acceptance of the terms of the agreement.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

General Lee, the general-in-chief of our armies, has been compelled to surrender our principal army, heretofore employed in the defense of our capital, with the loss of a very large part of our ordnance, arms, munitions of war, and military stores of all kinds, with what remained of our naval establishment.

The officers of the civil government have been compelled to abandon the capital,

carrying with them the archives, and thus to close, for the time being at least, the regular operations of its several departments, with no place now open to us at which we can re-establish and put those departments in operation, with any prospect of permanency or security, for the transaction of the public business and the carrying on of the government. The army under the command of General Johnston has been reduced to fourteen or fifteen thousand infantry and artillery, and the cavalry, and this force is, from demoralization and despondency, melting away rapidly by the troops abandoning the army and returning to their homes, singly and in numbers large and small, it being the opinion of generals Johnston and Beauregard that, with the men and means at their command, they can oppose no serious obstacle to the advance of General Sherman's army.

General Johnston is of opinion that the enemy's forces now in the field exceed ours in number by probably ten to one. Our forces in the south, though still holding the fortifications at Mobile, have been unable to prevent the fall of Selma and Montgomery in Alabama, and of Columbus and Macon in Georgia, with their magazines, workshops, and stores of supplies.

The army west of the Mississippi is unavailable for the arrest of the victorious career of the enemy east of that river, and is inadequate for the defense of the country west of it. The country is worn down by a brilliant and heroic, but exhausting and bloody struggle of four years. Our ports are closed so as to exclude the hope of procuring arms and supplies from abroad; and we are unable to arm our people if they were willing to continue the struggle.

The supplies of quartermaster and commissary stores in the country are very limited in amount, and our railroads are so broken and destroyed as to prevent to a great extent the transportation and accumulation of those remaining. Our currency has lost its purchasing power, and there is no other means of supplying the treasury; and the people are hostile to impressments, and endeavor to conceal such supplies as are needed for the army from the officers charged with their collection.

Our armies, in case of a prolongation of the struggle, will continue to melt away as they retreat through the country. There is danger, and I think I might say certainty, based on the information we have, that a portion, and probably all, of the states will make separate terms with the enemy as they are overrun, with the chance that the terms so obtained be less favorable to them than those contained in the agreement under consideration. And the despair of our people will prevent a much longer continuance of serious resistance unless they shall be hereafter urged to it by unendurable oppressions.

The agreement under consideration secures to our people, if ratified by both parties, the uninterrupted continuance of the existing state governments; the guarantees of the federal constitution and of the constitutions of their respective states; the guarantee of their political rights, and of their rights of person and property, and immunity from future prosecutions and penalties for their participation in the existing war, on the condition that we accept the constitution and government of the United States and disband our armies by marching the troops to their respective states and depositing their arms in the state arsenals subject to the future control of that government, but

with a verbal understanding that they are only to be used for the preservation of peace and order in the respective states.

It is also to be observed that the agreement contains no direct reference to the question of slavery, requires no concession from us in regard to it, and leaves it subject to the constitution and laws of the United States and of the several states, just as it was before the war.

With these facts before us, and under the belief that we can not now reasonably hope for the achievement of our independence, which should be dearer than life if it were possibly attainable, and under the belief that a continuance of the struggle, with its sacrifices of life and property, and its accumulation of sufferings, without a reasonable prospect of success, would be both unwise and criminal, I advise that you assent to the agreement as the best you can now do for the people who have clothed you with the high trusts of your position.

In advising this course I do not conceal from myself, nor would I withhold from your excellency, the danger of trusting the people who drove us to war by their unconstitutional and unjust aggressions, and who will now add the consciousness of power to their love of dominion and greed of gain.

It is right also for me to say that, much as we have been exhausted in men and resources, I am of opinion that if our people could be induced to continue the contest with the spirit which animated them during the first year of the war, our independence might yet be within our reach. But I see no reason to hope for that now.

On the second question, as to the proper mode of executing the agreement, I have to say that, whatever you may do looking to the termination of the contest by an amicable arrangement, which may embrace the extinction of the government of the Confederate States, must be done without special authority to be found in the constitution. And yet I am of opinion that, charged as you are with the duty of looking to the general welfare of the people, and without time or opportunity, under the peculiarity and necessities of the case, to submit the whole question to the states for their deliberation, and without danger of losing material advantages provided for in the agreement; and as I believe that you, representing the military power and authority of all the states, can obtain better terms for them than it is probable they could obtain each for itself; and as it is in your power, if the federal authorities accept this agreement, to terminate the ravages of war sooner than it can be done by the several states, while the enemy is still unconscious of the full extent of our weakness, you should, in case of the acceptance of the terms of this agreement by the authorities of the United States, accept them on the part of the Confederate States, and take steps for the disbanding of the confederate armies on the terms agreed on. As you have no power to change the government of the country or to transfer the allegiance of the people, I would advise that you submit to the several states, through their governors, the question as to whether they will, in the exercise of their own sovereignty, accept, each for itself, the terms proposed. To this it may be said that after the disbanding of our armies and the abandonment of the contest by the confederate government, they would have no alternative but to accept the terms proposed or an unequal and hopeless war, and that

it would be needless for them to go through the forms and incur the trouble and expense of assembling a convention for the purpose.

To such an objection, if urged, it may be answered that we entered into the contest to maintain and vindicate the doctrine of state rights and state sovereignty and the right of self-government, and that we can only be faithful to the constitution of the United States and true to the principles in support of which we have expended so much blood and treasure, by the employment of the same agencies to return into the old Union which we employed in separating from it and in forming our present government, and that if this should be an unwelcome and enforced action by the states it would not be more so on the part of the states than on the part of the president, if he were to undertake to execute the whole agreement, and while they would have authority for acting he would have none.

This plan would at least conform to the theory of the constitution of the United States, and would, in future, be an additional precedent, to which the friends of state rights could point in opposing the doctrine of the consolidation of powers in the central government; and if the future shall disclose a disposition (of which I fear the chance is remote) on the part of the people of the United States to return to the spirit and meaning of the constitution, then this action on the part of the states might prove to be of great value to the friends of constitutional liberty and good government.

In addition to the terms of agreement an additional provision should be asked for, which will probably be allowed without objection, stipulating for the withdrawal of the federal forces from the several states of the Confederacy, except a sufficient number to garrison the permanent fortifications and take care of the public property until the states can call their conventions and take action on the proposed terms. In addition to the necessity for this course, in order to make their actions as free and voluntary as other circumstances will allow, it would aid in softening the bitter memories which must necessarily follow such a contest as that in which we are engaged.

Nothing is said in the agreement about the public debt and the disposition of our public property beyond the turning over of the arms to the state arsenals. In the final adjustment we should endeavor to secure provisions for the auditing of the debt of the Confederacy and for its payment in common with the war debt of the United States. We may ask this on the ground that we did not seek this war, but only sought peaceful separation to secure our people and states from the effects of unconstitutional encroachments by the other states, and because on the principle of equity, allowing that both parties had acted in good faith, and gone to war on a misunderstanding which admitted of no other solution, and now agree to a reconciliation and to a burial of the past, it would be unjust to compel our people to assist in the payment of the war debt of the United States, and for them to refuse to allow such of the revenues as we might contribute to be applied to the payment of our creditors.

If it should be said that this is a liberality never extended by the conqueror to the conquered, the answer is that if the object of the pacification is to restore the Union in good faith and to reconcile the people to each other, to restore confidence and faith and prosperity and homogeneity, then it is of the first importance that the terms of recon-

ciliation should be based on entire equity, and that no just ground of grief or complaint should be left to either party. And to both parties, looking not only to the present but to the interest of future generations, the amount of money which would be involved, though large, would be as nothing when compared with a reconciliation entirely equitable, which should leave no sting to honor and no sense of wrong to rankle in the memories of the people, and lay the foundation for new difficulties and for future wars.

ANDREW JOHNSON.

It is to this feature, it seems to me, the greatest attention should be given by both sides. It will be of the highest importance to all, for the present as well as for the future, that the frankness, sincerity and justice of both parties shall be as conspicuous in the adjustment of past difficulties as their courage and endurance have been during the war, if we would make peace on a basis which would be satisfactory and might be rendered perpetual.

In any event, provision should be made which will authorize the confederate authorities to sell the public property remaining on hand and to apply the proceeds, as far as they will go, to the payment of our public liabilities, or for such other disposition as may be found advisable.

But if the terms of this agreement should be rejected or so modified by the government of the United States as to refuse a recognition of the right of local self-government, and our political rights and rights of person and property, or as to refuse amnesty for past participation in this war, then it will be our duty to continue the struggle as best we can, however unequal it may be; as it would be better and more honorable to waste our lives and substance in such a contest than to yield both to the mercy of a remorseless conqueror. I am with great respect your excellency's obedient servant,

JOHN M. REAGAN, P. M. General.

To the president.

MR. REAGAN ALSO SUBMITS A MEMORANDUM.

General Johnston will see that the accompanying memorandum omits all reference to details, and to the necessary action of the states and the preliminary reference of the proposition to General Grant for his consent to the suspension of hostilities, and to the government of the United States for its action. He will also see that I have modified the first article, according to his suggestion, by omitting the reference to the consent of the president of the Confederate States, and to his employing his good offices to secure the acquiescence of the several states to this scheme of adjustment and pacification. This may be done at a proper subsequent time. JOHN H. REAGAN.

April 17, 1865.

As the avowed motive of the government of the United States for the prosecution of the existing war with the Confederate States is to secure a reunion of all the states under one common government, and as wisdom and sound policy alike require that a common government should rest on the consent and be supported by the affections of all the people who compose it, now, in order to ascertain whether it be practicable to put an end to the existing war and to the consequent destruction of life and property, having in view the correspondence and conversation which has recently taken place between Major-general W. T. Sherman and myself, I propose the following points as a basis of pacification:

First. The disbanding of the military forces of the Confederacy, and

Second. The recognition of the constitution and authority of the government of the United States on the following conditions:

Third. The preservation and continuance of the existing state governments.

Fourth. The preservation to the people of all the political rights and rights of person and property secured to them by the constitution of the United States and of their several states.

Fifth. Freedom from future prosecution or penalties for their participation in the present war.

HARVARD UNION.

Sixth. Agreement to a general suspension of hostilities pending these negotiations.

Having read the views of the confederate cabinet on the agreement made between General Sherman and General Johnston, you have learned that had it been ratified by our government, we would have made a complete surrender to the Confederacy that we had just conquered. True, the states would not have been independent of us, but they would have come back with their powers intact, and as the sagacious postmaster-general said, they could have re-established slavery and provided for the payment of the confederate war debt, a large part of which would have fallen on those who had fought to sustain the Union.

It is hard to understand the course of General Sherman in this matter. He doubtless meant well, but he had no right to make any attempt to settle the political questions involved. In some instructions sent to General Grant, President Lincoln had expressly reserved to himself the decision of all civil matters. If General Sherman did not know this he committed a blunder for which he was afterward rebuked.

On the morning of the 24th of April, Grant arrived at Sherman's headquarters and quietly told him that the memorandum was disapproved, and that after giving forty-eight hours' notice he was to resume hostilities. Two days later another meeting took place between Johnston and Sherman, at which the former agreed to surrender the confederate army of the Tennessee on the same terms that had been granted to Lee's army. The men laid down their arms, which were deposited at Greensborough, though a few of the cavalry tried to get away to Mississippi.

Johnston's farewell to his troops was worthy of his high character as a leader of brave men. He said he expected them to keep the terms agreed upon and to discharge the obligations of good and faithful citizens as well as they had performed the duties of soldiers in the field. By such a course, he told them, they would secure comfort and restore tranquillity to the country. Johnston had almost given his life more than once for the Confederacy, but seeing that it was hopelessly ruined, he accepted the results with dignity and in good faith. The federal government had triumphed, and he urged an honest submission on the part of all.

Knowing that some would condemn his course, he published an address some time afterward to the people of North and South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, giving the reasons that led him to sign the convention. He proved in the clearest manner that the weakness of the confederate armies made it folly for them to persist any longer. At the time of his surrender, his army was the only one in the Confederacy that approached any thing like respectable proportions. "The United States," said he, "could have brought against it twelve or fifteen times its number. With such odds against us, without the means of procuring ammunition or repairing arms, without money or credit to provide food, it was impossible to continue the war, except as robbers."

On the 14th of April (the day on which Lincoln was assassinated), the very flag that had been lowered at Fort Sumter just four years before, was run up again over the ruins. It had been lowered by *Major* Robert Anderson and it was now raised by *General* Robert Anderson. General J. H. Wilson and his cavalry captured Macon,

Georgia, on the 21st of the same month. The remainder of the confederate forces east of the Mississippi were surrendered by General Dick Taylor on the 4th of May, and on the same day Admiral Farrand surrendered to Admiral Thatcher all the naval forces of

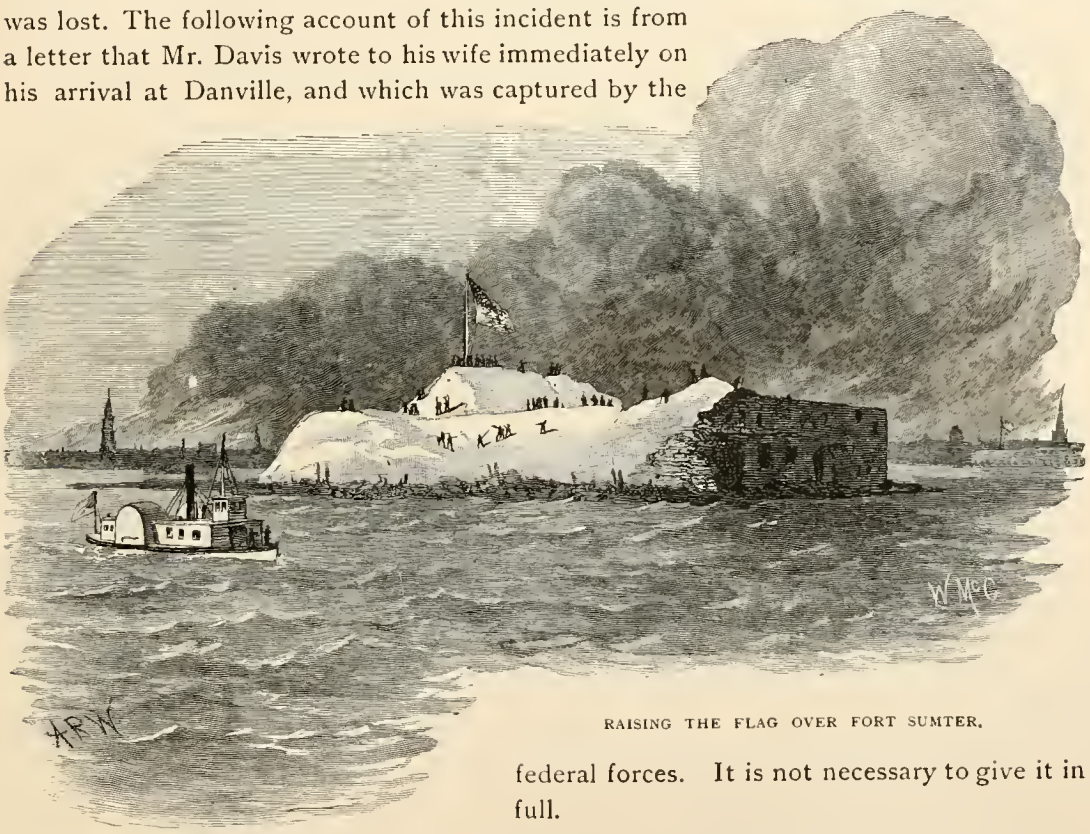
MEETING OF SHERMAN AND JOHNSTON.

the Confederacy then blockaded on the Tombigbee River. Kirby Smith was beyond the Mississippi boasting that he would keep up the fight indefinitely, but the soldiers were tired out and deserted so fast that Smith, Magruder, Walker and others fled beyond the limits of the United States. What was left of their forces passed under the command of General Brent, who surrendered to General Canby on the 26th of May.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

EVENTS OF 1865. PEACE FULLY RESTORED.

YOU will remember that on Sunday, April 2, Jefferson Davis was sitting in church in Richmond, when a messenger called him out and handed him a telegram from General Lee, saying that his lines had been broken by the union army and Richmond was lost. The following account of this incident is from a letter that Mr. Davis wrote to his wife immediately on his arrival at Danville, and which was captured by the federal forces. It is not necessary to give it in full.



RAISING THE FLAG OVER FORT SUMTER.

DANVILLE, VA., 5 April, '65.

MY DEAR WIFE: I have in vain sought to get into communication with General Lee, and have postponed writing in the hope that I would soon be able to speak to you with some confidence of the future.

On last Sunday I was called out of church to receive a telegram, announcing that General Lee could not hold his position longer than till night and warning me that we must leave Richmond, as the army would commence retiring that evening. I made the necessary arrangements at my office, and went to our house to have the proper dispositions made there. Nothing had been done after you left, and but little could be done

in the few hours which remained before the train was to leave. I packed the bust and gave it to Jno. Davis, who offered to take it and put it where it should never be found by a Yankee. I also gave him charge of the painting "The Heroes of the Valley." Both were removed after dark. The furniture of the house was left.

I had short notice, was interrupted so often, and so little aided that the results are very unsatisfactory.

The people here have been very kind and the mayor and council have offered assistance in the matter of quarters, and have very handsomely declared their unabated confidence—I do not wish to leave Virginia, but can not decide on my movements until those of the army are better developed—I hope you are comfortable and trust soon to hear from you.

Kiss my dear children—I weary of this sad recital, and have nothing pleasant to tell.

May God have you in His holy keeping is the fervent prayer of your ever affectionate HUSBAND.

Jefferson Davis made his way to Danville, Virginia, where he issued a proclamation claiming that the Confederacy, instead of being defeated, had simply entered on a "new phase of the struggle," in which the advantage still remained with the defenders. This was dated April 5. A few days later he joined General Johnston, and saw how idle it was to think of resistance.

While at Charlotte, North Carolina, consulting with his cabinet, and doing what he could to secure the acceptance by General Sherman of General Johnston's "memorandum," he wrote the following interesting letter to his wife, in which will be found references to the same all-important subject:

CHARLOTTE, N. C., April 23, 1865.

MY DEAR WINNIE: I have been detained here longer than was expected when the last telegram was sent to you. I am uncertain where you are, and deeply feel the necessity of being with you, if even for a brief time, under our altered circumstances. Governor Vance and General Hampton propose to meet me here, and General Johnston sent me a request to remain at some point where he could readily communicate with me. Under these circumstances I have asked Mr. Harrison to go in search of you, and to render such assistance as he may. Your brother William telegraphed, in reply to my inquiry, that you were at Abbeville, and that he would go to see you. My last dispatch was sent to that place, and to the care of Mr. Burt. Your own feelings will convey to you an idea of my solicitude for you and our family, and I will not distress by describing it.

The dispersion of Lee's army and the surrender of the remnant which remained with him destroyed the hopes I entertained when we parted. Had that army held together, I am now confident we could have successfully executed the plan which I sketched to you, and would have been to-day on the high road to independence. Even after that disaster, if the men who "straggled," say thirty or forty thousand in number,

had come back with their arms and with a disposition to fight, we might have repaired the damage; but all was sadly the reverse of that. They threw away their arms and were uncontrollably resolved to go home. The small guards along the road have sometimes been unable to prevent the pillage of trains and depots. Panic has seized the country.

J. E. Johnston and Beauregard were hopeless as to recruiting their forces from the dispersed men of Lee's army, and equally so as to their ability to check Sherman with the forces they had. Their only idea was to retreat; of the power to do so they were doubtful, and subsequent desertions from their troops have materially diminished their strength, and, I learn, still more weakened their confidence.

The loss of arms has been so great that should the spirit of the people rise to the occasion it would not be at this time possible adequately to supply them with the weapons of war.

General Johnston had several interviews with Sherman, and agreed on a suspension of hostilities and the reference of terms of pacification. They are secret, and may be rejected by the Yankee government.

To us they are hard enough, though freed from wanton humiliation and expressly recognizing the state governments and the rights of person and property as secured by the constitutions of the United States and the several states.

General Breckinridge was a party to the last consultation and to the agreement. Judge Reagan went with him and approved the agreement, though not present at the conference.

Each member of the cabinet is to give his opinion in writing to-day; first, upon the acceptance of the terms; second, upon the mode of proceeding if accepted. The issue is one which it is very painful for me to meet. On one hand is the long night of oppression which will follow the return of our people to the "Union;" on the other the suffering of the women and children, and carnage among the few brave patriots who would still oppose the invader, and who, unless the people would rise *en masse* to sustain them, would struggle but to die in vain.

I think my judgment is undisturbed by any pride of opinion or of place. I have prayed to our Heavenly Father to give me wisdom and fortitude equal to the demands of the position in which Providence has placed me. I have sacrificed so much for the cause of the Confederacy that I can measure my ability to make any future sacrifice required, and am assured there is but one to which I am not equal, my wife and my children. How they are to be saved from degradation or want is now my care. During the suspension of hostilities you may have the best opportunity to go to Mississippi, and thence either to sail from Mobile for a foreign port, or to cross the river and proceed to Texas, as the one or the other may be more practicable. The little sterling you have will be a very scanty store, and under other circumstances would not be counted, but if our land can be sold that will secure you from absolute want. For myself it may be that our enemy will prefer to banish me; it may be that a devoted band of cavalry will cling to me, and that I can force my way across the Mississippi, and, if nothing can be done there which it will be proper to do, then I can go to Mexico and have the world from which to choose a location.

Dear wife, this is not the fate to which I invited when the future was rose-colored to us both, but I know you will bear it even better than myself, and that of us two I alone will ever look back reproachfully on my past career. I have thus entered on the emotions involved in the future to guard against contingencies. My stay will not be prolonged a day beyond the prospect of useful labor here, and there is every reason to suppose that I will be with you a few days after Mr. Harrison arrives.

Mrs. Omelia behaved very strangely about putting the things as you directed. Robert says she would not permit him to pack, that she even took groceries out of the mess chest when he had put a small quantity there. Little Maggie's saddle was concealed, and I learned after we left Richmond was not with the saddles and bridles which I directed to be all put together.

At the same time I was informed that your saddle had been sent to the saddler's and left there.

Every body seemed afraid of connection with our property, and your carriage was sent to the depot to be brought with me; a plea was made that it could not go on the cars of that train, but should follow in the next; specific charge and promise was given, but the carriage was left.

The notice to leave was given on Sunday; but few hours were allowed, and my public duties compelled me to rely on others; count on nothing as saved which you valued except the bust, and that had to be left behind.

Mrs. Omelia said she was charged, in the event of our having to leave, to place the valuables with the Sisters, and that she would distribute every thing. I told her to sell what she could, and, after feeling distrust, asked Mrs. Grant to observe her, and after that I became convinced that she, too, probably under the influence of her husband, was afraid to be known as having close relations with us.

Kiss Maggie and the children many times for me. The only yearning heart in the final hour was poor old Sara wishing for "pie cake;" and thus I left our late home. No bad preparation for a search for another. Dear children, I can say nothing to them, but for you and them my heart is full, my prayers constant, and my hopes are the trust I feel in the mercy of God.

Farewell, my dear; there may be better things in store for us than are now in view, but my love is all I have to offer, and that has the value of a thing long possessed, and sure not to be lost. Once more, and, with God's favor, for a short time only, farewell.

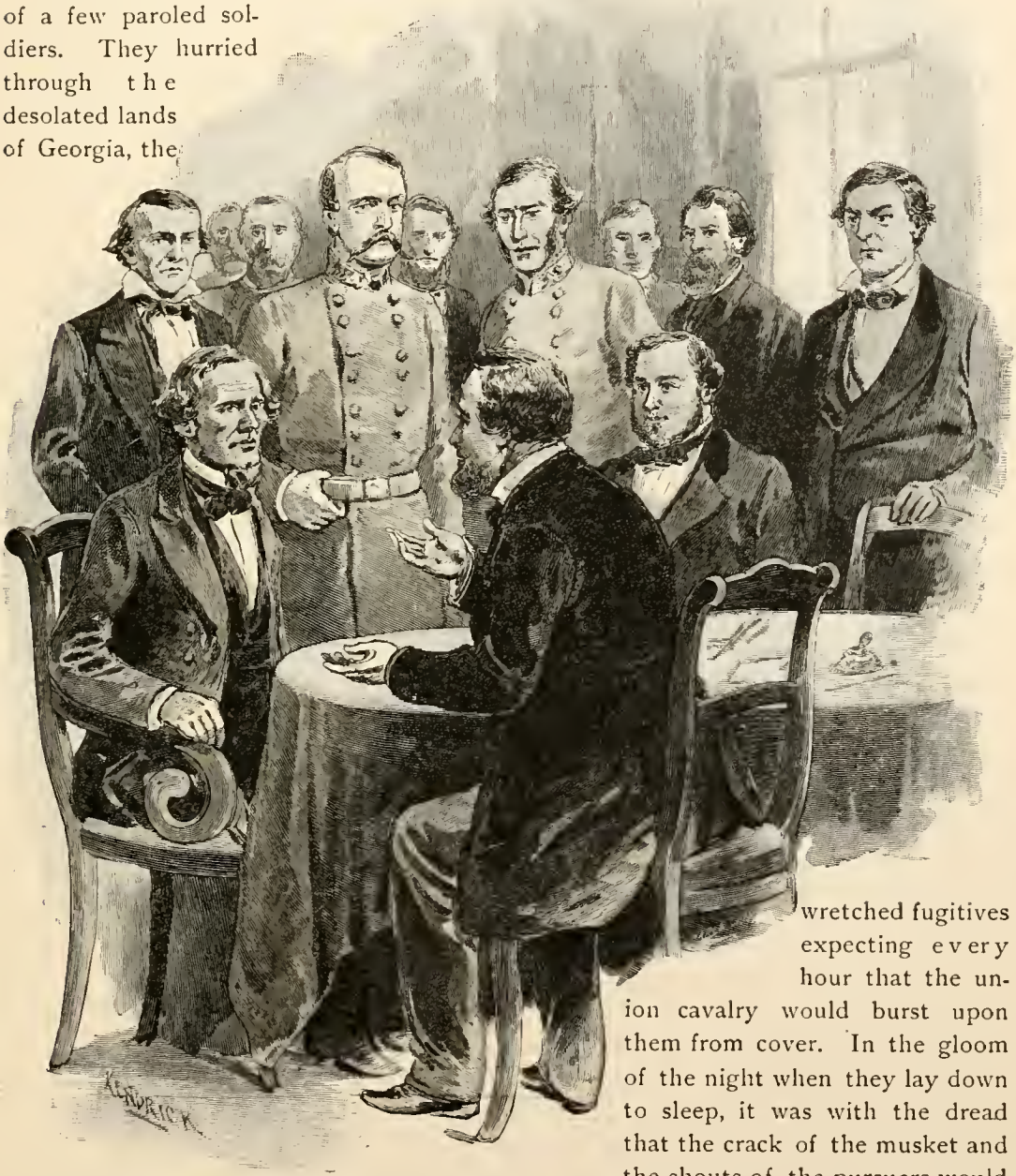
YOUR HUSBAND.

After General Johnston surrendered, as has been told in another place, it was feared that Davis would penetrate further to the south-west, set up the confederate government again, and continue the struggle with the help of General Kirby Smith, who gave evidence of a desire to try something of the kind. General J. H. Wilson, therefore, was ordered to cover every road with his cavalry and to use the utmost diligence for the arrest of the fugitive president.

Davis had no hope of the independence of the South, but he thought that if Kirby Smith showed a defiant front, he would be likely to gain better terms for himself and

associates. He determined, therefore, that as soon as he could place his family in a safe position, he would cross the Chattahoochee, and, having joined the troops still in arms with General Taylor, would go with them to the head-quarters of Kirby Smith.

His escort at this time consisted only of a few paroled soldiers. They hurried through the desolated lands of Georgia, the wretched fugitives expecting every hour that the union cavalry would burst upon them from cover. In the gloom of the night when they lay down to sleep, it was with the dread that the crack of the musket and the shouts of the pursuers would break in upon them. As soon as



THE LAST MEETING OF THE CONFEDERATE CABINET.

it was light they were under way again, continually glancing behind and aside, while they stole along under the cover of the trees, just as the runaway slaves had fled many a time through the dismal swamps and thickets, with the blood-hounds baying on their trail.

It was reported that Mr. Davis had a large amount of specie with him. This statement has been repeatedly made since then, and as repeatedly denied.

On the morning of May 10, just as it was growing light, Mr. Davis, while sleeping in his tent at Irwinsville, in Wilkinson County, Georgia, was awakened by his servant with the startling news that the camp was surrounded by federal cavalry. He sprang up to run for his horse, hoping that he might get away, but the animal was already in the hands of his pursuers. He attempted to get out of the camp in partial disguise, but was recognized and made prisoner. The captors were Lieutenant-colonel Pritchard of the Fourth Michigan cavalry and a company of men belonging to the corps of General Wilson. The persons captured were Mr. Davis, his wife and children, his postmaster Mr. Reagan, his private secretary Colonel Harrison, and his aides-de-camp, who were all taken to Macon and thence to Fortress Monroe, Virginia.

Now that the deposed president of the Confederacy had been caught, the national government was at a loss what to do with him. In the first flush of fury over the assassination of Mr. Lincoln, President Johnson issued a proclamation on the 2d of May offering large rewards for the capture of Jefferson Davis, Jacob Thompson, Clement C. Clay, Beverly Tucker, George N. Saunders, W. C. Clery, and others, who were accused of forming the plot for the murder of the president. It should be stated, however, that there was never the slightest ground for this fearful charge. The wretched John Wilkes Booth and his few companions in Washington were the only ones concerned in the plot.

Jefferson Davis was kept at Fortress Monroe until his health was impaired. His trial was postponed from time to time and finally on the 13th of May, 1867, he was released on bail for six months. Horace Greeley, the famous editor of the *New York Tribune*, was one of his bondsmen. Mr. Davis went to Canada and after several postponements of his trial, the prosecution was at last dropped on the 6th of February, 1869.

It should be made known that in addition to the four persons hanged for being concerned in the assassination of President Lincoln, there was only one other person executed for the part he had taken in the war for secession: this was Captain Wirz, formerly an officer in the confederate army and afterward keeper of the military prison at Andersonville, South Carolina. He was guilty of so many brutalities toward the union prisoners under his charge that he richly deserved his fate. He was hanged on the 10th of November, 1865.

When the news of Mr. Davis's arrest reached England, the government on the 2d of June declared all the ports, harbors and waters belonging to Great Britain to be closed against any vessel bearing the confederate flag. The French government took the same step on the 6th of June.

The army of the Potomac and most of the forces under Sherman were marched to

Washington during the month of May, and on the 22d and 23d of that month one of the grandest reviews ever seen in the world took place in Washington. The mustering out of the men began at once, and by the 1st of July 800,000 soldiers had been discharged. The guerrillas that were committing outrages in some of the western states disappeared before the orders of the war department declaring that all persons found in arms against the United States after a specified date would be treated as robbers and outlaws. The southern ports were officially opened; the men who had been set free on parole were declared exchanged, and those confined in the northern states were, July 29, set free on taking the oath of allegiance.

Strange as it may seem, there was one confederate flag still flying, but it was not on the land. The story is an interesting one and I will tell it in this place.

James I. Waddell was born at Pittsboro, North Carolina, in 1824. He graduated at the Naval Academy and soon showed that he was of superior character. He was twice honorably mentioned in the naval reports,—for relieving the fever stricken crew of the *Release* off Matanzas and for leading a successful expedition into China in 1860. Like Decatur and Paul Jones he was fond of danger in almost any form.

Waddell followed his state into secession, but up to 1863 he figured in the western river engagements and in defending the approaches to Richmond by water. Then he was sent to London, to negotiate for a cruiser like the *Alabama*. It was a year before he succeeded, for he was closely watched by United States detectives, but in the fall of 1864 he gained his point. The steamer *Laurel*, flying the British flag, put to sea with a mysterious load of freight and passengers and steamed for the Madeira Islands. At Desertas, a secluded nook, near those islands, lay the *Sea King*, a ship-rigged steamer of 800 tons, that had been sold to the confederate agents in London, and paid for out of the cotton fund. Waddell took command of her in the name of the Confederacy and re-christened her the *Shenandoah*. She was a full-rigged steamer ship, 220 feet long, 35 feet beam, with iron masts and lower yards. She carried royal studding sails, with patent reefing top sails, and with a fair breeze and a full crew had little to fear in the way of pursuit.

Captain Waddell explained to the crew the nature of the enterprise and gave each sailor his choice whether to enlist or not. Forty-two swore allegiance to the cause. Then the stores were taken aboard from the *Laurel*, and steaming for Melbourne, the *Shenandoah* was gradually changed from a harmless merchantman into an armed cruiser. She carried six eight-inch shell guns, two thirty-two pound Whitworth rifles and a couple of twelve-pounders.

As was to be expected, the English residents at Melbourne gave the *Shenandoah* a warm welcome and she stayed there twenty days. Fully manned and furnished with supplies, she sailed away on her career of destruction and was not docked again for more than a year.

Nine captures were made in the Atlantic, and then Waddell saw that he must seek new pastures. The federals had become so alarmed by the devastation of the *Alabama*, that, as you have been told, they resorted to the protection of neutral flags, and there was little left for the cruiser which started out so late. Accordingly, the *Shenandoah* was

headed toward the distant sea of Okhotsk, where the American whalers were busy, with no thought of molestation from hostile cruisers. He first ran down the *Abigail*, a whaling brig owned in New Bedford. Thomas Manning, her captured pilot, willingly agreed to act in the same capacity for his captor. He took his place at the wheel and guided the *Shenandoah* over the frosty waters of Behring Strait among the fleet of New England whalers. For six months the steamer was dodging the icebergs, battling the sleet and snow, and burning the whaling vessels to the water's edge. At the end of that period the *Shenandoah* had made thirty-eight captures, wrecked the New England fleet, taken 1,053 prisoners, and inflicted damages to the amount of a million and a half of dollars.

In those far-off waters no news could reach Waddell from home. His friends thought that it would be a good thing to gain some tidings of events in America. The prow of the *Shenandoah* was turned southward; but day after day passed without a sail rising on the horizon, and it was not until August 2, that an English bark was sighted. She proved to be the *Barracouta* and she carried news indeed.

The Confederacy had been dead for months, during which time Captain Waddell had been wrecking right and left, in the face of the proclamation that all found in arms against the United States would be treated as outlaws. The flag of the *Shenandoah* represented a nationality that had no existence.

But one thing remained to be done, to crowd all steam for some neutral port, for if captured, he and his crew would meet the fate of pirates. All sails were set, and under full steam Captain Waddell made for Sydney. That port was thousands of miles away, but the *Shenandoah* was good for fifteen miles an hour and her crew would fight as men fight who have ropes around their necks. Hoping that something might be left for him and his men out of the cotton fund, he changed his course for Liverpool. He steamed around Cape Good Hope through a furious storm, and after escaping several times by a hair's breadth the federal cruisers that were hunting for him, he ran into the Mersey on the 5th of November, 1865, and surrendered to the queen. In his letter to Earl Russell, he gave the whole history of the cruise of the *Shenandoah* and pleaded ignorance of the confederate collapse for what he had done since then. He admitted that his vessel, according to the rules of war, was the lawful property of the United States. His crew were paid out of the cotton fund, as it is called, which remains to-day an unclaimed deposit in the Bank of England. Waddell settled near London for a time, but afterward accepted a captaincy under the Pacific Mail Company.

After several years' service he took a contract from the state of Maryland to suppress the pirates on her oyster beds. With a small police boat, manned by a crew of ten men and two howitzers, he steamed after his game. It was a striking contrast to his career on the deck of the dreaded *Shenandoah*, but he believed in doing well whatever he undertook to do. He fell in with a fleet of the oyster thieves, above the mouth of a small stream known as the Honga River. When he called on them to surrender they laughed at him. He sank one boat, drove three ashore, captured three, and the rest escaped by flight. He ended the oyster war in less than half an hour.

Captain Waddell died in 1886 in Annapolis, Maryland, having been the only sailor who carried the flag of the Lost Cause around the world.

YOSEMITE VALLEY.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

THE UNITED STATES SANITARY AND THE UNITED STATES CHRISTIAN COMMISSION.

AS nearly as can be ascertained, the total number of troops furnished to the union army, 1861–65, was 2,859,132.

The number of casualties in the volunteer and regular armies, during that period was—Killed in battle, 61,362; died of wounds, 34,727; died of disease, 183,287; total died 279,376; total deserted, 199,105.

Number of confederate soldiers who died of wounds or disease (partial statement) 133,821; deserted (partial statement), 104,428.

Number of United States troops captured during the war, 212,608; confederate troops captured, 476,169.

Number of United States troops paroled on the field, 16,431; confederate troops paroled on the field, 248,599.

Number of United States troops who died while prisoners, 29,725; confederate troops who died while prisoners, 26,774.

In addition to this fearful total, it is estimated that the number in both armies crippled or permanently disabled by disease was 400,000, so that the war for the union cost a full million of able bodied men.

No record of the great struggle would be complete without a reference to the beneficent work of two organizations to which it gave rise: *The United States Sanitary Commission, and The United States Christian Commission.* The former was organized at the opening of the struggle and the second shortly after. They were designed for the temporal and spiritual help of the soldiers.

You may not have reflected that one of the great evils of war is the general laxity of morals that it causes. Many men, who led the most upright of lives while at home, surrounded by friends and their blessed influences, often forgot their moral obligations when they entered the ranks. Thus the war not only caused death and grievous wounds to the bodies of tens of thousands of our brave patriots, but was equally fatal to their moral welfare. Well aware of this danger, the United States Christian Commission not only gave temporal aid in the way of food and clothing, but distributed a countless number of books, pamphlets and papers for the entertainment, instruction and religious comfort of the soldiers in the field, the camp and the hospital. Oftentimes the hours were intolerably weary, and after the loving letters from home were read over and over again, and the equally loving ones written in return, the soldier turned with delight to the book or pamphlet placed in his hand by these good people. If the war was demoralizing in many respects, it produced, both in the northern and southern armies, some of the brightest examples of Christian manhood that have ever commanded the reverence of mankind.

Now, if you will look at the statistics which I have given, you will notice a striking fact—the number of soldiers that died from disease was three times as great as the number killed in battle. When you read about the campaigns of large bodies of men, you naturally think of the deaths as the result of the fighting alone, but these figures show that it is far otherwise.

It is proper that when you think of the glory of war you should recall the picture of the other side.

Troops are exposed to peculiar dangers. The wild enthusiasm that caused tens of thousands to rush into the ranks, forbade much thought of the risk to their health. These young men were the very ones, who, from their previous habits and modes of life, were not only the least likely to bear the exposure and privation, but were certain to furnish many victims to the diseases that always scourge armies. They were sure to suffer from the want of food, many times unfit to eat, they would be exposed to violent changes in the temperature, to rain, snow, heat, cold, to the miasma of swamps, to poisonous water, pestilence, neglected wounds and illness, and indeed to every possible peril to the body as well as the mind.

The majority of officers who had charge of the recruits were as ignorant as they, so that it might be said that for months the armies were simply patriotic mobs, eager only for the chance to be led against each other. There was a general impression among the volunteers that they should not be governed with the strictness of usual military discipline. No regular sanitary system was practicable, where it was not needed. Neglect was everywhere due to the ignorance of hygienic laws, the incompetency of the officers and the feebleness of the military organization.

During the months of May and June, 1861, the regiments that reached Washington were in the most unsatisfactory condition. Most of them came crowded together in cattle-cars, and as ill provided for as so many kine, and without any means of relief for those who should fall ill or succumb to their exposure. Arriving in Washington, they found that no preparations had been made to receive them. They stood for hours in the drenching rain or broiling sun, waiting half-starved for their rations, while their inexperienced commissaries and quartermasters ran back and forth not knowing what to do. After a time, they reached their camps, where the food given them was so disgusting that their stomachs revolted, and not until they were suffering the actual pangs of hunger could they force themselves to eat it.

The soldier lay upon the muddy ground with filthy straw scattered around and a shoddy blanket his sole protection. Some of these blankets were so rotten that the owners would hold them up with one hand while they thrust the fingers of the other through them, just as you would puncture damp tissue-paper. The men who furnished this flimsy stuff made themselves wealthy, but they caused the death of thousands of our brave soldiers. Regular army officers predicted that before the close of the summer fully one half of the volunteers would die from diseases which were preventable by wise measures of precaution.

The perils from this state of things soon became so fearful, and the authorities seemed so helpless to provide the remedy, that a number of thoughtful men determined

to try the experiment of infusing some of the popular sympathy and enthusiasm into the machinery of the government. They did not mean to embarrass it by interfering with any plans, but to do every thing to aid it in carrying them out. This was the germ of the Sanitary Commission.

I hardly need tell you that the first movement for army relief was by the women of the country, for they are always the foremost in such blessed works. You may remember that the president's call for troops appeared on the 15th of April, 1861. On that day, the women of Bridgeport, Connecticut, organized a society for the purpose of affording relief and comfort to the volunteers. Similar steps were taken in Charlestown on the same day, and at Lowell a few days later. The plans of these good people, however, were so vague during those days of excitement, that they were powerless to do much in the direction desired. The first society that fairly represented the principles afterward fully developed in the Sanitary Commission was the Women's Central Relief Association of New York.

It was during the month of April, 1861, that Rev. Dr. Bellows (who afterward became the president of the Sanitary Commission), and Dr. Elisha Harris attended a meeting called at the "Infirmary of Women," to devise some means of helping forward the object. After an earnest discussion, it was decided to call a general meeting at the Cooper Institute to perfect the plan. To this call were attached the names of ninety-two of the best known and most influential ladies in the city of New York. The constitution was prepared by Dr. Bellows, and the association was fully organized.

It was soon found that the authorities looked with disfavor upon the object of these good people, which they thought likely to cause disturbance and trouble. Their zeal, however, could not be cooled, and they determined to consult directly with the headquarters in Washington.

Meanwhile "The Physicians and Surgeons of the Hospitals of New York," and "The New York Medical Association for Furnishing Hospital Supplies," had met a number of times, and the last-named body opened a depot for lint, bandages, etc. One of the principal employments of the young ladies at their meetings was that of scraping lint for the soldiers. Steps were taken for selecting and training suitable persons to act as nurses in the hospitals.

It soon became clear that the real difficulty was as to how all these voluntary offerings could be best made available for the good of the army. Accordingly, delegates from the various associations reached Washington on the 16th of May. You who visit our national capital to-day can form no idea of the confusion which reigned at that time. Direct communication with the north had been cut off on the 19th of April, and was re-established only on the day that the delegates reached the capital. Troops were gathering, but very little preparation was made for them; the various departments were overworked, and indeed every thing was disordered.

It is at such times that the government is almost smothered by the multitude of counselors, and it was through a swarm of such intermeddlers that the New York delegation was forced to make its way, impelled by the feeling that their business was one of the most important that could engage the attention of the authorities. Their per-

sonal character insured them courteous treatment, but they could not fail to see that there was but little faith in their mission.

They first called upon General Scott, whom they urged to re-inspect the army in order to remove the men and mere boys that were already suffering from disease when mustered into the service. This was done with most beneficent results, though the

HORACE GREELEY.

number afflicted was found to be so vast that the authorities dare not dismiss them all through fear of spreading consternation throughout the country.

The next official visited was Surgeon-general Wood, who listened kindly, but said that any interference with the medical department could not fail to be disastrous. The most that the Sanitary Commission could secure was that of a mere advisory position toward the medical bureau.

The theory of the commission, it may be said, was that of taking means of preventing sickness, by securing the best possible health regulations through the army. You know that Dr. Franklin said that an ounce of prevention is better than a pound of cure, and you can readily understand how much wiser it is to keep the body in a vigorous condition than it is to allow it to become diseased, even though one is sure of the best medical attendance.

Finally, after tedious delays and discouraging opposition, the secretary of war, on the 9th of June, 1861, issued an order appointing Henry W. Bellows, D.D., Prof. A. D. Bache, LL.D., Prof. Jeffries Wyman, M.D., W. H. Van Buren, D.D., Wolcott Gibbs, M.D., Samuel G. Howe, M.D., R. C. Wood, Surgeon U. S. A., G. W. Cullum, U. S. A., Alexander E. Shiras, U. S. A., in connection with such others as they might choose to associate with them, "A Commission of Inquiry and Advice in respect to the Sanitary Interests of the United States forces."

No compensation was to be given to the members of the commission. They were to have a room for their use in Washington, and it was their duty to conduct their inquiries to the principles and practices connected with the inspection of recruits and enlisted men, the sanitary condition of volunteers, to the means of preserving and restoring the health, and of securing the general comfort and efficiency of the troops, to the proper provision of cooks, nurses and hospitals, and to other subjects of a like nature. The mode by which these inquiries were to be conducted was detailed.

On the 12th of June the gentlemen named (with the exception of Professor Wyman, who declined his appointment), met in Washington and organized by the selection of the Rev. Dr. Bellows as president. Other ably qualified gentlemen were secured as colleagues, and the following day the president and secretary of war gave their formal sanction to the plan of organization by affixing their signatures. This plan formed the constitution of the Sanitary Commission.

Now let us glance at the work done by this noble association, whose funds, amounting to millions of dollars, were the voluntary offering of the patriotic men and women of the country.

The first work was the inspection of twenty camps of volunteers in the neighborhood of Washington, just before the battle of Bull Run. It may be said that everything was found wrong. There was no drainage provided, the tents were so crowded at night that the air was poisoned, personal cleanliness did not exist, the clothing was wretched and filthy to the last degree, and there was hardly a pretense of performing the ordinary police duties of camp. No green vegetables were allowed to be issued, and the army was believed to be in danger of decimation by scurvy and dysentery. The cooking was so poor that it did not deserve the name.

An inspection of the camps in the West was made, and the report was the same. The commission were deeply impressed by these facts, and they strongly urged preventive measures to be taken by the government, but few of their recommendations were adopted.

Seven inspectors made a thorough investigation of the causes which produced the fearful state of things after the battle of Bull Run. The result was such a proof of the

inefficiency of the government measures that the report for a time was kept from circulation.

Another subject which demanded and received attention was that of the military hospitals. Buildings that had never been intended for such purposes were thus used from necessity. It followed, of course, that no attention was paid to location, ventilation, accommodation of the patients in wards, and conveniences outside of them.

The call for a radical improvement was so necessary that Dr. Van Buren and Dr. Agnew submitted plans to the government, which, after some modification, were adopted. The sites for five model hospitals were selected and the buildings erected. The plans were substantially followed at all points where general military hospitals were located. The arrangements thus made for the care of the sick and wounded were in accord with the requirements of humanity and science.

The next important step was to provide for a thorough and intelligent inspection of the camps. Six competent gentlemen were selected. Dr. Buel was assigned to the camps in Missouri; Dr. Aigner to Cairo, Ill.; Dr. Douglas to Gen. Banks' column in northern Virginia; Mr. Dunning to Fortress Monroe, and Dr. Tomes and Mr. Knapp to the department of the Potomac.

The duties of these inspectors were not only very arduous but very delicate, for they were likely to be required to report against the efficiency of the very officers by whose courtesy their inspection was permitted. This work, however, was done with rare discretion and success, and the system of inspection was one of the leading features of the commission's work during the war.

It did not take the commission long to discover that they were without the sympathy of the medical bureau. The surgeon-general felt no admiration for their methods and gave them no help. He had found the old system efficient, when the army numbered less than twenty thousand men, and he was so opposed to any interference from the outside that the commission finally felt compelled to ask either for the surgeon-general's removal or his honorable retirement. The request was not granted and the inevitable result was disastrous, because of the lack of co-operation by the medical agents of the government.

It should be stated that General McClellan gave earnest support to the commission; but great as was his influence at that time, he was not allowed to select his own medical director. There was urgent need for an "ambulance regiment," but the request for its organization was denied. Had it been granted, it would have done a great deal to relieve the horrors of the campaign in the Peninsula. The lack of proper arrangements for the transportation and care of the sick and wounded, and the character of the government nurses, added ten-fold to the sufferings of the poor men who took part in that disastrous campaign.

The truth was the commission had already made its power so strongly felt in the way of correcting old abuses that it aroused much jealousy and opposition among the authorities. The government naturally hesitated about changing the time-honored custom of managing matters, and was afraid that if too much was yielded to these

enthusiastic workers in the cause of humanity, they would upset and disorganize matters to a dangerous degree.

The latter part of the year was spent by the commission in introducing the system of inspection into every division of the army. Other questions, such as the voluntary contributions of hospital supplies and the arrangement of the statistics of the army, were carefully considered.

The first report of the commission was made to the secretary of war toward the close of the year and attracted wide attention. It presented a clear picture of the actual condition of the armed forces as made up from some four hundred inspections, which embraced every column of the army. There really seemed no subject under the province of this admirable organization which was not considered with a fullness and ability that compelled the praise of the journals that had been opposed to the commission.

One of the great results accomplished by the commission in 1862, was the reorganization of the medical department of the army. Previous to the war, the operations of this bureau had been confined to the wants of fifteen thousand men on a peace establishment. Its executive was a surgeon-general, with twenty-six surgeons and eighty assistant surgeons. Many of the surgeons were incapacitated for duty and one half were unfit for service in the field. The average length of service of the first thirteen was thirty-two years and of the rest twenty-three years.

At that time no such establishment as a general hospital existed in the army. All the military hospitals were post hospitals, the largest one at Fort Leavenworth containing only forty beds. You can understand that it was absolutely necessary to create at once the entire system by which these establishments are governed. There were no suitable buildings, no trained and sufficient medical staff, no skilled nurses, no arrangements for proper diet for the sick or provision for their clothing, no properly understood relations between general hospitals and regimental hospitals, no means of promptly supplying needed medicines, and no provision for the transportation of the sick and wounded.

It is utterly beyond your power to form any idea of the suffering endured during the early months of the war because of the lack of these necessities. It is my wish to deepen the horror which every one should feel for war, by presenting to you a true picture of the awful agonies which always follow in its path.

In reorganizing the medical department of the army, the first aim was to change the principle of promotion by seniority. The law was that these promotions should be based on the length of terms of service, so that it would often happen that mere years would elevate some feeble incompetent over the heads of those who were ten-fold better qualified. The commission wished to place a man at the head who was in the prime of his physical and mental powers and who was the best qualified person that could possibly be obtained.

The bill that passed creating this change provided for a thorough and complete system of inspection, for the erection of general hospitals, for the transfer of the transportation service of the sick and wounded from the quartermaster's to the medical

department, and for an enlarged ambulance system under the special control of that department. Great suffering and doubtless many deaths had resulted from the absence of the large supplies of medicines when needed at certain points after a great battle. Indeed, every possible contingency seemed to be provided for in the bill.

One of the great obstacles to the success of beneficent schemes, in this country, is political influence. When a legislator of broad views, liberal ideas, and true statesmanship succeeds in placing an excellent law on the statute books and feels assured of the fruition of the scheme to which he has given years of thought and labor, he discovers that the political powers above him have selected such incompetent or corrupt agents that failure is inevitable from the first.

Had I the space, I could give you numerous such instances in the history of our country. I recall one which you will find fully told in my "History of the Indian Wars of Our Country." The fierce Apaches of the Southwest, who had spread devastation, terror, and death through that section for years, were finally conquered and brought under the influence of civilization. They abandoned their warlike ways, and under the guidance of General Crook and his officers betook themselves to agriculture and the pursuits of peace.

The Apaches became interested in their new life. With the help of the kind-hearted and sagacious Crook, one of the best friends the American race ever had, everything went along smoothly and the era of safety and prosperity seemed to have come to the Southwest. He helped the Indians to find a market for the goods which they made, and for the products of the soil. They began saving money, looked after their children's education, and concluded to become true friends of the white people in every respect.

It was at this delicate crisis that the politicians in Washington interfered. The happy Apaches were ordered off their reservation and sent to that of the San Carlos, where the water is brackish, the soil sterile, the flies unbearable, and they were unable to raise enough to save their families from starvation.

Need I tell you the consequence? The exasperated warriors refused to obey and took to the war-path. Once again the torch, the knife, and death held carnival along the border. Scores of lives were lost and hundreds of thousands of dollars' worth of property destroyed before the hostiles were run down and brought into submission.

The Sanitary Commission suffered in the same way, though perhaps to a less serious extent. Dr. Wm. A. Hammond, assistant surgeon in the regular army, was fixed upon as its head. He had been employed, since the outbreak of the war, in organizing general hospitals at Chambersburg, Hagerstown, Baltimore, and Wheeling, attracting attention by his energy and ability, but was handicapped as surgeon-general by the appointment of assistants whose chief qualifications lay in the friendship of men of political influence.

Now, let us glance at the work done by the Sanitary Commission. Dr. J. S. Newberry, of Cleveland, Ohio, superintended the work in the valley of the Mississippi. He understood all the requirements of the vast task before him. Going to Chicago, he aroused the popular sympathy and formed the Chicago and Northwestern branch of the commission, which proved to be one of the most effective aids of the organization.

Dr. Newberry then established a branch in Cleveland, which was aided by the

"Soldiers' Relief Society of Northern Ohio," one of the first relief societies brought into existence by the war. Thence he visited Columbus, Cincinnati and Louisville, where he was welcomed in the same cordial manner and where he established branches. Other branches were also organized at Indianapolis, Detroit, and at Pittsburg one of the most important contributing depots under the control of the commission was shortly after established.

The home field having been organized, Dr. Newberry visited Louisville, the headquarters at that time of the army which was to drive the confederates out of Kentucky. The central office of the western department was established there. During the autumn and winter nearly all the regiments in Kentucky were inspected and a large amount of stores distributed among them. This work was done with such tact and thoroughness that the medical director thanked them, and the foundation of the harmony and co-operation between the medical authorities and the agents of the commission was established.

In February, 1862, a soldiers' home was founded by the Kentucky branch at Louisville, and soon after another at Cairo under the direction of the Chicago branch. They were the first of those resting places which have done so much to relieve the sufferings of the patriots that risked their lives for their country. Before the war closed thirteen of them were in operation in the west, where more than six hundred thousand soldiers were lodged and two million five hundred thousand meals were given.

You will recall that on the 12th of February, 1862, Fort Donelson on the Cumberland River was invested by a large force under General Grant and that a great many lives were lost before it was captured. Hundreds of wounded were left on the field during the most trying season of the year. On receipt of the news of the surrender, the branch commission at Cincinnati procured a steamer, and loading it with stores, gathered in two days for the relief of the wounded, hurried down the Ohio. On the boat were a number of members of the commission and some of the most eminent surgeons of the city. Dr. Newberry joined them at Louisville with other friends and more supplies for the wounded.

Reaching the fort, they found matters in a dreadful condition. There were two so-called hospital boats in the service of the government. They were ill-supplied with medicines and appliances and little more could be done than to place the wounded on board. Let me quote what an eye-witness says :

"Some were just as they had been left by the fortune of war (four days before) ; their wounds, as yet, undressed, smeared with filth and blood, and all their wants unsupplied. Others had had their wounds dressed one, two, or three days before. Others still, were under the surgeon's hands, receiving such care as could be given them by men overburdened by the number of their patients, worn out by excessive and long-continued labor, without an article of clothing to give to any for a change, or an extra blanket; without bandages or dressings, with but two ounces of cerate to three hundred men, with few medicines and no stimulants, and with nothing but corn meal gruel, hard bread, and bacon to dispense for food."

At that time the whole North was ringing with the rejoicings of the victory, which was one of the most splendid of the war. How few realized the terrible background of the picture!

The agents of the commission spent several days and nights in relieving the pressing wants of the sufferers and took back to Cincinnati as many of the wounded as they could accommodate on their steamer.

The battle of Shiloh took place in April and the commission again engaged actively in their humane work. As soon as a great battle was known to be in progress, the Chicago branch sent a special train to Cairo, with a large amount of supplies, surgeons and nurses. No one can estimate the good that was done.

The commission next placed at the disposal of the government its limited capacity for transporting the sick and wounded in the campaign on the Peninsula. The acting surgeon-general approved of the proposition of the commission to help in carrying by steamers to hospitals at the north, such of the disabled as the medical director of the army of the Potomac should confide to his care.

The commission's steamer arrived in the river during the siege of Yorktown. The commission had already sent thither a large amount of supplies for the army and had two large boats, used as store-houses, besides a well-provided depot on shore. Proof was quickly given of the need for such service as this. The first sick men seen were found crowded in a number of log huts, that had been used by the confederates for barracks. The place was surrounded by pestilential swamps and there the poor soldiers lay dying by scores still clothed in their uniforms and many with their caps on their heads. There were only a few attendants, no clothing, no medicines, and the surgeons in charge were dazed by their own helplessness.

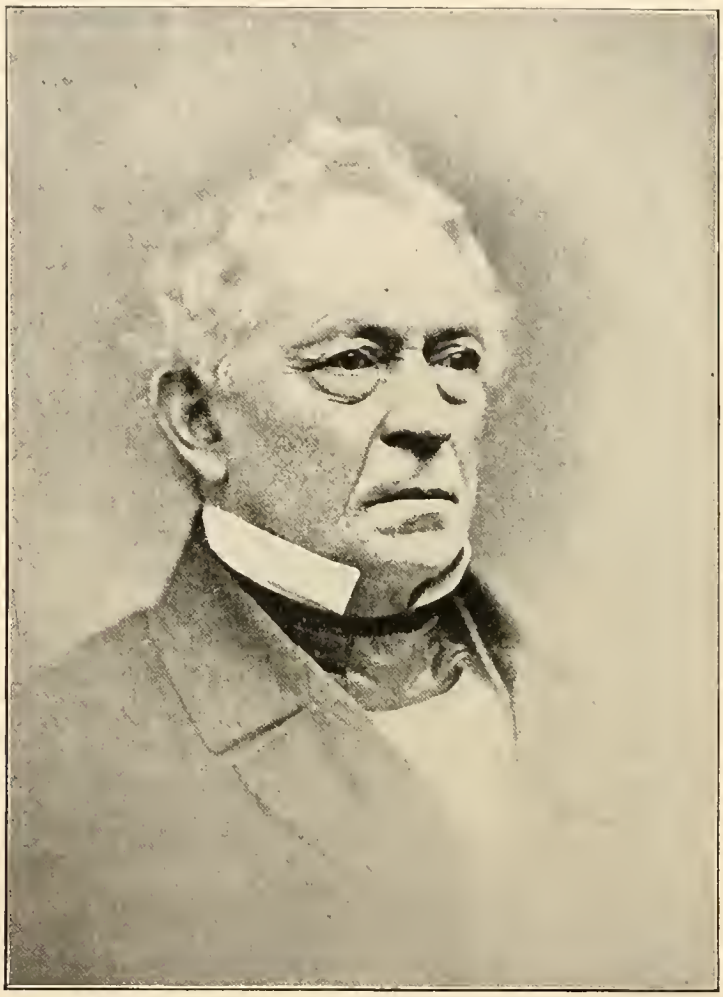
In the course of the day, about two hundred and fifty men were removed by the agents of the commission. They were tenderly nursed, were furnished with clean clothing and good food and indeed received all the comforts of the best of hospitals. As soon as the steamer left the place, nearly every patient began to improve and not a single man died on the voyage to New York. What more striking proof could have been given of the efficiency of the Sanitary Commission in saving life and alleviating the horrors of war?

Yorktown having been evacuated, it became necessary to remove the regimental hospitals in order to follow the army. The inmates were sent down to Yorktown that they might be embarked at once and sent north. But, as usual, the authorities had failed to make proper preparation to meet the emergency. The steamer of the commission was not yet fitted up as a hospital transport, but the sick and wounded were deposited upon its decks and by energy and intelligent labor the comfort of the unfortunate men was provided for.

Now, you can readily understand that vast as was the good accomplished by the hospital transports, there were many battles in which steamers could not be used, for as our armies advanced into the enemy's territory, they operated on long lines of railways, which connected them with their base of supplies. In the Peninsula and at the west, those who had been wounded in battle and the inmates of the regimental hospitals,

whom it was necessary to remove, were placed in common burden cars, where the jarring and jolting and the lack of every form of convenience caused them to pass hours and days in agony.

Dr. Harris, a member of the commission, solved the problem of conveying the sick and wounded on railways with as much ease and comfort to themselves as if making the voyage on properly fitted steamers. This was done by providing the cars with comfortable



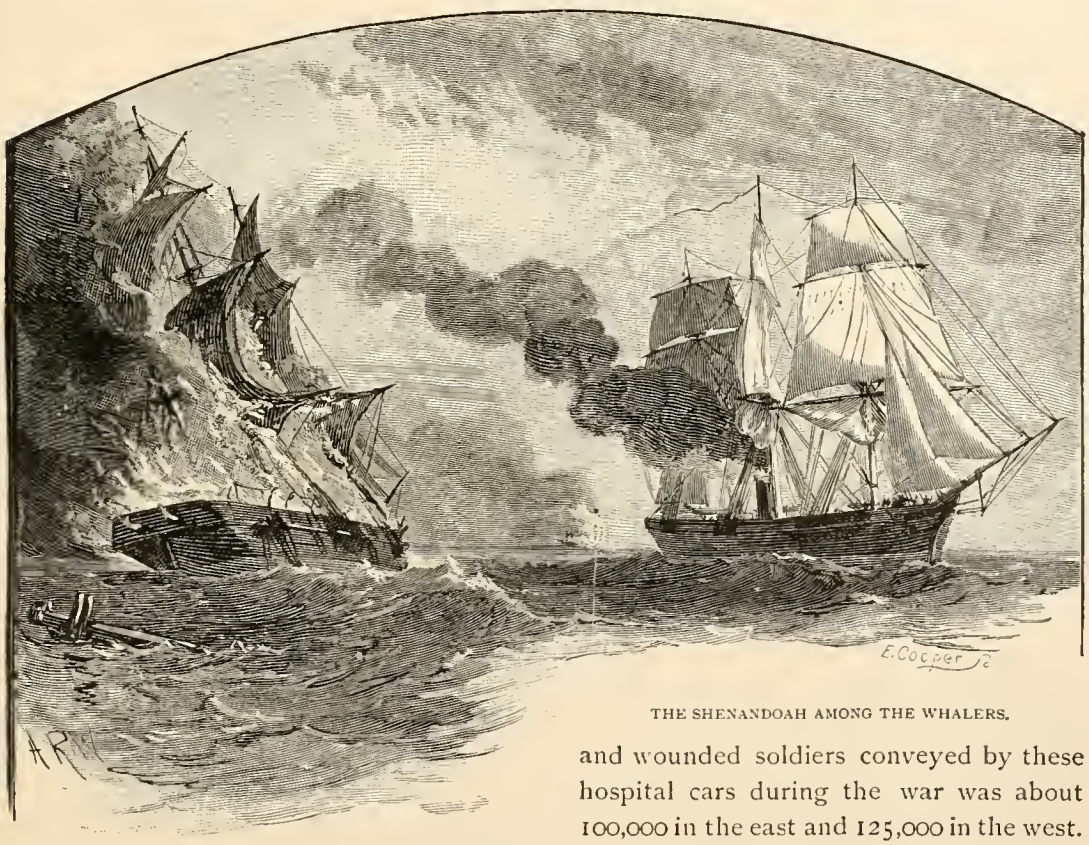
EDWARD EVERETT, AMERICAN STATESMAN.
Born, April 11, 1794; Died, January 15, 1865.

appliances and making them easy running, by ventilating them perfectly, furnishing them with food, surgical and medical supplies, employing surgeons and nurses exclusively devoted to that service, running special hospital trains and using, the utmost care in placing the patients upon and in taking them off the cars.

When the drawings for the hospital cars were submitted to Quartermaster-general Meigs, he was so impressed with their excellence for the humane purposes intended that

he ordered a number to be fitted up without delay. The principal railway companies co-operated, and they were soon generally introduced throughout the country under the control of the national forces.

You will be astonished to learn of the completeness of this system of hospital cars. The service between Washington and New York was begun in the autumn of 1862, and continued daily with the utmost regularity till the close of the war. The hospital train from Atlanta to Louisville made the journey of more than five hundred miles according to a time table to which it adhered as closely as any of the other trains in times of peace. Similar cars were also run between New York and Boston. The entire number of sick



THE SHENANDOAH AMONG THE WHALERS.

and wounded soldiers conveyed by these hospital cars during the war was about 100,000 in the east and 125,000 in the west.

It soon became manifest to the commission that the government was unable or at least did not relieve the pressing wants of the patients in hospitals. The commission, therefore, organized that department of its work which embraced the collection and distribution of voluntary supplemental supplies. Individuals and associations throughout the country poured in offerings upon the commission, and it was necessary that a systematic plan should be followed in distributing them where needed and intended.

Depots of supplies were established in New York, Boston, Philadelphia, Washington, Cincinnati and Wheeling. In the work of gathering the supplies specially required by the soldiers, the women of the country performed a noble part.

At the time the Sanitary Commission entered upon its undertaking, seventy-five

thousand men had been called out by President Lincoln, and it was generally believed that they would be sufficient to put down the rebellion. The commission was of the opinion that fifty thousand dollars was all that was needed to carry out its beneficent plans. During the first six months, its monthly expenses did not exceed five thousand dollars, but before long the contributions increased, as the needs for them increased, and as a consequence more money was indispensable. Store-houses, officers, accountants, agents of inspection and distribution, of wagons and horses and other appliances, added enormously to the expense. The people gave freely from their farms, their stores, their workshops and their purses. The commission found that the more they did the more it was necessary to do. Their field widened so fast that they trembled at the prospect of failure. They rendered such service to the army that the latter grew to lean more and more upon them.

The cash furnished the commission was but a fractional part of the value of the goods and supplies sent them, but cash was necessary, and since that, like every thing else, was in the form of voluntary contributions, the commission could never feel sure of the amount that would be placed at their disposal.

Matters were in such a doubtful shape, because of the lack of means, that many members of the commission believed that it would have to withdraw from the field. At this critical juncture, President Lincoln received a telegram from the mayor of San Francisco, saying that a hundred thousand dollars had been raised in that city for the benefit of the sick and wounded soldiers and he wished to know the best channel through which it should be applied. The president referred the matter to Surgeon-general Hammond, who of course named the Sanitary Commission, which received the magnificent draft in the month of October, 1862. It may safely be said that this sum was the making and saving of the commission, for the whole receipts up to that time were less than double that sum, and the monthly disbursements just previous to the date named were almost double the amounts received.

The effect of the great gift of California was to stir other parts of the country to renewed effort. The disbursements increased four-fold, while the contributions poured in upon the treasury in such streams that from April 1, 1864, to January 1, 1866, it never had a less balance than two hundred thousand dollars, and at times more than a million dollars. The contributions from the Pacific coast were amazing. Nevada, Oregon, Idaho and the Sandwich Islands vied with each other, and as I have said, by their example, incited every state of the North to do its utmost to help forward the great work in behalf of the soldiers. Of the five millions of dollars received by the Sanitary Commission, nearly a million and a half came from the Pacific coast and the adjacent islands. This vast amount, bear in mind, was in the form of money, the stores supplied by the other sections amounting to fifteen million dollars.

It must not be forgotten that there were other sources of contributions besides those already named. The railway, telegraph and express companies of that part of the country not directly involved in the war did a vast deal. Many gave their services gratuitously, and very nearly all at greatly reduced rates. Thus they contributed fully three-fourths of the cost of transporting the enormous bulk of supplies to the front and

of forwarding its daily and sometimes hourly dispatches to every part of the country. It has been estimated that the free transportation given by two western railways in December, 1863, saved two hundred thousand dollars to the treasury of the commission.

The newspapers were equally generous. They often opened their columns without charge, and their bills for advertising were hardly one-half of the usual rates.

The merchants from whom the commission bought its vast supplies of medicines, stimulants, blankets, flannels, fresh vegetables, concentrated food, etc., were liberal beyond what was expected. While there can be no accurate estimate of the value of such reductions, there is no doubt that it amounted to millions of dollars. The aggregate total of those receipts has been placed at the prodigious sum of twenty-five million dollars.

It is right also to notice the care with which the disbursements of the funds was managed by the commission. No member ever asked or received pay for his services, though among them were medical men with large and lucrative practice, which they were forced to abandon for weeks and months, in order to devote themselves to the trying and exacting work. All that was ever received by the members was a part of their expenses while attending its sessions or traveling in its service.

To illustrate: When in the early part of 1862 it was voted to lay before the people through the newspaper press of New York a report of their work, it was decided that the cost for doing so could not be charged against the treasury of the commission. So the gentlemen themselves had to pay the bill. The advertisement was published at a reduced rate and the *N. Y. Times* afterward paid back into the treasury the amount received from the members of the commission.

The disbursements were closely watched. Many of the contributions came unasked from poor men, women and small children. Sometimes the amounts were in sums of a dollar or two, from soldiers in the field and from sailors in front of the enemy's batteries. These were discouraged, and, when the contributor could be found, his gift was sent back to him.

But I have told you enough of the work of the Sanitary Commission, which did more than can ever be estimated to soften the horrors and sufferings of the most terrible war of modern times. In looking back over the stirring deeds of those days, we see much to condemn. We had many officers totally unfit for the positions; hundreds of lives were sacrificed by the incompetency of the leaders; drunkenness ruined more than one campaign; the government itself blundered; and the incapacity in high places was often so great that the wonder is how we ever succeeded at all; but the cause of right triumphed, as it is always sure to triumph, no matter what may oppose.

But one of the brightest phases of that stupendous conflict of the nation in defense of its own life was the work of the Sanitary Commission. It stands out in beauteous contrast against the dark background of civil war, and must ever command the admiration of mankind.

The following is a copy of the address which General Grant issued on the 2d of June, to the soldiers who had taken part in the war for the Union:

"Soldiers of the armies of the United States: By your patriotic devotion to your country in the hour of danger and alarm, your magnificent fighting, bravery and endurance, you have maintained the supremacy of the Union and the constitution, overthrown all armed opposition to the enforcement of the laws and of the proclamation forever abolishing slavery—the cause and pretext of the rebellion—and opened the way to the rightful authorities to restore order, and inaugurate peace on a permanent and enduring basis on every foot of American soil. Your marches, sieges and battles, in distance, duration, resolution, and brilliancy of results, dim the luster of the world's past military achievements, and will be the patriot's precedent in defense of liberty and right, in all time to come. In obedience to your country's call, you left your homes and families,

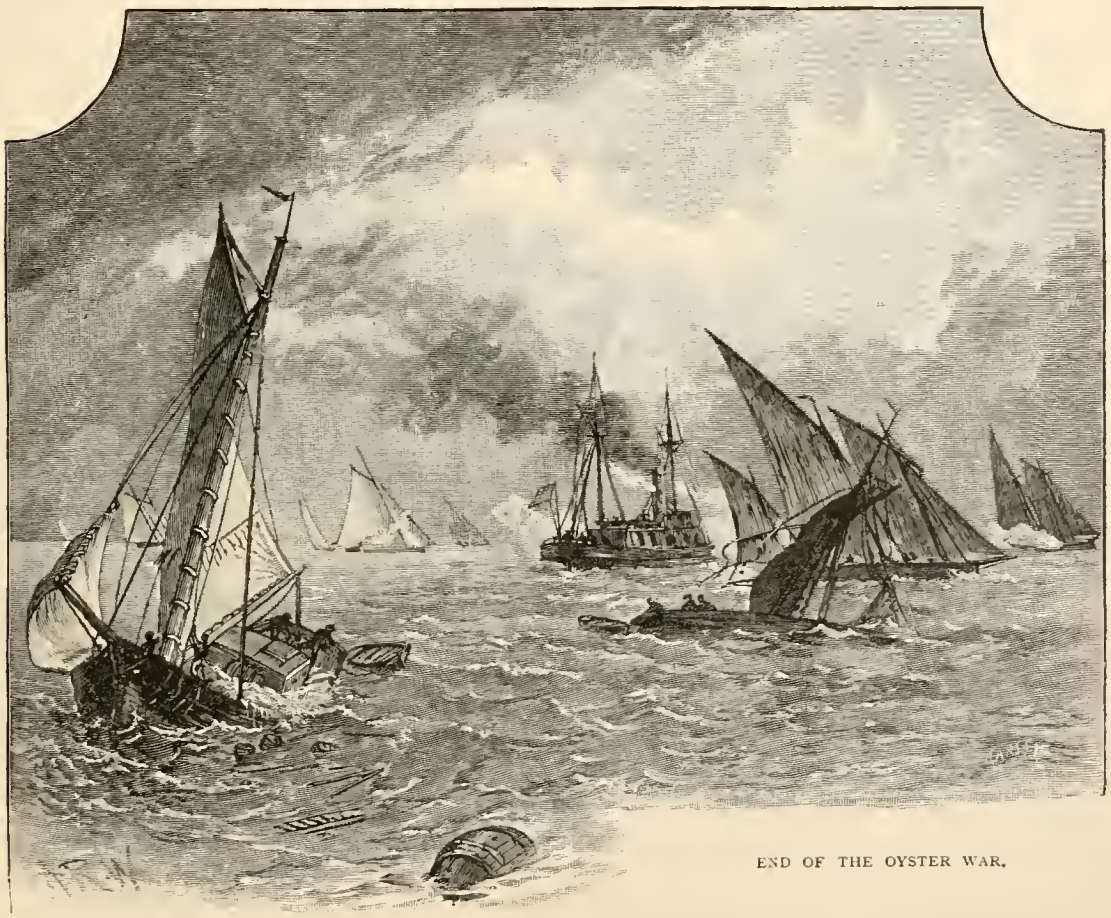
FORTRESS MONROE.

and voluntered in her defense. Victory has crowned your valor, and secured the purpose of your patriotic hearts; and, with the gratitude of your countrymen, and the highest honors a great and free nation can accord, you will soon be permitted to return to your homes and families, conscious of having discharged the highest duty of American citizens. To achieve these glorious triumphs, and secure to yourselves, your fellow-countrymen, and posterity, the blessings of free institutions, tens of thousands of your gallant comrades have fallen, and sealed the priceless legacy with their blood. The graves of these a grateful nation bedews with tears, honors their memories, and will ever cherish and support their stricken families."

I am quite sure that an interesting question has often occurred to you. At the close of the war there were more than a million soldiers who laid aside their arms. What became of them?

Now, it is beyond your power to picture in your mind the vastness of the army that ceased fighting to become peaceful citizens of our country. If they were formed in platoons of ten men each, with only a space of five feet between the ranks, the army would be a hundred miles in length. It may well be believed that the tramp of such a mighty multitude would shake the earth.

One of the grandest sights ever seen was the manner in which this enormous host



END OF THE OYSTER WAR.

melted away into the peaceful ranks of life. The falling apart of such a body of men would have produced a revolution in almost any other part of the world. Suppose this prodigious army with the muskets in their hands had turned against the country in whose defense they had fought so long! Suppose they decided upon seizing the untold riches in the bank vaults and other depositories of wealth! You can readily see that they would have been resistless. The world never saw finer soldiers than those that had been trained in the war for the Union, nor could the military nations of Europe produce better officers.

But I doubt whether a thought of revolution ever entered the brain of a single man. The American soldier is not made of such base stuff, and having fought for so many years and having endured so much, he was still ready to defend his beloved country with his life.

Still there were many patriotic people who viewed the disbandment of the army with misgiving. I have already shown you that one of the evils of war is the laxity of morals which it produces on the part of the soldiers. These hardened veterans had spent years of the roughest kind of life, and were so unused to the restraints of civilized society that it seemed reasonable to fear trouble from that cause.

It was wonderful how groundless all these fears proved. The tremendous army dissolved into peaceful citizens just as numerous streams unite to form the calmly flowing river. Six months after the close of the war, a visitor to our country would have found it hard to believe that a hostile gun had ever been fired. The wrangling, as I shall soon show you, was transferred to the halls of legislation, where it lasted for years, before the work of reconstruction was completed.

While the war was in progress, the North seemed to be enjoying a period of unparalleled prosperity. Business was brisk, and enterprise was shown in every possible direction. Articles of food, dress and commerce were worth three and four times the sum now paid for them; cities were bonded to the extent of many thousands of dollars to pay the cost for improvements; new towns were laid out and the lots rapidly sold, and indeed there seemed scarcely any enterprise which did not bring rich returns to its projectors.

All this, however, was an unnatural prosperity, which was sure to be followed by a reaction and the worst sort of "hard times." You can easily understand that with an army of nearly a million men in the field, it was a prodigious task to keep the soldiers supplied with arms, accouterments, clothing, food, ammunition, horses and all their requirements. This task gave employment to numberless armories, manufactories, mills and ship yards, until all at once the end came.

The demand for the amazing products of all these centers of industry ceased because the army passed out of existence. Not only that, but the great multitude of consumers became producers themselves. The market created by the wants of a million men was destroyed and the million of men needed a market for what they themselves could produce.

I am quite sure that had this situation been presented to you at the close of the war, you would have said that serious trouble was certain to follow. That such disturbance did not come is one of the most striking proofs of the capacity of our country to withstand the severest strain.

Since every trade and profession was represented in the ranks, so every trade and profession was recruited from these veterans. The chaplain who had preached to the soldiers on the eve of some mighty battle in which he knew that many of his hearers were certain to fall, climbed the pulpit steps of the little village church and broke the Bread of Life to the fathers, mothers, brothers and sisters of those who were buried in the swamps of the south; the blacksmith at the anvil moved far enough to one side to

allow his bronzed neighbor to wield a hammer; the engineer who had not held the throttle for years, found he was not forgotten, and that the railway company, which was extending its branches so as to open up new sections of country, had need of his services; the store or bank discovered that they needed the help of the sturdy young man who shouldered his musket four years before, when he was little more than a boy, and went forth to battle for his country; and the farmer saw where the lusty veteran could give him valuable help in tilling the soil. There was a kind feeling everywhere for the "boys in blue." When some offender against the laws was brought before the authorities, the plea that he had been a brave soldier often softened the penalty visited upon him.

It should be borne in mind, however, that not all of the men who made up the rank and file of our armies were those who needed to be led or instructed by others. Multitudes of them were as capable of leading the procession along the paths of peace, as they were to head the charge against the bristling batteries. I remember that once when the government was several months in arrears with a certain regiment, one of the privates loaned a hundred thousand dollars to the paymaster for the purpose of paying every soldier in full. Such men, on the coming of peace, resumed their places as capitalists, while perhaps the very officers under whom they served found employment at their hands.

Hundreds of thousands of acres lay in the west awaiting the coming of the emigrant. That soil, as was once said of another country, when "tickled with a straw, would laugh a harvest." And so a small army went westward, took up government land for a pittance, and began life over again. If the Indians became troublesome, a few of these veterans would band together and give them a lesson which you may be sure they did not forget for a long time. The man who patiently followed the plow, or chopped the logs into shape for the wall of his cabin, was probably the colonel or general who led the brilliant charge at the Wilderness or Gettysburg, or marched from Atlanta to the sea, or was "in at the death" at Appomattox, in the spring of 1865.

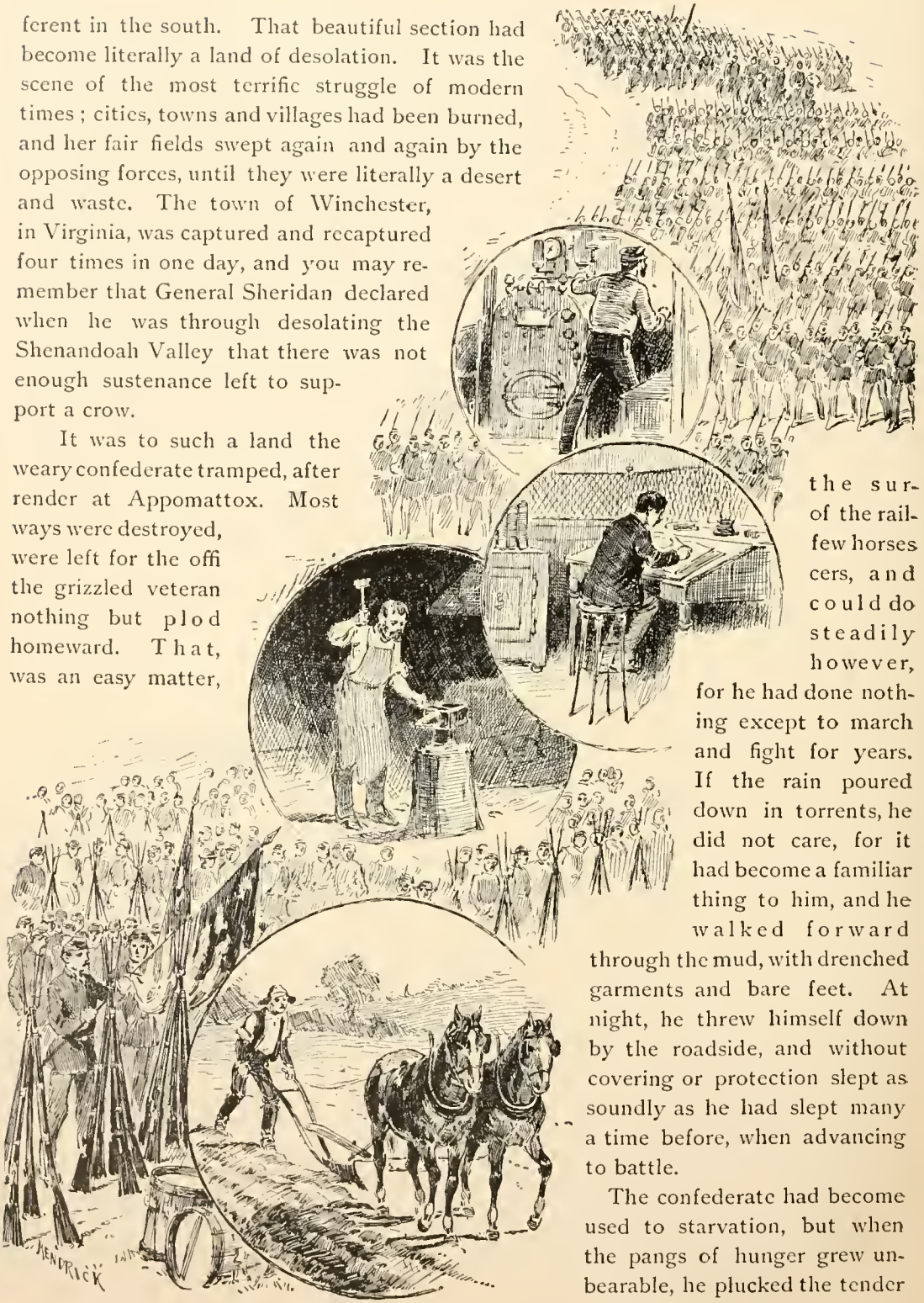
I have told you enough to give an idea of the manner in which the grand army of the republic was absorbed by the innumerable channels of industry throughout the country. A million men is a great number indeed, but we have room for many such armies without crowding. This is shown by the fact that for many years a steady stream of immigration has come from the four quarters of the globe, and there is abundant space for more.

The government sold the army of horses and mules which it owned at the close of the war. They were sent to different parts of the country and disposed of at various times, until they, like the men who had ridden or driven them, were scattered over the land from the Atlantic to the Pacific. It seemed odd when riding through some remote section, to see a nag jogging along in front of a wagon, or pulling a plow across a field, and to observe the letters "U. S." branded on his hip. This stamp proved that he too had risked his life for his native land, and was now doing his part toward beating the sword into the plowshare.

I have spoken of the disbandment of the army in the north, but it was far dif-

ferent in the south. That beautiful section had become literally a land of desolation. It was the scene of the most terrific struggle of modern times; cities, towns and villages had been burned, and her fair fields swept again and again by the opposing forces, until they were literally a desert and waste. The town of Winchester, in Virginia, was captured and recaptured four times in one day, and you may remember that General Sheridan declared when he was through desolating the Shenandoah Valley that there was not enough sustenance left to support a crow.

It was to such a land the weary confederate tramped, after the surrender at Appomattox. Most of the railways were destroyed, few horses were left for the officers, and the grizzled veteran could do nothing but plod steadily homeward. That, however, was an easy matter, for he had done nothing except to march and fight for years. If the rain poured down in torrents, he did not care, for it had become a familiar thing to him, and he walked forward through the mud, with drenched garments and bare feet. At night, he threw himself down by the roadside, and without covering or protection slept as soundly as he had slept many a time before, when advancing to battle.



BEATING THE SWORD INTO THE PLOWSHARE.

The confederate had become used to starvation, but when the pangs of hunger grew unbearable, he plucked the tender herbs of the spring vegetation and ate just as he had

done more than once when helping to beat back the northern hosts. Many of these returning confederates took with them the rations given by the union soldiers, for the smoke had not yet dissolved above the hostile muskets, when the combatants rushed forward and grasped hands. These men had fought long and well, and the soil had run red with their blood, and yet they were brothers. They had no enmity against each other: the war was fanned by those who took care, when the fighting came, to keep in the background.

When at last the confederate, after tramping hundreds of miles over a ruined and desolated country, reached his own home, his heart must have sunk at the sight that met his gaze. Perhaps he saw only the ashes of his house and fences and buildings, and nothing of his live stock, while his family may have united their fortunes with a neighbor hardly less wretched than they. But, though impoverished to the last degree, the wife and little ones welcomed the veteran with overflowing hearts, for the war was ended, and the husband and father had not only come home but would leave them no more.

The men who had fought with such unsurpassed bravery during those lurid years were not the ones to fold their hands in despair when confronted by the problem of earning a livelihood for themselves and their loved ones. The marching and fighting and the rough outdoor life had given them one inestimable boon,—rugged health and strength—and the possessor of those blessings is not the one to succumb before any task.

And so they went to work with right good will. The end of the war came at the most opportune season of the year, and the mothers and daughters who had managed to live during the long absence of their protectors were able to give them help when they took a hand in the struggle for existence. All were stout-hearted and hopeful, and it may be depended upon that under such conditions success is certain.

There were many disturbing elements that delayed pacification in the South. The people there were the conquered ones; they had not only failed in their war for independence, but were impoverished by the struggle; and though the North treated them generously, it was not in human nature to feel very cheerful over their defeat. There were many sections where neighbors had fought against each other, and they came back with such resentful feelings that bloodshed often followed.

Then, as you will remember, the negroes, who were slaves at the opening of the war, were now free. They were ignorant, and many of them held dangerous ideas of their rights and privileges. Vile men and adventurers from the North made haste to the South, where they did their utmost to array them against their former masters. By the votes of the negroes, these "carpet-baggers" as they were called, elevated themselves and some of the most depraved of the Africans to high political offices. You can not wonder that the southerners were exasperated when they saw many of their late slaves, who were unable to write their names, sitting in the legislatures and making laws for their government.

It may be doubted, however, whether any nation in the world would have adjusted itself with so little friction after undergoing such a wrenching and strain. Not only would there have been general rioting and bloodshed, but revolutions and counter-revolutions would have followed until the country was ruined beyond hope. Just across the

Rio Grande, in Mexico, there would have been endless "pronunciamentos," and the claims and ambitions of rival chieftains would have kept the people in a turmoil for years. But, as I have said, while violence was inevitable, none of it assumed proportions that threatened the national safety.

You will see, therefore, that the real security of a nation is in its deep, underlying love of law and order. Every one of you is old enough to understand that there can be no other safeguard, for without such restraining power anarchy and ruin are sure to prevail. The veterans who came back from the war knew there was but the single road to happiness and prosperity: that was to obey the laws and to devote their energies to rebuilding their destroyed homes. Here and there were a few reckless riders, with few or no family ties, who had grown to love the wild, adventurous life of the preceding years, who took advantage of the disorganized state of society, and resented the new order of things by committing acts without justice or excuse. Some of these banded together and were guilty of deeds which did great injury to the South, for they afforded ground for legislation which could not fail to be oppressive to those who were innocent of wrong doing.

Then, as might have been expected, the politicians that had been so headstrong in urging war between the sections were just as eager to secure the spoils that were now within reach. You must bear in mind that the "carpet-baggers," of whom I have spoken, were without principle, and they hurried south with the single purpose of plunder. They were called by the name I have given, because it was said that all the property that each owned was carried in his carpet-bag. They professed to be friends of the freedmen or negroes, and were anxious to secure them their rights. But they cheated those ignorant people, as they did every one. They gained their own election to high offices by the most flagrant dishonesty, and robbed the different states with a recklessness almost beyond belief. There were a few who became conscience-stricken, and repudiating their own work, strove to undo, so far as they could, the results of their evil deeds.

I am pleased to add that most of these wicked adventurers who grew rich, followed the rule that generally governs in such cases, and soon lost all their wealth, while others became wanderers and outcasts, and more than one finally reached the penitentiary.

I have referred more than once to the friendship between the northern and southern soldiers on the close of the war. Brave men always respect each other; and not merely the privates, but the officers formed ties of affection, all the stronger because they had mutually tested their mettle on the field of battle. They wondered how it was they had come to fight each other at all, and, if there was one blessed truth established, it was that never again could any section of this country become arrayed in arms against another section.

It is appropriate that I should give in this place some statistics of the wars in which the United States has been engaged, for they are well worth comparison and study. I am indebted for them to Spofford's *American Almanac*:

STATISTICS OF THE WARS OF THE UNITED STATES.

Number of Troops from each of the old Thirteen States enlisted during the Revolutionary War, 1775–1783, including Continental Soldiers and Militia. Compiled and condensed from the Report of the Secretary of War, May 10, 1790, American State Papers, Military Affairs, vol. 1, p. 14 to 19.

STATES.	1775.	1776.	1777.	1778.	1779.	1780.	1781.	1782.	1783.
New Hampshire	2,824	4,019	4,483	1,783	1,226	1,777	700	744	733
Massachusetts	16,444	20,372	12,591	13,437	7,738	7,889	5,298	4,423	4,370
Connecticut	4,507	13,127	6,563	4,010	3,544	3,687	3,921	1,732	1,740
Rhode Island	1,193	1,900	2,048	3,056	1,263	915	464	481	372
New York	2,075	8,094	5,332	2,194	3,756	4,847	1,178	1,198	1,169
New Jersey	.....	9,086	2,908	2,586	1,276	1,276	823	660	676
Pennsylvania	400	10,395	9,464	3,684	3,476	3,337	1,346	1,265	1,598
Delaware	.....	754	1,299	349	317	556	89	164	235
Maryland	.....	3,329	7,565	3,307	2,849	2,065	2,107	1,280	974
Virginia	3,180	6,181	11,013	7,830	8,573	6,986	6,119	2,204	629
North Carolina	2,000	4,134	1,281	1,287	4,920	3,000	3,545	1,105	697
South Carolina	4,000	6,069	2,000	3,650	4,500	6,000	3,000	2,000	139
Georgia	1,000	2,301	2,173	3,873	837	750	750	750	145
Total	37,363	89,761	68,720	51,046	44,275	43,076	29,340	18,006	13,477

LAST WAR WITH GREAT BRITAIN, 1812–1815.

The whole number of officers and men in the Regular Service can not be accurately given. The following table at different periods of the war is the nearest approximation that can be made.

DATE.	Officers.	Men.	Total.	DATE.	Officers.	Men.	Total.
July, 1812	301	6,385	6,686	September, 1814	2,395	35,791	38,186
February, 1813	1,476	17,560	19,036	February, 1815	2,396	31,028	33,424

The whole Militia Force raised during the war was, 31,210 officers; 440,412 men; Total, 471,622.

Casualties reported during the War of 1812–15: Killed, 1,877; Wounded, 3,737; Total, 5,614.

NUMBER OF MEN AND CASUALTIES IN THE REGULAR AND VOLUNTEER FORCES DURING THE WAR WITH MEXICO, 1846–48.

STATE.	Whole Number.	Killed.	Died of Wounds	Wounded.	STATE.	Whole Number.	Killed.	Died of Wounds	Wounded.
Regular Army, including Marines	27,506	536	408	2,102	New Jersey Volunteers	425	.....	.....	.....
Alabama Volunteers	3,026	.....	.....	.....	New York do	2,396	24	19	156
Arkansas do	1,323	19	2	32	N. Carolina do	935	.....	.....	.....
California do	571	.....	.....	.....	Ohio do	5,536	18	.....	39
Florida do	370	.....	.....	.....	Pennsylvania do	2,503	21	14	162
Georgia do	2,132	6	.....	8	S. Carolina do	1,077	30	26	216
Illinois do	6,123	86	12	160	Tennessee do	5,865	43	6	129
Indiana do	4,585	47	.....	92	Texas do	8,018	42	4	29
Iowa do	258	.....	.....	.....	Virginia do	1,320	.....	.....	4
Kentucky do	4,842	78	4	105	Wisconsin do	146	.....	.....	.....
Louisiana do	7,947	13	2	8	Mormons do	585	.....	.....	.....
Maryland & D.C. do	1,355	8	3	21	Re-mustered Volunteers formed out of 12 months Vols	844	4	1	3
Massachusetts do	1,057	.....	.....	.....					
Michigan do	1,103	.....	.....	.....					
Mississippi do	2,423	54	4	108	Total	101,282	1,049	508	3,420
Missouri do	7,016	20	3	46					

TABLE EXHIBITING, BY STATES, THE AGGREGATE OF TROOPS FURNISHED TO THE UNION ARMY, 1861–65, WITH BOUNTIES PAID BY STATES.

Compiled and Condensed from the Official Reports of the War Department.

STATES AND TERRITORIES.	Population in 1860.	Troops furnished 1861-65.	Colored Troops furnished 1861-65.	NUMBER OF MEN DRAFTED. Number drawn.	Failed to report.	Exempted.	Furn'd sub. or paid com'n.	Held for service.	Bounties paid by States.*	Per Cent. of Troops to Population.
Connecticut	460,147	57 379	1,764	12,031	1,014	6,804	3,842	202	$6,887,554	12.4
Maine	628,279	72,114	104	27,324	3,760	12,997	4,946	1,991	7,837,644	11.5
Massachusetts	1,231,066	152,048	3,966	41 582	5,167	27,070	8,383	912	22,965,550	12.3
New Hampshire	326,073	34,629	125	10,806	464	5.478	3,654	210	9,636,313	10.6
Rhode Island	174,620	23,699	1,837	4,321	249	2,809	1,142	117	820,769	13.6
Vermont	315,098	35.262	120	7,743	429	4.096	2,646	437	4,528,775	11.2
New England States	3,135,283	375.131	7,916	103,807	11,083	59,254	24,613	3,869	52,676 605	12.0
New Jersey	672,035	81,010	1,185	32,325	6,205	8,224	9,650	951	23,868,967	12.0
New York	3,880,735	467,047	4,125	151,488	31.745	68,206	31,529	3 210	86,629,228	12.0
Pennsylvania	2,906,215	366,107	8,612	178,873	31,309	70,913	40,807	8 615	43,154,987	12.5
Middle States	7,458,985	914,164	13.922	362,686	69.259	147,143	81,986	12,776	153,653,182	12 2
Colorado Territory	34,277	4,903	95							14.3
Dakota Territory	4,8_7	206								4.2
Illinois	1,711,951	259,147	1,811	32,085	9.519	9.555	5.459	3,538	17,296,205	15.1
Indiana	1,350,428	197,147	1,537	41,158	6,235	15.478	5.966	7,597	9.182,354	14.6
Iowa	674,913	76,309	440	7,548	702	2 446	1,264	1,862	1,615,171	11.3
Kansas	107,206	20,151	2,080	1,420	419	287	210	119	57,407	18.8
Michigan	746,113	89,372	1,387	22,122	4,294	7,130	3,773	1,809	9,664,855	11.9
Minnesota	172,023	25,052	104	10,796	2,058	4,449	1,291	862	2,000,404	14.5
Nebraska Territory	28,841	3,157								10.9
New Mexico Territory	93,516	6,561								7 0
Ohio	2,339,511	319,659	5,092	50,400	9,368	19,751	10.988	4,241	23.557,373	13.6
Wisconsin	775,881	96,424	165	38,395	11,742	14.732	6,718	3,722	5,855,356	12 4
Western States and Territories	8.042,497	1,098,088	12,711	203,924	44,337	73,828	35,669	23.750	69,229,185	13.6
California	379,994	15,725								4.1
Nevada	6,857	1,080								15.7
Oregon	52,465	1,810								3.4
Washington Territory	11,594	964								8.3
Pacific States	450,910	19,579								4.3
Delaware	112,216	13 670	954	8,635	1,443	4,170	2,534	425	1,136,599	12.2
District Columbia	75,080	16,872	3,269	14,338	5,,54	5.665	1,751	968	134,010	22.4
Kentucky	1,155,684	79,025	23,703	29,421	9,503	8,088	5,787	1,860	692,577	6.8
Maryland	687,049	50,316	8,718	29,319	9,207	11,011	6,134	1,426	6,271, 92	7.3
Missouri	1,182,012	109,111	8,344	21,519	9,444	5,781	1,638	1,031	1,282,149	9.2
West Virginia[3]	393,234	32,068	196	3,180	1,014	569	219	242	864,737	8.1
Border States	3.605,275	301,062	45,184	106,412	36,565	35,284	18,063	5,952	10,382,064	8.3
Alabama	964,201	2,576	4,969							.2
Arkansas	435,450	8,289	5,526							1.9
Florida	140,424	1,290	1,044							.9
Georgia	1,057,286									.0
Louisiana	708,002	5,224	3,486							.7
Mississippi	791,305	545	17,869							.0
North Carolina	992,622	3,156	5,035							.3
South Carolina	903,708		5,462							.0
Tennessee	1,109,801	31,092	20,133							2.8
Texas	604,215	1,965	47							.3
Virginia[3]	1 203,084									.0
Southern States	8,710,098	54,137	63,571							.6
Indian Nation		3.530								
Colored Troops[1]		93,441								
Grand Total		[2]2,859,132	173,079	776,829	161,244	315,509	73,607	46,347	285,941,036	9.1
At large			733							
Not accounted for			5,083							
Officers			7,122							
			186,017							

1) This gives colored troops enlisted in the states in rebellion; besides this, there were 92,576 colored troops included (with the white soldiers) in the quotas of the several states; the 3d column gives the aggregate of colored, but many enlisted South were credited to Northern States.

2) This is the aggregate of troops furnished for all periods of service—from 3 months to 3 years time. Reduced to a uniform three years standard, the whole number of troops enlisted amounted to 2,320,272.

3) Virginia and West Virginia populations by census of 1860, as divided by counties in 1863.

*) This table is given from the Report of the Provost Marshal General in 1866, with the remark that much larger disbursements in bounties were made in some states, the aggregate not ascertainable.